ACADEMY OF SCIENCES OF THE USSR

MIKHAIL NESTURKH

THE ORIGIN OF MAN



PROGRESS PUBLISHERS
MOSCOW

Translated from the Russian
by the late George H. Hanna

Designed
by Vladimir An

The Russian edition of this book was published by the Academy of Sciences of the USSR in 1958. The translation of this second revised edition has been read and approved by the author.

М. Ф. Нестурх
ПРОИСХОЖДЕНИЕ ЧЕЛОВЕКА
На английском языке

First printing 1959
Second (revised) edition 1967

Printed in the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics

CONTENTS

The problem of the origin of the human race is one that has been awaiting a solution for thousands of years Religion had shed a false light on it and it remained a mystery until the last century when biological knowledge had become more extensive and Darwin was able to propound a materialist theory of the evolution of the organic world

The logical outcome of this theory was the proof that man and the animals have a common origin Darwin assembled a vast amount of data confirming the idea of man s natural origin and established beyond all doubt that a species of the most highly developed extinct bipedal ground apes was the immediate ancestor of man

The thesis of man s descent from an ape became basic in anthropogenesis, it is the corner stone of anthropology

The materialist theory of the origin of man is diametrically opposed to the idealist religious conception of the miraculous creation of "first men Biology and anthropology, however were unable to provide a complete explanation of the process of anthropogenesis because social as well as biological factors played their part in the development of the human race

This is particularly true of the last phase in the formation of man, when the body acquired its present structure and the species *Homo sapiens* branched out into different races

The process of anthropogenesis is vastly different from the phylogenic development of any species of the higher vertebrates even of the apes The problem therefore requires a complex approach employing data established by the social sciences that have Marxist philosophy as their basis

A comprehensive solution of the problem under discussion can only be made from the standpoint of dialectical and historical materialism, Marxism Leninism has enabled anthropologists to make a profound and truly scientific analysis of the very essence of anthropogenesis Dialectical materialism a method the present author has endeavoured to apply in his work is a most

powerful weapon in the struggle against idealist concepts of the origin of man.

The primary purpose of this book is to provide readers with concrete facts drawn from present-day biology to serve as proofs of the materialist theory of anthropogenesis. These include the most important information on the living anthropoid apes necessary to make a correct study of the fossil remains of their extinct ancestors, to find among them the immediate precursors of man and to discover the main features of their palaeobiology.

The second task which the author has set himself is to outline the more significant stages in the development of fossil man.

The third task is to explain the anthropological viewpoint of the way in which fossil man developed, using for this purpose the labour theory of anthropogenesis, and also to criticize the idealist concepts of the formation of man and the races of mankind.

The author has made extensive use of the investigations of anthropologists, anatomists and physiologists studying the structure of the human body, as well as the work of archaeologists and ethnographers. He has also drawn material from his *Man and His Ancestors* (1934) and other works.

M. F. NESTURKH, D. S. (Biol.)
Institute and Museum of Anthropology
Moscow State University

THE DARWIN AND OTHER HYPOTHESES CONCERNING ANTHROPOGENESIS

DARWIN ON THE ORIGIN OF MAN

1 ANTHROPOGENESIS BEFORE DARWIN

From the earliest times various peoples have created legends about the miraculous creation of the first man by some deity In these myths we may trace the influence of the natural social and economic environment of those who created them The biblical legend of the creation of the first man by God who breathed some part of his own spirit into him and gave him his immortal soul, for example, is a clear reflection of the potter s craft and the sculptor's art both of which were widespread in Assyria, Babylon, Egypt, Judea and other countries at the time the myth took form

The Muslim myth of the creation has points of similarity with that of the Bible He excelled in the making of all things He first created man of clay then bred his offspring from a drop of paltry fluid He moulded him and breathed into him of his spirit'

Nevertheless from time immemorial people had noticed the great resemblance between man and the other animals and this led them to the idea that man had a natural rather than a supernatural origin The idea was first broached in the times of antiquity by Lucretius (95 51 B C) in his materialist poem *On the Nature of Things* (*De Rerum Natura*) His idea was that the first people were born directly out of the Earth at a time when it possessed mighty fertility, the Earth produced animals birds and other living beings after it had become covered with all kinds of vegetation

Although Lucretius concept of the appearance of people as babies born of the wombs of Earth is absolutely fallacious it is significant that he rebelled against the stultifying influence of religion in his poem man was born of the Earth in a natural manner

The atheistic essence of Lucretius poem can be judged by the following remarkable lines

Humana ante oculos foede cum vita iaceret
In terris oppressa gravi sub religione
Quae caput a caeli regionibus ostendebat
Horribili super aspectu mortalibus instans
Primum Grajus homo mortalis tollere contra
Est oculos ausus primusque obsistere contra *

Lucretius then goes on to say

Principium cuius hinc nobis exordis sumet
Nullam rem ex nilo gigni divinitus umquam **

With amazing intuition Lucretius drew a picture of the life of primitive man, his work and the beginnings of articulate speech Lucretius poem is in keeping with the materialist ideas of Epicurus (born 342 or 341, died 270 B C) the great Greek atheist and writer and is significant as one of the first attempts to picture the appearance of man on Earth as a natural phenomenon and not by the miracle of divine creation

In his poem Lucretius made use of the achievements of the thinkers and scholars of the preceding centuries The great intellects of antiquity analysed the chief peculiarities of the human body and its organs and established the important fact that the hand is the organ of universally useful work This fruitful idea is met with in the works of the philosophers Anaxagoras (500 423 B C) and Socrates (circa 469 circa 399 B C) Anaximander (sixth century B C) and Empedocles (490 430 B C) spoke of the natural development of man

In the works of Aristotle (384 322 B C), Hippocrates (circa 460 circa 377 B C) and other great naturalists and physicians of the ancient world, we find some scientific foundations for the investigation and description of points of difference and similarity between man and the other mammals, these include the structure of the body its development and functions Of those mentioned above Aristotle made the greatest contribution he was the first to make a detailed study of the human body and showed the place occupied by man in the animal kingdom he also pointed out such cardinal differences between man and the other animals as his erect posture and gait his big brain speech and intellect and conducted an analysis of those features

* When the life of man lay foully grovelling before our eyes crushed beneath the weight of a Religion who displayed her head from the regions of the sky lowering over mortals with terrible aspect a man of Greece was the first that dared to raise mortal eyes against her and first to make a stand against her

** Reason and the contemplation of nature of which our first principle shall hence take its commencement that nothing is ever divinely generated from nothing

Somewhat later the Roman physician and anatomist, Claudius Galen (circa 130 circa 200 B C), established the great similarity in the structure of the body of man and the monkeys and noted points of similarity and difference with the other animals Galen s works, like those of Aristotle, brought him great prestige and fame that lasted a thousand years Knowledge of man and of the animal kingdom gradually increased as the productive forces in human society were developed

The anatomy and physiology of man were gradually built up from scanty precise knowledge and a mass of vague assump tions After the reform of research methods, mainly due to the work of Andreas Vesalius (1514 1564) and William Harvey (1578 1657), scientists began to gain real knowledge of the human body They began to understand much of what had been until then, incomprehensible in the structure of man s body A materialist view of the human being began to gain ground amongst scholars

Even in the darkest days of the Inquisition advanced scholars propounded the truly materialistic idea of the natural and not miraculous origin of man One of these for example, was Luci lio Vanini (1585 1619) who was condemned by the Inquisition and burnt at the stake for his materialist and anti religious con ception of man and nature

In the history of science, of special importance to anthropo genesis was the increasing knowledge of monkeys especially the anthropoids The chimpanzee was first brought to Europe at the beginning of the seventeenth century In 1699 Edward Tyson, an English anatomist published a full description of the structure of this ape in his monograph *Ourang outang, sive Homo sylvestris or the Anatomy of a Pygmie Compared with That of a Monkey, an Ape and a Man*

In the eighteenth century the famous Swedish scholar, Carl Linnaeus (1707 1778) in his classification of the animal king dom included man and placed him in a special genus *Homo* with the species *Homo sapiens* next to the anthropoid apes

Linnaeus views however were those of a creationist he believed the intellect to be a particle of divine wisdom in man

At the end of the eighteenth century the idea of the natural origin of man is also seen in the works of James Monboddo (1784), where he dealt with the question of the origin and development of articulate speech Later J E Doornik (1808), like Monboddo, asserted that man had descended from the anthro poid apes

One of the most famous biologists of the latter half of the eighteenth century was Georges Buffon (1707 1788) who as a transformist devoted considerable attention in his works to

man as well as to the anthropoid apes that he had personally observed However he very sharply differentiated man from the animal kingdom on account of his intellectual qualities which he believed to be of divine origin

By the beginning of the nineteenth century considerably more knowledge of the people, fauna and flora of many countries had been accumulated Greater knowledge of fossil animals and of the history of the Earth had also been obtained as can be seen from the works of Georges Cuvier (1769 1832) and Charles Lyell (1797 1875) In addition to zoology and palaeontology other branches of knowledge were extensively developed The idea of the immutability of species of animals and plants, supported by the majority of scholars after Linnaeus gradually began to lose ground Individual biologists began to get a clearer conception of certain signs of evolution in the organic world

One of the earliest Russian scholars to give expression to the ideas of transformism was Afanasy Kaverznev (born 1748 date of death unknown) His dissertation on *The Transmutation of Animals* was published in 1775 In his book this progressive scholar cited numerous facts to support his theory of the natural origin and further transformation of species Nor did he hesitate to apply his tenets to the development of man Kaverznev placed man and the apes in one group and asserted that they and the other animals possessed similarities and were related ' not only the cat, lion and tiger but man and the apes and the other animals constitute one single family' (*The Transmutation of Animals* p 507)

Somewhat later we find materialist ideas concerning man and his origin expressed in the works of one of the most outstanding public men and thinkers of his time A Radishchev (1749 1802), in his *On Man His Mortality and Immortality* he expresses the opinion that the science of man is the most important is fundamental

In the same treatise proof is offered that the hands were man s guide to reason

This perfectly just idea is met with several times in the works of N G Chernyshevsky (1828 1889) the nineteenth century Russian revolutionary democrat and thinker He subjected such cardinal problems to analysis as man s place in the universe the nature of man and man s origin as the result of the normal historical development of nature

In his essay *The Anthropological Principle in Philosophy* Chernyshevsky as a materialist philosopher asserts the unity of man s body and spirit this fundamental thesis was later confirmed by the researches of I M Sechenov (1825 1905) and I P Pavlov (1849 1936) who laid the foundations of Russian

materialist physiology Chernyshevsky said in his essay a man must be regarded as a single being having only one nature a human life must not be cut into two halves, each belonging to a different nature every aspect of a man s activity must be regarded as the activity of his whole organism from head to foot inclusively or if it is the special function of some particular organ of the human body we are dealing with, that organ must be regarded in its natural connection with the entire organism "*

In other countries Darwin s greatest predecessor in the field of biology was Jean Lamarck (1744 1829) who, in his *Philosophy of Zoology* (1809), gave proofs of evolution in the animal and vegetable kingdoms and thereby opposed the widespread meta physical conceptions of his time

Lamarck maintained that all modern organisms derived from ancient forms by means of evolution He believed it possible that in the course of time man himself could have descended from some kind of ape The ancient anthropoid ape had been forced to abandon his arboreal life when the forests grew thinner and take to ground life on two legs His upright gait wrought changes in his spine muscles feet hands jaws teeth and brain So cial life soon led to the development of articulate speech Lamarck expressed many correct ideas in his theory of a possible way for man to have developed naturally

Engels it will be remembered had a very high opinion of Lamarck s work on evolution In his criticism of idealistic con ceptions of the development of nature, he wrote This absurdity of a development in space but outside of time—the funda mental condition of all development—Hegel imposes upon nature just at the very time when geology embryology the physiology of plants and animals, and organic chemistry were being built up and when everywhere on the basis of these new sciences brilliant foreshadowings of the later theory of evolution were appearing (for instance Goethe and Lamarck) **

And Lamarck really did propound in addition to his concep tion of the mutability and perfection of organisms the principle that the organism is affected by its environment and by train ing as well as the thesis that individually acquired peculiarities are transmitted by heredity At that time there was still insuf ficient proof available of the evolution of organisms in nature and of the natural origin of man Lamarck did not touch on other important developmental factors so that his evolutionary

---

N G Chernyshevsky *Selected Philosophical Essays* Moscow 1953

** F Engels *Ludwig Feuerbach and the End of Classical German Philos ophy* See K Marx and F Engels *Selected Works* Vol II Moscow 1962 p 374

theory was one sided and could not overcome the old theory of the immutability of species

Other evolutionists of Lamarck s time such as Etienne Jeoffroy Saint Hilaire (1772 1844) also lacked sufficient data to support the theory of evolution Georges Cuvier (1769 1832) was the most important of those who supported the theory of the immutability of species since the creation of the world despite this he was one of the greatest French naturalists and palaeontologists and he also worked on comparative anatomy The evolutionists suffered a defeat in the dispute held in the Paris Academy of Sciences in 1830 between Cuvier and Saint Hilaire on the question of a single type of structure in vertebrates and invertebrates (Amlinsky, 1955)

Within half a century of the publication of Lamarck's *Philosophy of Zoology* great advances were made in man s knowledge of nature The works of Charles Lyell marked great progress in geology in particular and there was a clearer understanding of changes taking place in the strata of the Earth s crust and of the fossil animals and plants it contains

The idea of evolution in man s environment became more frequently the subject of scientific thought At last there appeared a great naturalist who was able to connect the tremendous accumulation of facts into a single whole on the basis of the laws of development in the organic and inorganic worlds This was Charles Darwin whose writings are today amongst those of the greatest scientists of all times

2 DARWIN ON THE EVOLUTION OF THE ANIMAL KINGDOM

Charles Darwin was born in 1809 in the town of Shrewsbury in England In his youth he made a five year voyage round the world as naturalist on board the *Beagle* and gathered an enormous amount of material on zoology botany palaeontology and geology that gave him the idea of the mutability of species and in general, made a great impression on his receptive mind On his return to England Darwin settled in the village of Down, not far from London, where he wrote his books He died in 1882

Darwin s great contribution to science was his establishment of the principle of artificial selection by means of which changes in the breeds of animals and plants are mainly effected by man But still more important was Darwin s discovery of the natural selection that transforms species of animals and plants in nature and is closely bound up with mutation and heredity

We must also mention that in later editions of his book *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection* he wrote

that modifications acquired and constantly employed during many centuries for some useful purpose would most probably become stable and might be transmitted by heredity

Engels did not attach such paramount importance to natural selection as Darwin did but he stressed the importance of the influence of environment mutation and heredity Engels wrote that from the simple cell onwards the theory of evolution demonstrates how each advance up to the most complicated plant on the one side, and up to man on the other, is effected by the continual conflict between heredity and adaptation *

Darwin s theory of evolution delivered a severe blow to the conception of the immutability of species that had been dominant before him Darwinism was a theory that revolutionized all biology, and the idea of evolution began to enter with greater force into various branches of natural history and find its confirmation Darwin s contemporaries likened his theory to a bomb thrown by the great scientist into the camp of the clericals

In the following words D I Pisarev (1840 1868) describes the impression created on contemporaries by the theory of natural selection In nearly all branches of natural science Darwin s *ideas bring about a complete revolution botany zoology anthropology* palaeontology, comparative anatomy and physiology and even experimental psychology find in his discoveries the guiding principle that will link up the numerous observations already made and put investigators on the way to new fruitful discoveries "**

Pisarev especially welcomed the application of the theory of evolution to man since he was convinced that the greatest number of errors both theoretical and practical should concern man as the most complex the least known and at the same time the most interesting object in nature "***

Marx and Engels put a high value on Darwin s theory because it dealt a death blow to teleology and shattered the metaphysical theory of the purposefulness of living nature ' In this field teleology was still not crushed but now it has been " Engels wrote to Marx in 1859 Two years later Marx wrote to Lassalle on the same subject ' Darwin s book is very important and serves me as a natural scientific basis for the class struggle in history ****

At the same time the founders of Marxism noted some significant shortcomings in Darwin s theory, especially his uncritical

---

* F Engels *Dialectics of Nature* Moscow 1954 p 280

** Dmitry Pisarev *Selected Philosophical Social and Political Essays* Moscow 1958 p 304

*** *Ibid* p 235

**** Marx Engels *Selected Correspondence* Moscow 1965 No 51 p 123

application of social laws to biology and on the contrary, his biological approach to social phenomena Darwin, for example was uncritical in his attitude to the reactionary teachings of the English clergyman and economist Thomas Malthus according to whom the human race tends to increase faster than the food supply which must inevitably lead to a struggle of all against all, that is to 'competition within the species under cover of the struggle for existence Malthus tried to take the sharp edge off the class struggle of the exploiters against the working population Darwin succumbed to this theory and gave exces sive importance to the intraspecies struggle and to competition in nature

Soviet biologists have raised Darwinism to a higher level on the sound basis of the method of dialectical materialism, have shown the weakness of this side of Darwin s theory and have developed the conception of the interspecies struggle of organisms

The confusion of biological and social categories was due to the bourgeois narrow mindedness of Darwin himself For this reason, also Darwin was unable to provide a full solution to the problem of the origin of man This was done later by Marx and Engels on the basis of dialectical materialism The reactionary section of the bourgeoisie was extremely hostile to Darwin's theory of the evolu tion of the organic world All the more hateful to them were his views on anthropogenesis since they dealt with man himself See ing however that Darwin s theory was built up on a sound foun dation many reactionaries began to raise the level of the struggle for existence to the status of the chief law in nature and in human society

At that time one of Darwin s most brilliant successors Ernst Haeckel (1834 1919) played an important positive part in spread ing Darwinism in Germany and other countries He developed the idea of man s relationship to the animal kingdom Haeckel how ever carried the struggle for existence in nature into human society and thus facilitated the development of the so called social Darwinism The scientific concept of the social Dar winists is that the exploiting classes are biologically superior and the working classes inferior in consequence of which the latter should be subordinated to the former

From the viewpoint of the social Darwinists the winning side is the more perfect By treating social phenomena biologically the social Darwinists tried to hide the real state of affairs and use Darwin s theory to strengthen the position of capitalism

Darwin himself regarded natural selection as an evolutionary factor only in the early stages of man s formative period As far as modern man is concerned Darwin admitted selection in a secondary form and on a very small scale

K A Timiryazev, the great Russian biologist, said the following about social Darwinism In part zealous thoughtless champions of Darwin s ideas and to a greater extent his unconscionable or ignorant opponents hurried to ascribe to him the idea that the struggle for existence as understood in its crudest animal form should be recognized as the guiding law and should direct human history completely ignoring the conscious influence the conscious reflex of mankind on its future Would he, whose every word breathes humanism have preached the ideals of a cannibal?

Many progressive Russian scholars contemporaries of Darwin carried out independent research in the field of evolution Darwin showed great esteem for the work of the brothers Alexander and Vladimir Kovalevsky (1840 1901 and 1842 1883) embryologist and palaeontologist The principles established by Vladimir Kovalevsky had and still have great importance for the understanding of the evolution of mammals including fossil apes he laid the foundations of evolutionary palaeontology and was one of the most brilliant representatives of Russian materialist biology in the latter half of the nineteenth century—the first period in which Darwinism flourished

Darwin s works are profoundly materialist His theory of the natural origin of man from the animal world is a powerful weapon in the struggle against religion

Of great importance in this respect is his *Descent of Man and Selection in Relation to Sex* in which he mustered the more important proofs of man s descent from the animal kingdom

Darwin began collecting these proofs some thirty years before the book appeared As early as 1837 1838 he recorded the great idea of the relationship of man and animals in his notebook If we choose to let conjecture run wild then animals, our fellow brethren in pain disease death suffering and famine—our slaves in the most laborious works our companions in our amusements—they may partake (of?) our origin in one common ancestor—we may be all melted together *

Parallel to his work on the new theory of evolution Darwin gave much thought to the question of man s origin

For Darwin as a naturalist this problem was the loftiest and most interesting although it was surrounded by prejudice as he wrote to Wallace in 1857 i e two years before his basic work on evolution appeared

Darwin was well aware of the anti religious significance of his work on anthropogenesis for in 1860 he wrote that although

* Notebook of 1837 *The Life and Letters of Charles Darwin* Vol II London 1887 p 6

all people had the right to believe in the creation of man as a special miracle he could see no need for it and thought it dishonest to conceal his opinion Ten years later in 1870 he said in a private letter that the book he was publishing that autumn dealt in part with man and he was sure many people would condemn it as irreligious

This is not at all surprising for in his work on the descent of man we read He who is not content to look, like a savage at the phenomena of nature as disconnected cannot any longer believe that man is the work of a separate act of creation"* There are furthermore a number of other statements by Darwin to the effect that he hoped to do mankind a great service through his book by refuting the dogma of acts of creation

Darwin s book *The Descent of Man and Selection in Relation to Sex* appeared in 1871 It was in the nature of an extended interpretation of the one but very significant phrase on man in his basic work *On the Origin of Species* (1859) Light will be thrown on the origin of man and his history **

The publication of Darwin s book on the descent of man aroused at once great interest and furious hatred of which Timiryazev wrote In 1871 *The Descent of Man* appeared and served as a signal for a fresh outburst of indignation on the part of hypocrites and reactionaries of all shades against its author ' And further Science cannot reconcile itself to the idea that the development of mankind can at any time be held back by the regulations that dogma and myth impose on spheres into which science has not yet had time to penetrate

Darwin could not have found the right approach to the solution of the problem of anthropogenesis if, in the preceding historical stages of science sufficient facts had not been accumulated Somewhat before Darwin's time there appeared basic works on this problem by Thomas Huxley (1825 1895) and Ernst Haeckel (Naturliche Schöpfungsgeschichte 1867 Die Welträtsel 1900) Of the greatest value to Darwin were essays by Huxley (1864) his true ally in the struggle for the idea of evolution especially in its application to anthropogenesis

Approximately at the same time there appeared the works of the prominent French anatomist and anthropologist Paul Broca (1824 1880) on the comparative anatomy of the Primates and anthropogenesis

---

Charles Darwin *The Descent of Man* New York MCMI Vol 3 Ch XXI p 781

** Charles Darwin *On the Origin of Species* London 1950 Ch XIV p 414

3 DARWIN'S GENEALOGY OF MAN

Darwin took some of his proofs of the natural origin of man from geology using its evidence of the history of the Earth and the development of life In this field the works of Charles Lyell were of great importance although Lyell did not for a long time acknowledge the great antiquity of man As far as ancient man is concerned anthropology in Darwin's time already had at its disposal certain fossil remains They were a skull from Gibraltar (1848) a cranium from Neanderthal (1856) and a mandible from La Nolette (1866) The morphological peculiarities of these fossils showed the existence of a special group of ancient people with bodies of primitive structure

Of no less importance were numerous archaeological discoveries of stone implements made about that time the extreme antiquity of which was proved in France by Jacques Boucher de Perthes (1788 1868) These finds seriously undermined the position of the creationists who would not concede that man's antiquity on Earth was more than six to seven thousand years

Darwin drew other proofs from comparative anatomy and comparative physiology that enabled scientists to understand the points of similarity and difference in organisms by their form structure function and development Embryology provided him with some important facts showing similarities between *man and the animals He also had recourse to systematics* classifying all modern and fossil creatures according to degrees of similarity and establishing the presence or absence of relationship between the different groups This latter is made possible by palaeontology the study of fossil animal and plant life their distribution and development

The facts provided by these branches of science together with those of zoology parasitology, pathology and psychology when grouped together by Darwin enabled him to assert with confidence that the immediate ancestors of man were the fossil apes *of the Tertiary Period living in the tropical regions of the* Old World The Simiidae then branched off into two great stems, wrote Darwin 'the New World and Old World monkeys and from the latter at a remote period Man the wonder and glory of the Universe proceeded *

According to Darwin our ancient ancestors the primitive monkeys lived gregariously in the trees had pointed ears were covered with hair and both sexes had beards Later ancestors said Darwin, were the anthropoid apes Of those known to him

* Charles Darwin *The Descent of Man* Vol II Chap VI New York MCMIX pp 220 21

The intricate problem of the relation of ontogeny to phylogeny of recapitulations and their disruptions was dealt with specifically by D I Pisarev who, in 1864 gave a precise account of these phenomena That same year the problem was analysed in its essential details by the German scientist Fritz Muller (1822 1897)

Another German scientist and prominent follower of Darwin Ernst Haeckel developed the problem and formulated it in 1866 as a 'general biogenic law' Haeckel said Ontogeny is a brief and rapid recapitulation of phylogeny caused by the physiological functions of heredity (reproduction) and adaptation (nutrition) An organic individual repeats in the short and rapid course of its development the most important of those changes of form through which its ancestors passed in the slow and lengthy course of their palaeontological development following the laws of heredity and adaptation *

A N Severtsov (1866 1936), an eminent Russian biologist showed that the development of the embryo of a modern vertebrate does not so much indicate what the adult forms of the vertebrate ancestors were as it does their embryonic forms since many of the significant hereditary changes in the structure of the body take place during embryonic development and are reflected in the structure of adult forms in successive generations

There is no doubt however that the study of embryonic forms also enables us to estimate a number of peculiarities in the structure of adult ancestral forms especially in view of the fact that the reproduction and transmission of features occur in adult and not in embryonic forms

The ontogeny of the human body begins with the female egg cell This egg cell fertilized by the male sperm and attaching itself to the wall of the uterus is the early human embryo Here the process of cell division begun in the Fallopian tube (where fertilization usually takes place) continues

The process of cell division in the first stages of embryonic development resembles the process by which multicellular organisms developed from unicellular probably in the Proterozoic Era in the strata of the Earth s crust deposited towards the end of that era (about 500 000 000 years ago) scientists find the remains of the chief classes of invertebrates

The early stages of embryonic development in monkeys are better known than those of man Adolf Schultz discovered (1933) macaque embryos at a stage when they contained only

* Quotation translated from Ernst Haeckel *Generelle Morphologie der Organismen* Berlin 1866 II Band S 300

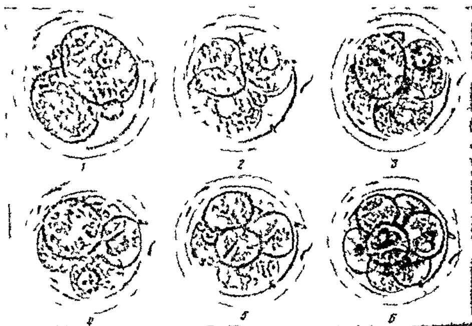


Fig 1 Cleavage of fertilized egg cell (ovum) of rhesus monkey from stage of two (1) to eight (6) blastomeres
After A Schultz 1932

a few cells and was able to observe their cleavage as far as the eight blastomere stage (fig 1)

The first stages of division of the human egg cell have become known only recently in 1954 Hertig Rock Adams and Milligan (U S A) studied four egg cells of 2 12 58 and 99 blastomeres At five or six days the human embryo already possesses mesodermal segments Segmentation in the structure of the muscular system of the human embryo is evidence of a protochordata stage from which evolved for example the notochord primordial vestiges of kidneys (ventral kidneys) and traces of the caudal gut

At the age of a few weeks the human and other mammal embryos display some resemblance to fish Gill slits appear at the sides of the head and neck divisions The vascular system resembles that typical of fish the heart has two chambers, there is a caudal artery and blood vessels in the form of six arches of the aorta which lead to the gill arches To this must be added the general shape of the embryonic body the tail, gill slits and the chorda dorsalis

This all goes to show that there were fish amongst the earliest ancestors of man and other higher mammals Some of the specific

features of the fish stage' of development may appear in man as atavisms—for example fistula in the neck connected with the larynx

At this early stage, man s brain has a very primitive structure but, like those of all mammals, it already has three primordial capsules—fore mid and hind

The fore capsule forms the olfactory lobes and behind them is the fore brain (prosencephalon) with its two cerebral hemi spheres (telencephalon) each with a cavity the first and second ventricles and still farther back are the inter brain (diencepha lon) also with a cavity the third ventricle, and the epiphysis and hypophysis

The mid capsule develops into the mid brain (mesencepha lon) with the quadrigeminal bodies on its superior surface The channel within the mid brain the aqueductus cerebri connects with the fourth ventricle formed in the hind brain and with the medulla oblongata From the lower part of the mid capsule stem the pedicles of the cerebrum which together with its hemi spheres develops out of the fore and mid divisions The hind capsule provides the pons cerebellum and medulla oblongata (in which there is the fourth ventricle) making up the hind brain (rhombencephalon) The medulla oblongata or myelencephalon is continuous with the spinal cord and the fourth ventricle with the cerebrospinal canal

The brain of the fish has a more primitive structure than that of any other living vertebrate The cerebral hemispheres are very small and have minute olfactory lobes There are practical ly no transverse bonds between the hemispheres these bonds develop in Amphibia and Reptilia and as the brain grows more complicated, are typical for the majority of mammals the most highly organized vertebrates

The mid brain of the fish consists mainly of the optic bigem ina (corpora bigemina) and is the biggest part of the brain (8 or 9 times the size of the cerebral hemispheres) The inter brain (diencephalon) between the cerebrum and the mid brain carries two outgrowths the epiphysis above and the hypophysis below

The epiphysis is an organ phylogenically connected with another organ the parietal eye The latter is capable of distin guishing light rays and develops in some modern vertebrates as an unpaired organ It is met with among the Cyclostomata (in the lamprey) and among the Reptilia (in the Sphenodon Phrynocephalus and Varanus) The opening of the parietal eye is found in the skulls of the majority of the most ancient fossil fish amphibians and reptiles From this we may assume that it was developed in our distant ancestors, the lower vertebrates

The hypophysis is of still greater interest Judging by the structure of this organ in the Cyclostomata (specifically in the Myxine where the tube of the hypophysis ends in an exterior opening in the head in front of the eyes and has its other interior end connected with the gut) it is also of very ancient origin The hypophysis is closely related to the cranial section of the alimentary canal (including the mouth) and the system of gills its anterior part is a derivative of an outgrowth of the primordial oral cavity The posterior part of the hypophysis is formed from the lower constricted end of the funnel of the inter brain

The hypophysis and epiphysis were formerly regarded as the most mysterious organs In his day Descartes even believed the epiphysis to contain the soul There is however nothing mysterious in them they are very ancient organs that have undergone extensive transformation and are now endocrine glands The peculiarities of their development in man are evidence of his kinship with the lowest vertebrates In some adults an open hypophysis reaches the mucous membrane of the pharynx ceiling where supplementary hypophyses are sometimes found In three to five per cent of all cases there is a craniopharyngeal duct in the form of a rudimentary tube for the stem of the hypophysis in the parietal bone of the skull (this duct is more frequently met with in the skulls of chimpanzees)

The epiphysis in the human embryo develops (as in other modern vertebrates) behind the parietal organ with which it has some connection not fully explained The Russian zoologist and anatomist V M Shimkevich thought that these two organs might possibly be vestiges of two paired formations connected with the development of the organs of vision in the lower vertebrates our distant ancestors

What has man inherited from the amphibian stage? Some scholars are of the opinion that the natatorial web between the fingers of the human embryo belongs to this stage The tendons of the musculi recti in the lower part of the stomach wall have been inherited from the amphibians

Man also got the ischiadic artery part of the inferior gluteal artery from the amphibians Cases of a free central bone in the wrist skeleton of an adult man may possibly be regarded as one of the examples of a part return to a structural form typical of our amphibian ancestors

In man s olfactory organ there is a diverticulum inherited from his amphibian ancestors—Jacobson s organ In the foetus it develops in the fifth month in the form of a duct connecting the nasal and oral cavities Although this organ is reduced before parturition it is to be found in adult man in the form of a short

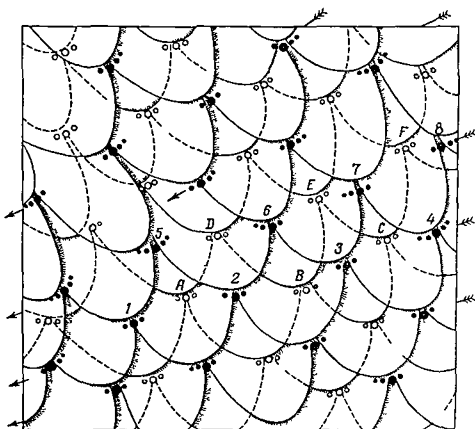


Fig 2 Arrangement of rudimentary hair groups on trunk of human foetus reproduction of epidermic scales at four months —groups of three and five hairs are visible
Greatly magnified After F Stohr 1907 (from M Weber 1936)

blind duct to which are attached the ends of special nerves Jacobson s organ is highly developed in ruminants

Lastly man also inherited from the ancient amphibians their nictitating membrane in the form of the caruncle (caruncula lacrimalis) a fold in the skin near the eye This fold in the human eye corresponds to the nictitating membrane found in modern amphibians reptiles birds and some fishes

In most mammals the nictitating membrane has been greatly reduced especially in the whales (Cetacea) and the majority of the Primates but it is still highly developed in others for example in rabbits cats and certain monkeys The fold in man is a good example of a rudiment

Man has also inherited some features from his reptilian ancestors that are most easily detected in the foetus at the age of a few months—in the development of the brain in the structure and character of limb articulation with the body

In the embryo furthermore Meckel's cartilage forms part of the first gill arch that later develops into the lower jaw or mandible. As in all other mammals this cartilage then becomes two auditory bones the hammer (malleus) and the anvil (incus). In our ancestors it underwent a process of ossification and formed a connecting link in the intricate mechanism joining the mandible to the skull as in the case of modern reptiles. The third auditory bone the stirrup (stapes) develops from the hyoid gill arch and is found in one form or another in Amphibia and Reptilia.

The way in which the hairs are distributed in groups of three and five (fig. 2) on the body of the foetus to a certain extent corresponds to the arrangement of the scales on the hide of the ancient reptiles that were the ancestors of the mammals.

Lastly there is a physiological peculiarity in the regulation of body temperature in newborn infants (and in children even up to five years of age) that is probably due to our ancestors having evolved from animals of a transitional type between reptiles and mammals that possessed only a rudimentary neurovascular mechanism regulating the development and distribution of heat energy in the body (Slonim 1952).

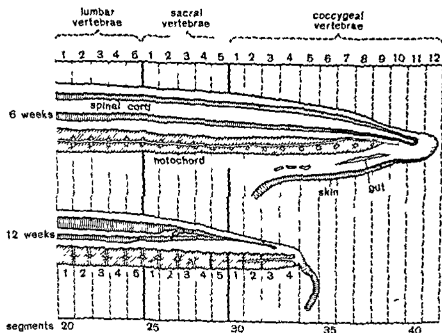


Fig. 3. Coccygeal region and its reduction at early stages of embryonic development (6 to 12 weeks). Greatly magnified. After Kunitomo from A. Keith 1933.

A large number of facts go to prove that among man s later ancestors were the extinct mammals The human foetus at the early stages of its development is lissencephalic the brain having a smooth surface and primitive structure closely resembling that of modern lower mammals (this peculiarity has probably been inherited from a Mesozoic form)

There are other primitive features shown in man s ontogeny that bear evidence of his kinship with the lower mammals The six week human embryo has several pairs of primordial mammary glands transitory along the mammary ridge Rather thick but short hairy down (lanugo) covers the whole body with the exception of the palms of the hands and the soles of the feet Ridges of noticeable size on the soft palate are similar to those that in their developed form are typical of monkeys the Carnivora and other mammals

In the embryo between six and twelve weeks the caudal region is well expressed in which the end of an embryonic spine with eight or nine vertebrae is to be seen (fig 3) At the end of this period the exterior division of the tail is reduced and withdrawn The interior division of the caudal region retains from two to six vertebrae the coccygeal vertebrae that usually join together to form the coccyx which in young men and women does not as a rule, fuse with the sacrum

These last three features, preserved by way of exception and developing in certain individuals as well as several others inherited from our ancestors appear only as atavisms Another of them for example is the absence of the fold on the helix of the ear lobe on many human foetuses In some adults the pointed shape of the ear known as macacus ear, is retained This form of the ear lobe is present in the human foetus at the age of five or six months and is apparently, inherited from fossil lower monkeys that are in some respects similar to the macaque and form one of the ancient links in our genealogy In cases where the helix is incomplete on the upper and outer parts of the lobe the skin forms into a slight prominence known as the Darwinian tubercle

Among the atavistic features that belong to the mammal stage we must include strongly developed ear muscles that permit a man to move the lobes of his ears the development of laryngeal ventricles in the thorax to a depth of more than a centimetre supernumerary mammary glands or nipples vestiges of several surplus teeth excessive hairness of the body and face an embryonic tail (Gregory 1936 Nesturkh 1936)

Every human being possesses a vermiform appendix this rudimentary organ is indisputable evidence of the fact that our ancestors at the lower mammal stage possessed a fairly long

caecum or blind gut In some of the modern mammals the rodents and ungulates for example energetic digestive processes take place in the caecum

The vermiform appendix is only one of the rudimentary organs of the human body It is typical of these rudiments or vestigial organs that they vary to a very great degree in shape size and structure The human appendix has an average length of eight or nine centimetres but sometimes it is as long as twenty or twenty five centimetres as it is in the anthropoids it may also be greatly reduced to no more than one or two centimetres in very rare cases it is completely absent

The vermiform appendix is very rich in lymphoid tissue, especially in young individuals and apparently corresponds to some division of the blind gut in other mammals that have no appendix it may possibly fulfil some function as yet unknown

We may assume that man s ancestors in the course of evolution lost the following characteristics either fully or in part a keen sense of smell a hairy covering on the body the majority of the dermal muscles the tail prehensile feet mandibular and intestinal structures indicating a herbivorous nature, laryngeal sacs the two horned uterus (uterus bicornis) and pointed ear lobes The females of man s later ancestors the monkeys and lemurs had most of their mammary glands reduced because of their bearing fewer offspring Darwin believed that this was transmitted to the males of these animals

In the first days of its life the newborn infant s hands are extremely prehensile (fig 4) This is an indirect proof of man s descent from an arboreal animal i e of the simian stage in man s genealogy

Evidence drawn from comparative pathology and parasitology was regarded by Darwin as being of great importance in proving man s relationship to the animals We cite one confirmation of Darwin s theory provided by modern parasitology Of the twenty five Protozoa that are parasitic to monkeys eighteen species are to be found in man although they have not been recorded for other mammals

On the eve of the publication of Darwin s book Engels pointed to the great significance which the study of the physiology of man and animals has as a confirmation of the materialist view of man s place in nature and of his origin In a letter to Marx he said So much is certain comparative physiology gives one a withering contempt for the idealistic exaltation of man over the other animals At every step one bumps up against the most complete uniformity of structure with the rest of the mammals and in its main features this uniformity extends to all vertebrates and even—more hazily—to insects crustaceans tapeworms etc

The Hegelian business of the qualitative leap in the quantitative series is also very fine here *

Darwin paid special attention to the proof of the phylogenic identity of emotions and means of expressing them he wrote a special paper on this subject which was closely connected with his *Descent of Man* In the essay I refer to *The Expression of the Emotions in Man and Animals* published in 1872 he succeeded in showing that as far as the features of elementary psychic activity and means of expressing the emotions are concerned man is undoubtedly genetically related to the monkeys Another important Darwinian conclusion was that there are no psychic differences between the races of mankind



Fig 4 Prehensility of hands of newborn infants
After L Robinson 1891

Darwin s study of facts of this kind together with the rudiments and atavisms, served to convince him that man has a long genealogy reaching far back into the history of the animal kingdom and that the last link that preceded the first men consisted of fossil anthropoids

In determining the pre human stages of man s genealogy Darwin had only the scanty remains of the bones of fossil mammals (down to fossil monkeys) to go on Nevertheless he was fairly accurate in establishing the main stages in the evolution of our nearest ancestors the lemurs and monkeys He also outlined the main features of development of man s erect posture which he found in the Upper Tertiary fossil apes that were our immediate ancestors

* Marx Engels *Selected Correspondence* Moscow 1965 No 43 p 109

In discussing the causes that led to the erect mode of locomotion Darwin assumed that a change of feeding was of great importance, this occurred when our ancestors began to spend more time on the ground in search of food But says Darwin, there were probably other causes that led them to change their arboreal way of life for a terrestrial one and begin walking on two legs in open country

The development from ape to man was said Darwin, made easier by a number of specific features such as the highly developed brain and the differentiated fore and hind limbs (the former had already become specialized organs for hanging from branches and for the prehension of fruits and other objects, the latter served primarily as supports) Erect gait high mental development and the gregarious instinct were a great help in the invention of tools the appearance of articulate speech and of methods of fire making all of which in the course of his further development raised man far above the other animals

Darwin believed that our ancestors descended from the trees to the ground in the struggle for existence and were compelled to move either on four legs (as did the ancestors of the baboons) or on two In connection with this it is interesting to cite the opinion of Sir Arthur Keith he thinks it possible that our arboreal ancestors developed a type of locomotion that required them to place the soles of their feet on the thick horizontally growing lower limbs of a tree and grasp the upper branches with their hands Such a mode of locomotion could change our ancestors into bipeds when they began to move on the ground This mode of locomotion on branches was given the name of *cruriation* at Keith s suggestion

Only man became a biped wrote Darwin to a very considerable extent he owes this to the hands and feet of his ancestors the apes in whom they developed in different directions while they were still living in the trees Erect locomotion inevitably accelerated the process of differentiation converting the foot of the ape with its partially grasping and partially supporting functions into the human foot that is used exclusively as a support

What were the biological factors that assisted in the transition from ape to man? According to Darwin the chief factors were natural selection the influence of use and disuse sexual selection to these he added mutation environmental influences reproduction heredity correlative changes and other factors then not discovered As a biologist Darwin was best able to explain the origin of man from the standpoint of biological laws and he exaggerated their role and significance It is true that he stressed the tremendous difference between man and even the anthropoids Nevertheless he was unable to offer a precise con

cept of the process of anthropogenesis which differed sharply from the biological evolution of monkeys and all other animals Darwin treated this process as that of the gradual transformation of the ape into man and did not draw a sufficiently sharp line between the ancient ape and the first man that is marked by the appearance of the earliest forms of work

Darwin made an attempt to introduce points of a social character for the explanation of man s evolution He gave a prominent place for example to an analysis of the influence of man s social habits on the development of moral qualities the sense of duty and many other of man s distinguishing features Darwin, however was hampered by the bourgeois conception of social development and could not correctly assess the influence of social factors, he was a long way off the labour theory of anthropogenesis The obvious defects in Darwin s solution of the problem of anthropogenesis do not in any way detract from the tremendous significance of his two classic books on this problem

Darwin drew a general picture of the extremely long genealogy of man the last link of which was formed by the highly developed fossil anthropoid apes of the Upper Tertiary Period An acquaintance with their present day relatives will enable us to get a mental picture of these fossil apes get an idea of their structure and biological peculiarities and of their way of life their food and mode of locomotion In this way it is easier to determine who man s immediate ancestors were At the same time an answer may be found to the question why man evolved from only one species of anthropoid ape while hundreds of other species were unable to become men





Fig 6 Asian and African lower monkeys
1—Javanese macaque (M cynomolgus Anderson) habitat Malay Archipelago 2—Ethiopian white tailed guereza or Mbega (Colobus caudatus Thomas)
Archives of Moscow Institute of Anthropology (1) and after L Heck from O Abel 1931 (2)





Fig 7 New World monkeys
1—White throated capuchin (Cebus capucinus E Geoffroy) habitat Nicaragua Costa Rica Colombia Guiana Brazil 2—common marmoset (Hapale jacchus L) habitat Eastern Brazil After D Elliot 1912



Fig 8 *Gibbons*

1—female Siamese *gibbon* (Hylobates concolor Schlegel) with her offspring Primo born at *San Diego* Zoological Gardens USA in *1938* *2*—web toed gibbon or Siamang (*Symphalangus* syndactylus F Cuvier) habitat Sumatra
After B Benchley 1944 (*1*) and after R and A Yerkes 1934 (2)

brought about many of the anatomical features that are peculiar to them (Zhedenov 1962 Nesturkh *1962*)

If the Primates are classified according to the degree of their approximation to man the anthropoids come first the lower catarrhines second (fig 6) the American monkeys third (fig 7) the tarsiers fourth the lemurs fifth and the Tupaiidae last One point of similarity between man and the Old World monkeys is the narrowness of the nasal septum or partition as compared with the monkeys of the New World that are sometimes called





Fig 9 Orangutans (*Simia satyrus* L)
1—male *2*—female with young habitat Sumatra and Borneo
After S Zuckerman 1933 (*1*) and after R and A Yerkes 1934 (*2*)

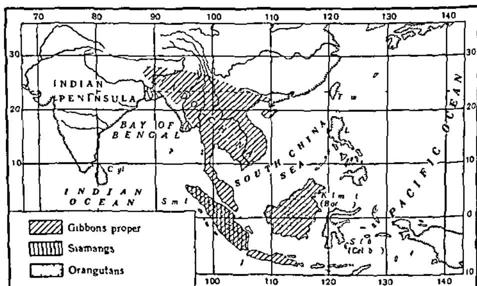


Fig 10 Map of habitat of gibbons and orangutans
After A Brehm 1920 (Slightly changed by author)

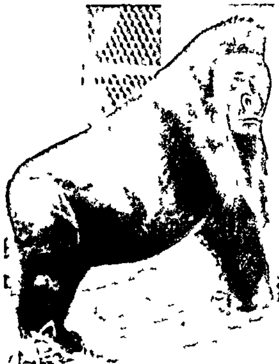




Fig 11 Gorillas

1—male mountain gorilla (Gorilla gorilla beringei Matschie) Mbongo in San Diego Zoological Gardens U S A *2*—young female mountain gorilla Miss Congo (Laboratory of Primate Biology Florida) After B Benchley 1944 (*1*) after R and A Yerkes 1934 (2)





Fig 12 Common Guinea chimpanzees (Pan chimpanse Meyer= Anthropopithecus troglodytes Flower and Lydekker)
1—male (New York Zoological Gardens) after D Elliot 1912 2—adult female Bella Moscow Zoological Gardens habitat Equatorial Africa

gibbons Furthermore there is little difference in the height and weight of the two sexes of gibbons whereas women on the average are 10 centimetres shorter and about 10 kilograms light er than men

One of the peculiarities of the internal structure of the anthro poids is the paired laryngeal sacs that are very highly developed (except in some of the gibbons) These sacs act as resonators for the sounds produced by the larynx Many travellers have written of the power of the voices of the anthropoids of the deafening screams emitted by herds of chimpanzees or gibbons in the tropical forests Gorillas and orangutans also emit thun derous roars

The laryngeal sacs of the anthropoids correspond to the laryn geal ventricles in man that are situated in the throat immedi ately above the vocal chords proper these tiny projections are rudimentary laryngeal sacs that functioned in the extinct anthro poids and are further evidence of man s genealogy These sacs are not found in the lower catarrhine monkeys who have un paired sacs of different origin

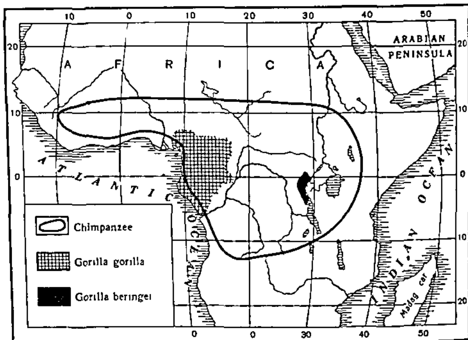


Fig 13 Habitat of African anthropoids—chimpanzees (after A Brehm 1920 with author s additions) and gorillas (after H Coolidge 19?9)

Another peculiarity of internal structure is the vermiform ap pendix of the caecum it is found in all anthropoids and is longer than that of man Recent investigations show that the lower monkeys have no appendix Here again man is closely related to the anthropoid apes

Apart from the obvious and often astounding similarities be tween man and the anthropoid apes both in their external and internal structure there are a number of very noticeable dif ferences that to a great extent result from different modes of locomotion the nature of the food and the way of life

In short, the anthropoids are highly developed apes adapted for life in the dense tropical jungles There they move from branch to branch and from tree to tree often swinging (bra chiating) from one limb to another using only their arms and with their legs drawn up under the body On the ground these apes move mostly on all fours with the body in a semi erect position the fore limbs or arms are longer than the hind limbs or legs since they use them more energetically as a means of locomotion in the trees (figs 14 and 15)

Of the anthropoids only the gorilla lives mostly on the ground but it has not lost some of its tree habits in case of danger the



Fig. 14. Herd of white-handed gibbons (Hylobates lar)
Fresco by V. Samoilenko-Mashkovtseva. Museum of Anthropology, Moscow State University



gorilla takes to the trees and at sunset builds a fresh nest in a fork of the branches and covers it with soft leaves grass and moss for a comfortable night s rest

Chimpanzees and orangutans also build nests the former making them on the ground to rest in for some hours during the day (Ladygina Kohts 1960) The gibbons unlike the other apes, do not build nests If man's ancestors formerly possessed the instinct for building nests in trees or, like the chimpanzee for making a daytime bed on the ground, not a trace of it has been retained by modern man even in his early childhood

The big anthropoids eat fruit, leaves flowers shoots and other parts of plants The gibbons also prefer vegetable food but manage to catch a butterfly or bird on the wing and are fond of robbing birds nests of their eggs and young The great apes can bite the biggest fruits with their powerful teeth their jaws are very strong and those of the gorilla and orangutan are more massive and powerful than those of the smaller chimpanzee

The extensive anatomical differences between man and the anthropoids are to a considerable extent overshadowed by the many resemblances that testify to man s relationship with these apes One has only to study the blood and its properties the specific features of propagation and the course of development in the individual to become convinced of this The leukocytes in the blood of the chimpanzee and gorilla are closest to those of man, the neutrophils and eosinophils having a similar type of nuclear segmentation they have but few segments, those of the lower monkeys having considerably more

Still more important is the biochemical affinity of the blood of man and the anthropoids Examples of this affinity are the almost equal precipitation of albumin in experiments with serum and a similarity of blood groups Apart from a large number of other mostly secondary isoserological factors human beings have four main blood groups I or 0 (zero) II or A, III or B and IV or AB that form a single uniform system Of the Primates only the anthropoids have these blood groups although similar groups have also been found in some of the lower Old World monkeys (table 1)

The many blood transfusions made by J Troisier (1931) from different chimpanzees with group II (A) blood to human beings of the same blood group were successful and showed no adverse manifestations Much earlier, in 1900, Hans Friedenthal s experiments of injecting human blood into the vascular system of a chimpanzee were equally successful Experiments on the lower monkeys showed that judging by the reddish colour of the urine human erythrocytes underwent haemolysis in the blood of the monkeys, human blood was therefore alien to the

BLOOD GROUPS OF MAN, APES AND MONKEYS (ACCORDING TO MOURANT, 1954)

Primates	0	A	B	AB
Man	+	+	+	+
Chimpanzee	+ (13)	+ (110)	—	—
Gorilla gorilla	—	+ (13)	—	—
Gorilla beringei	—	—	+ (2)	—
Orangutan	—	+ (7)	+ (8)	+ (4)
Gibbon	—	+ (1)	+ (6)	+ (1)
Rhesus monkey (groups found in saliva)	+	+	+	+

(The figures in brackets indicate the number of individuals examined.)

animals. This was confirmed when the whole blood of a baboon was mixed with human blood serum: the erythrocytes in the baboon's blood were destroyed. When a similar experiment was carried out with chimpanzee blood the erythrocytes did not undergo any changes.

A monograph by T. Roux (1959) on the diseases of apes and monkeys studied in laboratory conditions shows that in the field of the comparative pathology of Primates man and the apes have much in common.

There are also astounding similarities in the propagation of man and the anthropoids. The ovum and spermatozoid of chimpanzees or gorillas are almost indistinguishable from the human either in size or shape.

The number of chromosomes is also approximately the same—man has 46 and the big anthropoids have 48, while the lower catarrhine monkeys have from 54 to 78. At the Seventh World Congress of Anthropologists and Ethnologists in Moscow in 1965 (Yakimov, 1965) the Italian biologist B. Chiarelli expressed the opinion that the loss of two chromosomes during the process of anthropogenesis was due to the merging of identical individuals. It is probable that a similar genetico-evolutionary process took place when the higher apes evolved from the lower monkeys. Be that as it may, the chimpanzee has 12 chromosomes similar to those of man, the gorilla has 10 and the orangutan 8 (B. Chiarelli). This is one of the most vivid proofs of the relationship between the big anthropoids and man.

The chimpanzee's period of gestation lasts from 210 to 252 days, about 235 days on the average; that of the orangutan about 275 days, that of a human being about 265 to 280 days.



Fig 16 Human and anthropoid foeti
1—gorilla *2*—man *3*—chimpanzee
After H Klaatsch 1915 (*1*) E Selenka 1905 (*2*) and A Schultz 1929 (*3*)

(that of the gorilla is probably about the same) In this respect the gibbons are closer to the lower monkeys as the female is pregnant for no more than 210 days The foetus of an anthro poid ape (fig 16) bears a much greater resemblance to the human foetus than those of the other monkeys (Harms 1956 Stark 1956)

In the course of 30 years about a thousand lower monkeys have been born at the Academy of Medical Sciences Medico Biological Station in Sukhumi numerous observations have been made (Voronin Kanfor, Lakin Tikh 1948 Proceedings of the Sukhumi Medico Biological Station Acad Med Sciences of the USSR Vol 1 1949 Malis 1952 Utkin 1954 Yeligulashvili 1955) During the whole of this period three pairs of twins have been born two hamadryas baboons and one rhesus monkey pair Anthropoid apes breed more rarely in captivity A gorilla baby was born in Columbus Ohio USA on December 22 1956 The period of gestation and parturition of chimpanzees has been observed since 1915 There have been about 75 cases of chim panzees bearing young in captivity of which two were cases of twins (fig 17) Doctors and scientists have established the close resemblance between human beings and chimpanzees during pregnancy and parturition The young chimpanzee with thick hair on its head and a bare body (fig 18) more closely resembles a human baby than an adult chimpanzee does an adult man



Fig 17 Chimpanzee twins newborn male (right) and female (Moscow Zoological Gardens 1939)
Exhibited at Moscow Institute and Museum of Anthropology



Fig 18 Newborn chimpanzee
After R and A Yerkes 1934

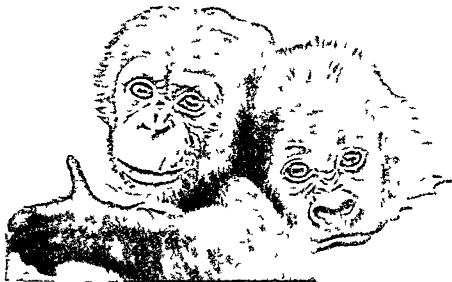


Fig 19 Young chimpanzee (left) and gorilla
After F Merfield 1954

The development of the anthropoid skeleton in the uterine period judged on the basis of secondary ossification is slower than that of the lower monkeys and is close to that of the newly born human baby (Wokken 1949) We may connect this with the fact that the young of the guenon (Cercopithecus) for example, is helpless for no more than two or three months while the young chimpanzee is helpless over a much longer period—five to six months The young chimpanzee begins to move about independently only when it is six months old (figs 19 21) and for about two years clings to its mother or keeps close to her is suckled by her and sleeps in one nest with her

The baby chimpanzee cuts the last of its 20 deciduous teeth at about 12 months which after a certain period (less than the five year period of a human baby) are replaced by permanent teeth all the 32 teeth grow in the course of little more than 10 years The baby chimpanzee increases in weight by periods corresponding approximately to those of the human child (Schultz 1956)

In 8 to 10 years female chimpanzees reach the age of puberty the males at about 12 years the male gorilla reaches puberty at about 14 years or even later The menstrual cycle of the chimpanzee is about 30 days in some females even more up to 40 days

Female chimpanzees (and gorillas) differ sharply from human beings during the menstrual cycle by the formation of oedemic swellings of the sexual skin known as menstrual cushions. The same is observed among some of the lower monkeys, the baboons, macaques and mangabeys (Nesturkh 1946, Alexeeva and Nesturkh 1958). Orangutans and gibbons have no such swellings, although something similar appears on the skin of the pregnant orangutan.

The ape's span of life is not known with any degree of accuracy, since data on the longevity of apes in captivity are rather scanty. It must be remembered that apes die prematurely from disease, mostly of the alimentary tract and respiratory organs. It has been reported that one female chimpanzee lived to the age of 60 (R. and A. Yerkes 1934, p. 259). There is also reliable information concerning a male chimpanzee brought from Africa who lived 39 years in captivity and left numerous progeny (R. Yerkes 1945). Gorillas have rarely lived more than 20 years in captivity; two orangutans lived 35 years and a gibbon nearly the same length of time; of the latter it is known that he was an adult when captured and after twenty years in a cage his muscles were still as strong, his teeth as sharp and his nature as untameable as the day he arrived. Baboons have lived in captivity more than 50 years. Even lemurs are long-lived and have been kept in captivity up to 25 years (Hill 1953).



Fig. 20. Female chimpanzee Bubu with offspring Jubilee at 14 days and at three months. London Zoological Gardens.

After S. Zuckerman, 1933

From what has been said we may draw three conclusions. Firstly, the Primates are long lived in comparison with the majority of other mammals (excluding elephants and whales). Secondly, under natural conditions the big anthropoids apparently live several decades and such giants as the gorilla and the orang utan probably live 50 or 60 years or more. Thirdly, the present day longevity of man is to be explained by the well founded assumption that his nearest ancestors, the Upper Tertiary fossil anthropoids, were long lived. Man's span of life has obviously increased under the more favourable conditions of social life and now greatly exceeds that of the anthropoids, occasionally reaching 100-150 years and even more.



Fig 21 Young chimpanzee Georgie (San Diego Zoological Gardens, U.S.A.)
After B Benchley, 1944

The facts mentioned above show that Thomas Huxley's opinion that man is anatomically more closely related to the apes than the latter to the lower quadruped monkeys still holds true.

Since the close relationship existing between man and the higher apes applies also to the organs of reproduction, the idea has long existed of joining the egg cells and spermatozoid of man and the higher Primates by artificial insemination.

Hans Friedenthal broached the idea 50 years ago on the basis of his experiments on the similarity of the blood of man and the apes. There are many known cases of interspecific and even more remote crossing among other mammals. There have been quite a large number of cases of crossing of Primates in captivity—among the lemurs and the Old and New World monkeys—that have produced not only interspecific but even intergeneric hybrids.

A noteworthy case on an intergeneric hybrid occurred at the Sukhumi Medico Biological Station at the beginning of 1949: a female hamadryas baboon bore a female offspring, Prima, by a male macaque that was itself a hybrid produced by crossing a pig tailed macaque (lapunder) with a macaque rhesus. Prima

bears obvious characteristics of both her parents The same parents soon produced another hybrid offspring, also a female named Marquise

Interspecific and more remote crossing among the monkeys of that station (now the Institute of Experimental Pathology and Therapy) have produced about 50 hybrids Their hereditary peculiarities are being studied at the Institute as well as their morphology physiology and pathology

It is theoretically possible to assume that hominids could be crossed with anthropoids, with a female chimpanzee, for example

Such experiments, naturally, are fraught with great difficulty Even without them anthropology is in possession, as we have seen in part of very extensive data confirming Darwin's theory of the natural descent of man from the animal kingdom To this evidence must be added the numerous fossil remains of Tertiary and Quaternary apes and monkeys that have been discovered

2 EXTINCT ANTHROPOIDS

It is to be assumed that the Old World monkeys derived from local forms of prosimians in the first half of the Tertiary Period the latter is usually divided into five epochs The three older Palaeocene Eocene and Oligocene lasted approximately 8 12 and 12 million years respectively and constitute the Palaeogenic Epoch while the two later Miocene and Pliocene approximately 16 and 11 million years form the Neogenic

The Tertiary Period therefore lasted for about 60 million years During this long period of time monkeys derived from the prosimians or half monkeys and then underwent a further evolution In the course of this evolution of the Primates many species of arboreal anthropoids came into being terrestrial species of these apes appeared later among them man s immediate ancestors

We have only fossil bones by which to study the evolution of the apes and these unfortunately consist mostly of jaws and teeth skulls and the various bones are very rare to say nothing of whole skeletons with the one exception of the Oreopithecus bambolii discovered in Italy quite recently (Hurzeler 1958) The fossil material available however is sufficient to give us a general idea of how the higher monkeys or apes developed in the Tertiary and later in the Quaternary periods (figs 22 and 23) In this respect the shape structure and size of the molar teeth is of great significance

How are the molar teeth of an ape to be distinguished from those of a monkey? A close examination of the molars will show


Baboon


Gibbon


Orangutan


Baboon


G bbon


Orangutan

Quaternary Period


G ga

Tertiary Period


Pliocene Mesopithecus


Udabnop thecus



Gorilla

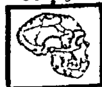
Chimpanzee

Man


Gorilla

Chimpanzee

Man

Cro Magnon

Neanderthaler

Pithecanthropus

ntop thecus

Meganthropus

Australopithecus

German Dryopithecus

Rama ithecus




that the cusps on the teeth of various groups of monkeys are differently interconnected The lower Old World monkeys for example, have the four chief cusps on the lower molars joined in pairs (the protoconid with the metaconid in front and the hypoconid with the entoconid behind) to form two high enamel ridges across the teeth Such ridges are not to be found on the molars of the higher apes where there is only a single low ridge that crosses the tooth diagonally (see p 53)

The cusp pattern of man s teeth clearly relates him to the anthropoid type although the human pattern has some features of its own that developed after man had branched off from the main stem of the great apes in the Upper Tertiary On modern man s lower molars the four main cusps are almost equal in area and the furrows between them form a more or less distinct cross, like a + sign or a crux pattern

Another pattern is sometimes met with on some modern human molars due to the first internal cusp of the lower molar (meta conid) occupying a greater area than the second On account of this excessive growth the furrow between these cusps goes far ther to the back of the tooth than that between the two main exterior cusps, the protoconid and hypoconid

Such a pattern is common to both existing and extinct apes and immediately reveals a "simian substratum in the structure of man s teeth This cusp pattern was first remarked in the Dryopithecus, an important link in man's line of descent and has been given the name of the Dryopithecus pattern As it is found on human teeth it is one of the most important proofs of man s descent from the apes

In 1960 K Korenhof used a new and original method for the study of pattern of the upper molars and discovered fresh traces of man s relationship to the higher apes

The dental system of man and all the Old World monkeys consists of 32 permanent teeth Each half of the jaw contains two incisors one canine two premolars and three molars Hu man teeth are set close together without a hiatus or diastem between the upper canines and the incisors and between the lower canines and the premolars that are typical of all monkeys and apes

The absence of these diastems in man is to be explained by the fact that his canines have become so small that they do not project beyond the other teeth The roots of the canines how ever are longer apparently because our ancestors had canines with a much bigger crown which caused them to project beyond the other teeth as is the case with modern apes

The last third molars or wisdom teeth in man are greatly retarded in growth and erupt much later than the others They

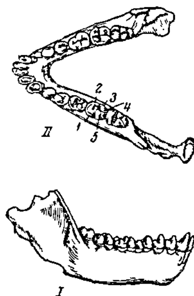


Fig. 24. Mandible of Parapithecus fraasi Schlosser found in Lower Oligocene strata at Fayum, Egypt.
I and II—right lateral and superior aspects. 1—protoconid. 2—metaconid. 3—entoconid. 4—hypoconulid. 5—hypoconid. 3/4 natural size. After M. Schlosser from O. Abel, 1931.

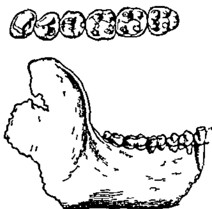


Fig. 25. Mandible of Propliopithecus haeckeli Schlosser found in Lower Oligocene strata at Fayûm, Egypt. Right lateral aspect partially restored. Upper—teeth from canine to third molar. Mandible—natural size, teeth—4/3 natural size. After M. Schlosser from O. Abel, 1931.

have a less distinct formation than the first and second molars and are to a great extent rudimentary. One or two of the wisdom teeth of some people never erupt and in rare cases three or even all four of them fail to erupt.

Another proof of man's descent from a species of ape is to be found by a study of the milk teeth of which there are only 20 in man and in all Old World monkeys: in each half of the jaw there are two incisors, one canine and two molar teeth. There are two points of interest connected with the milk teeth: shallow furrows between cusps on the molars, very similar to those typical of the chimpanzee, occur in the milk teeth of all children, and on the first lower molars there is a special cusp (paraconid) situated in an anterior position which has been inherited from man's very remote ancestors, the Early Tertiary prosimians.

One of the most primitive of the fossil apes is the tiny Parapithecus. Only the lower jaw and teeth of this tiny ape are known and they were discovered in 1911 by Max Schlosser near Fayum

man due to the shortening of his dental equipment in general and of the molars in particular, all four cusps occupy almost equal areas and are separated by longitudinal and transverse furrows In the anthropoids the antero interior cusp (metaconid) is bigger than the posterior (entoconid) cusp on account of which the furrow between them is not opposite that which separates the two exterior cusps (anterior and posterior, i e, protoconid and hypoconid) This rather intricate detail has proved to be of great importance for a conception of the evolution of Primates and the development of the highest of all Primates—man

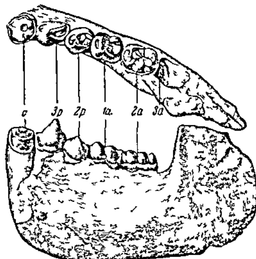


Fig 26 Mandible of Dryopithecus fontani Lartet
1—left lateral aspect 2—superior aspect 7/8 natural size
After O Abel 1931

With which of the modern apes is man most closely connected in origin? We may begin by excluding the gibbons and particularly the orangutans who have many features showing their excessive specialization In these two anthropoids adaptation to life in the trees has been carried to extremes and has arrived at the mode of locomotion known as brachiation

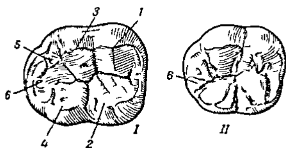


Fig 27 Grinding surface of lower molars
I—Dryopithecus pattern on third lower molar of Dryopithecus chinjiensis Pilgrim II—crux pattern typical of modern man 1—protoconid 2—metaconid 3—hypoconid 4—entoconid 5—hypoconulid=mesoconid 6—sixth cusp 3/2 natural size
After W Gregory from O Abel 1931

The gibbons are swift brachiators who can swing for hours through the trees flying straight from one tree to another and *offering a spectacle* in which unusual agility is combined with movements of great elegance

The orangutans with their heavy bodies and long brittle bones are slow

brachiators who study a branch before they will trust themselves to it Orangutans climb rather than swing from branch to branch

The slow moving orangutan stands out among the anthropoids with his shaggy russet pelage cheek pads sternal glands of unknown significance the absence of a nail on his rudimentary great toes and other evidence of specialization the orangutan is an obvious deviate from type that has followed a line of development differing from that of the gibbon chimpanzee and gorilla and still farther from the line from which man emerged

The molars of the orangutan are noticeably different from those of the gorilla or chimpanzee the cusps are lower there are several additional cusps and the wrinkles that cover the grinding surfaces are very shallow The chimpanzee's molars have many wrinkles and they are of average depth the gorilla has few of them and they are very deep Primatologists can easily recognize the teeth of the modern apes especially those of the gibbons The teeth of fossil anthropoids also differ and can be recognized although this is a difficult enough task owing to their great individual mutations there are furthermore more species and genera than there are of the living apes

Judging by the degree of similarity in the structure of the teeth and jaw the ancestors of the orangutan are best represented by two fossil anthropoids the Palaeosimia and the Sivapithecus The third upper right molar of the Palaeosimia was found in 1915 near Simla in the Siwalik foothills of the Himalayas where a rich collection of the bones and teeth of extinct monkeys was found in the Miocene and Pliocene strata The grinding surface of the tooth is covered with easily identifiable tiny wrinkles which gave this ape the name of wrinkle toothed (rugosidens) Palaeosimia Since 1879 the jaws of a number of different Sivapitheci have been discovered in the Miocene strata of the Siwalik Hills but it was not until 1938 that Milo Hellman succeeded in reconstructing their dental arches (Gregory Hellman and Lewis 1938) Since several discoveries of the teeth of fossil orangutans have been made on the Asian mainland—in South China—where they lived in the Quaternary Period it may be assumed that the orangutan was indigenous to that area

Compared with the orangutan and the gibbons the chimpanzee and the gorilla descended from the Dryopithecus group in the mid Tertiary Period display much greater approximation to man From the same group the nearer ancestors of man also emerged

It must be admitted that we are unfortunately even today unable to get an accurate picture of the body of the Dryopithecus It is true that there exist about a dozen lower jaw fragments with several dozen teeth but the upper teeth are known only from a few isolated samples The upper jawbone (maxilla) has not

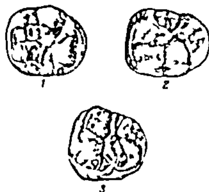


Fig. 28. Lower molars of Dryopitheci.
1—Dr. germanicus Abel from Lower Pliocene strata of Bohnerz in Trochtelfingen, Schwaben—left second molar; 2—Dr. punjabicus Pilgrim from Miocene strata in Siwalik Hills at Simla, India—second right molar; 3—Dr. darwini Abel from Middle Miocene strata at Neudorf, near Vienna—left last molar.
2:1; 3:2; 3/2 natural size. After O. Abel, 1931



Fig. 29. Fragments of jaws of Ramapithecus brevirostris Lewis.
1—right half of mandible; 2—right half of upper jaw.
Natural size. After G. Lewis, 1934

been found; the same applies to the skull. All that is known of the skeleton is a humerus and of that but a fragment.

Despite this scholars have succeeded in showing by the tooth pattern and other features of the Dryopithecus that Dr. germanicus Abel (Germany) could be the ancestor of the chimpanzee, Dr. fontani Lartet (France) or Dr. punjabicus Pilgrim (India) of the gorilla. Dr. darwini Abel (Austria) belongs to man's ancestors (fig. 28). But there are other fossil anthropoids that more or less fit into a place among the ancestors of the chimpanzee, gorilla and man.

In 1933 in East Africa the fragment of a maxilla with a canine tooth and all the molars intact was discovered; it belongs to an anthropoid ape that lived at the beginning of the Miocene Epoch, about 25 000 000 years ago. A fragment of the mandible was also found. This ape was called the Proconsul after a chimpanzee named Consul in the London Zoological Gardens.

Later finds of the remains of fossil bones, a skull among them, on Rusinga Island in Lake Victoria, show that this monkey occupies an intermediate place between the primitive cercopithecoid type and the later anthropoids. The skull shows features

that are specific to the common ancestral group of the lower and higher catarrhine monkeys—the protocatarrhine group, among the features are the symphysis of the lower jaw is short the lower incisors are small and placed vertically the intermaxillary bones are narrow the nasal orifice is pear shaped (apertura piriformis) and there is no supraorbital ridge, a cast of the cranium shows that the central or rolandic sulcus is more anterior, the level of encephalic evolution is not high the brain being small in size the intero posterior cusp (hypocone) of the upper molars grows from the protocone and not from the rim (cingulum) of the enamel

Some scholars place the Ramapithecus among man s ancestors Two fragments of an upper and a lower jaw from two different individuals (fig 29) were taken from the Siwalik Hills in 1934 and 1935 from Lower Pliocene strata It is important to note that in the upper jaw there is no diastem between the sockets of the canine and the first premolar for the lower canine to enter when the jaws are closed, this is evidence for including Ramapithecus among man s ancestors rather than the contrary

In the Miocene and Pliocene epochs great changes took place in the manner of life of fossil anthropoids and numerous other animals on account of the tremendous processes that led to the transformation of the continents In the course of these millions of years the gigantic mountain chains of the Old World rose up in many places the climate became drier and more continental the dense masses of the tropical jungles began at first to thin out and then to disappear

Like many other tropical animals the monkeys were accustomed to life in the forests in the trees those who did not manage to adapt themselves to the new conditions in the tremendous open spaces that were formed in most cases died out some of them moved to the south and only a few such as the baboons and man s anthropoid ancestors went over to a life lived exclusively on the ground The baboons developed into powerfully built animals living in big herds and acquired such distinctly animal features as strong canines (tusks) and an extremely spiteful nature The biped anthropoids were slower and unsteady in their upright locomotion in open territory they had no thick pellage lived in small groups had few offspring and matured late in life Even if they did in their helplessness turn to such natural objects as stones to help them win their food and defend themselves against enemies they all sooner or later became extinct (mainly they were the victims of the big cats) with the exception of the wisest and best adapted species—man s immediate ancestor (Nesturkh 1964)



Fig 30 Right upper teeth of Udabnopithecus garedziensis Burchak Abramovich and Gabashvili

1 3—first molar and 4 7—second premolar 1 4—oral aspect 2 5—lateral aspect 6—medial aspect 3 7—grinding surface 7/6 (1 6) and 7/4 (7) natural size

After N Burchak Abramovich and L Gabashvili 1945

Caucasus until then No doubt there are remains of bones skulls and teeth of monkeys and other Primates preserved in the Tertiary strata of different parts of the Soviet Union

It is still difficult to determine the real place of the Udabnopithecus among the fossil apes or its relation to modern apes (Gremyatsky 1957) and to man s genealogy The problem is less difficult in respect of a series of discoveries of anthropoids in the Upper Pliocene and Lower Pleistocene strata of South Africa These are the Australopithecus and related forms that bear similarity to the chimpanzee the gorilla and to man Many scholars have written of closer phylogenetic relations between Australopithecus and man

The first of the South African anthropoids was found in 1924 in the eastern part of the Kalahari Desert in Bechuanaland Near the railway station of Taungs to the north of Kimberley the skulls of two adult baboons and the skull of a young anthropoid ape were found in a lime quarry It was at first believed that the finds were not of great geological antiquity they were dated as belonging to the first half of the Quaternary Period even closer to the middle of that period which would give them an age of between 500 000 and 800 000 years Somewhat later some scholars began to consider the find much older and placed it for example at the end of the Pleistocene and even the middle of the Pliocene

The incomplete skull of the South African anthropoid belonged to a young individual of about five years of age (figs 31 34) This is shown by the full set of milk teeth behind which can be seen the first permanent molars that are just beginning to erupt The facial and frontal bones of the skull have been well preserved Part of the skull forms a continuous whole with the mineral mass that fills it



Fig 31 Skull of Australopithecus africanus Dart Right side Inferior edge of mandible added by W Abel 3/4 natural size After O Abel





Fig 32 Cast of Australopithecus skull and (right) common chimpanzee skull, both of same age



Fig 33 Upper dentition and palate of Australopithecus (left) and common chimpanzee both of same age
3/4 natural size After O Abel 1931

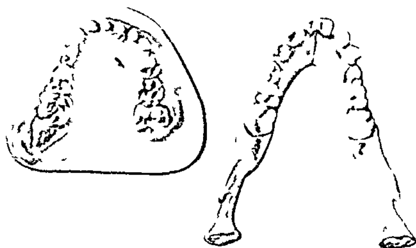


Fig 34 Lower jaws of Australopithecus (left) and common chimpanzee both of same age
5/7 natural size After O Abel 1931

The skull was sent to the South African anatomist and biologist Dr Raymond A Dart He studied the skull and published a brief description in which he proposed calling the newly discovered anthropoid the Australopithecus africanus

The discovery of the Taungs ape gave rise to many disputes Some scholars Othenio Abel (1931) for example described

it as the skull of the offspring of a fossil gorilla Others like Hans Weinert (1932) saw in it more similarity with the skull of a chimpanzee and based their opinion in particular on the convex profile and on the form of the nasal bones and orbits

A third group, among whom were Dart William Gregory and Milo Hellman (1938) thought that the Australopithecus bore greater resemblance to the Dryopithecus and to man The cusp pattern on the lower molars differs but little from that of the Dryopithecus

The supra orbital ridge of the skull is weakly developed, the canine teeth scarcely project above the others and the face in Gregory's opinion is astonishingly pre human

A fourth group of scholars like Wolfgang Abel drew attention to the signs of specialization that led the Australopithecus away from the human line For example the first permanent molars of the Australopithecus differ from human teeth in being broader in the posterior half

Now let us look at the size of the Australopithecus cranium as described by Dart V M Shapkin, a Soviet anthropologist employing the precise method he proposed (1937) obtained the figure of 420 c c which is not far from Wolfgang Abel s figure of 390 c c Dr Raymond Dart gave the volume of the cranium as 520 c c but this figure is undoubtedly an exaggeration Taking the age of the owner of the skull into consideration the possible volume of an adult Australopithecus cranium was taken as being 500 600 c c

The conception of the Australopithecus type was greatly enriched when another skull of a fossil ape was found in the Transvaal in 1936 It was found in a cave near the village of Sterkfontein not far from the town of Krugersdorp, 58 kilometres south west of Pretoria The skull is that of an adult specimen and is very similar to a chimpanzee



Fig 35 Skull of Paranthropus crassidens Broom
2/5 natural size After R Broom from H Ullrich 1953

skull except that the teeth are more like those of a human being. The skull is long in shape: the cranium is 145 mm long and 96 mm wide so that the cephalic index is low, i.e. 96×100/145=66.2 (ultradolichocephalic).

Dr Robert Broom, the South African palaeontologist who had been working for nearly half a century in South Africa on mammals and their evolution, studied the skull of the Sterkfontein fossil ape and announced it to be a new species, Australopithecus transvaalensis. The study of a lower third molar found at the same place, which was very big and resembled that of a man, compelled Broom to establish a new genus, the Plesianthropus, i.e. an ape closer to man. And so the Sterkfontein anthropoid was named the Plesianthropus transvaalensis.

Broom became deeply interested in African fossil apes and the problem of anthropogenesis; he devoted much time and effort to the search for further specimens. Between 1936 and 1947 his efforts resulted in 10 incomplete skulls, 150 isolated teeth and several skeletal bones of the Plesianthropus being found. In 1938 Broom had the good fortune to discover a wonderful fossil skull (fig. 35). The story of the skull is the following. A schoolboy from the village of Kromdraai dug the skull of an ape out of the hillside near his village, broke it to pieces and took the teeth to play with. Broom got wind of this by accident and, with the aid of the boy, who gave him the teeth, found some pieces of the skull *in situ*. The geological age of the skull apparently is Middle Quaternary.

When Broom put the pieces of the skull together he was amazed at their resemblance to a human being in the shape of the temporal bone, in the structure of the auditory canal (meatus acusticus internus), in the position of the occipital foramen nearer to the base of the skull than in living anthropoids. The dental arch was wide, the canines small and the teeth very similar to those of a human being.

On the conclusion of his investigations Broom gave the Kromdraai anthropoid the name of Paranthropus, an ape close to man. In 1939 some bones of the Paranthropus skeleton were found that greatly resembled the Plesianthropus. Both apes closely approximate the Australopithecus.

In 1948-1950 Broom made a number of new discoveries of South African anthropoids—the Paranthropus crassidens, massive toothed (fig. 36) and the Australopithecus prometheus, an ape knowing the use of fire (fig. 37). From this it is to be assumed that Africa must be rich in the remains of other still unknown apes (Nesturkh 1937, 1938; Yakimov 1950, 1951), especially as the English anthropologist L. Leakey in 1947 found the skull of the African Proconsul (mentioned above) in the



Fig 36 Paranthropus mandible
1—left lateral aspect 2—superior aspect
2/3 natural size After R Broom from H Ullrich 1953

Kavirondo area of East Africa the Proconsul has points of resemblance with the chimpanzee (Yakimov 1964 1965)

From what has been said we may draw the conclusion that most probably in Africa in the first half of the Quaternary or towards the end of the Tertiary Period several different species of highly developed anthropoid apes had taken form (Zubov 1964) They had a brain capacity of 500 600 c c or even more (with a weight of 40 50 kg) and jaws and teeth of typical anthropoid pattern but at the same time showing considerable proximity to human teeth

Some of the African fossil anthropoids even walked on two legs as can be seen from the shape and structure of the long bones and other parts of the skeleton that have been found for example the pelvis of the Australopithecus prometheus (1948) or the thigh bone and tibial of the Plesianthropus (1947) It is also possible that they used sticks and stones as weapons The Australopithecus lived in savannahs or arid semi desert regions (fig 38) and also killed animals for food hunting hares and baboons



Fig 37 Mandible of Australopithecus prometheus Dart *in situ* while being cleaned of breccia 5/8 natural size After R Dart 1948

South African scholars Dart for instance ascribe the



Fig 38 Australopithecus Reconstructed by W E Le Gros Clark 1952
After H Ullrich 1953

ability to use fire and speech to fossil anthropoids of the Australopithecus prometheus type There are, however, no facts to support these assumptions (Königswald 1959) Attempts to present the South African anthropoids as the oldest hominids are without any foundation There is also insufficient evidence to show that these anthropoids were the ancestors of the whole human race or part of it * The same applies to the Oreopithecus, remains of which were found in Italy, in the Bamboli Hill in Tuscany Teeth jaws and fragments of the forearm were found in Middle Miocene and Early Pliocene strata These bone fragments and the complete skeleton recently found show that the Oreopithecus bamboli very closely approximated the anthropoids (Hurzeler 1954) In 1958, near the village of Bacinello in the same region an almost complete skeleton of an Oreopithecus was found at a depth of almost 200 metres in a seam of lignite belonging to the Upper Miocene This is undoubtedly one of the greatest discoveries ever made in the sphere of the palaeontology of man

The Australopithecus and Oreopithecus must be at best regarded as nature s unsuccessful attempts for they are apes that have become extinct Man derived from one of the South Asian forms of ape that developed from the Early Pliocene anthropoid apes of the Ramapithecus type

The discovery of the Australopithecus group of South African anthropoids (fig 40) caused many scholars to ponder anew over

---

* In recent years a number of finds have been made in Olduvai Gorge (Tanzania) by Dr L B Leakey and his wife these finds consisted of the skeletal remains of anthropoid apes the Zinjanthropus (fig 39) and the Prezinjanthropus (Reshetov 1962 1964) the age of which is estimated at be

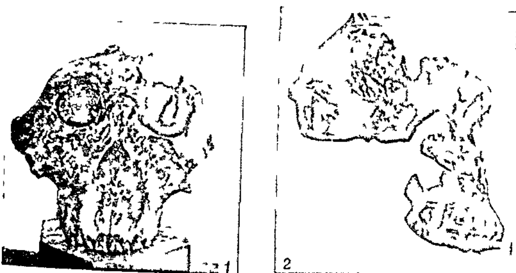


Fig 39 Skull of the Zinjanthropus boisei (frontal and side view) About 1/4 natural size After L B Leakey 1959

the possible geographical site of the original habitat of man's ancestors man's birthplace Dart proclaimed South Africa the cradle of mankind and his opinion was supported by Broom (1946) and Keith (1950)

The idea of Africa as the probable cradle of the human race is not a new one Charles Darwin as long ago as 1871 spoke of the African continent as the possible place where man first emerged He referred to the very important fact that the gorilla

---

tween one and two million years The skull of the Zinjanthropus with its clearly defined sagittal and occipital ridges was at first mistaken for that of man's ancestor but Leakey himself later rejected this idea (Nesturkh and Pozharitskaya 1965)

Then Leakey and other African palaeontologists who had studied the bones of the left foot of an adult Prezinjanthropus and part of the skeleton of a young individual decided that this was one of the forms of the earliest man In accordance with this the name was changed to *Homo habilis* (Leakey Tobias and Napier 1964)

In support of this view it was shown that the Prezinjanthropus judging by the signs of a longitudinal arch in the foot walked in the erect position Among small stones found in the vicinity were some that had been chipped and from this the conclusion was drawn that these were the most primitive man made tools However orthograde locomotion had already been recognised in the Australopithecus and the so-called tools were far too primitive and might well have been the result of natural conditions or the accidental work of some other anthropoids using stones as natural hammers to obtain food (Yakimov 1965)

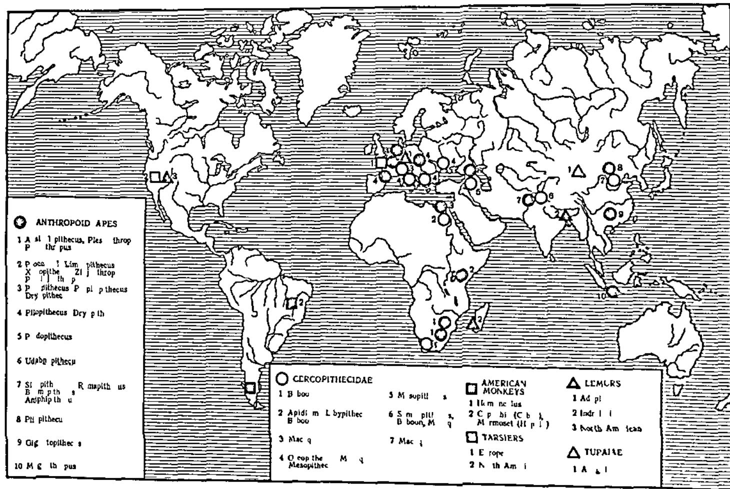


Fig. 10 Sites where fossil Primates have been discovered

and chimpanzee live in Africa and they are man s nearest relatives We know, wrote Darwin that modern mammals, living within the bounds of an extensive area, are phylogenically related to extinct forms that lived in the same area We must remember, however, that in North East Africa (in Egypt) the remains of the Parapithecus and Propliopithecus the common ancestors of the living anthropoids have been found It would seem more logical therefore to place man s ancestral home in North East rather than in South Africa

The sum total of other data however attract the attention of scientists to the southern part of Asia Fossil remains of anthropoid and lower catarrhine monkeys have been found in the Siwalik Hills in Northern India since 1879 the tooth of a Pliopithecus posthumus was found in Mongolia in 1924 by Max Schlosser who called the ape the forefather of man the Udabnopithecus serves to link up the South Asian fossil anthropoids with the Pliopitheci and Dryopitheci of Europe

The very long and fairly broad belt which has yielded many remains of fossil apes stretched in the Miocene and Pliocene from the European shores of the Atlantic Ocean in a direction south east by south as far as the Malay Archipelago (with Java as its centre) Some scholars have placed man's ancestral home in extensive areas of Central and South Asia within the above limits it is very probable that part of the territory of South East Asia should also be added Here we may recall the theories of the Russian scholar, P P Sushkin (1928) and the Osborn hypothesis (1933) It is possible that the habitat of primitive man also included part of North East Africa (Nesturkh, 1964)

Very indicative is the fact that many remains of primitive man and implements made by him have been found in South East Asia We do not consider the hypothesis of the South African origin of Pithecanthropus and Sinanthropus to be sufficiently well founded it is difficult, even impossible to accept the idea of the first men covering a distance of almost 15 000 km in a short period the journey from South Africa would have to follow the strongly indented coasts of the Indian Ocean and across dry land as far as Java or eastward through South Asia as far as the habitat of Sinanthropus near Peking

Hypotheses on man s origin in North Asia have also been propounded as tropical forests covered this area in the Tertiary Period According to the Wilser (1905) hypothesis the influence of the advancing cold front made man s ancestors move farther and farther south down the Asian continent where the transition from ape to man took place in one of those regions There

is however no evidence in the palaeontology of the Asian Primates so that the hypothesis lacks conviction

There is also little chance of finding man's first habitat in Europe which is nothing more than a peninsula of the Afreurasian continent Absolutely beyond the bounds of probability is the search for the first man in Australia (Otto Schoetensack 1908) with its archaic world of marsupials equally improbable is Florentino Ameghino's South American hypothesis (1931), since the time man first reached that continent from Asia is probably no more than 25 000 or 30 000 years ago

It is quite obvious that the ape's line of evolution was closely connected with the gigantic tectonic processes that transformed the surface of the Earth in the Miocene and Pliocene It was then that the great mountain folds were formed, the climate changed from wet tropical to subtropical and temperate, even cold in places and many regions grew drier the trees grew scantier and huge forests disappeared altogether Part of the fauna must have perished part adapted itself to the new conditions and part migrated Traces of the Neogene (Upper Tertiary) migration of mammals are to be seen in the numerous Asian animals—fossil horses, elephants, ostriches monkeys—that found their way to Europe and Africa This migrating fauna has been given the name Pikermi fauna from a place in Greece that served them as a halting place during migration and is very rich in bone remains In living Africa fauna there is a considerable mixture of Pikermi fauna

Some of the apes, like Mesopithecus pentelici (a monkey intermediate between a marmoset and a gibbon found near Pentelicon, Athens) migrated farther while others, like the Udabnopithecus garejiensis died out and became extinct on the way a third group remaining in Asia developed into the Pleistocene Asian apes and were the ancestors of the modern apes and of man In the majority of cases these latter extinct apes were compelled to take to a part arboreal part ground way of life some of them, such as the baboons kept to the ground completely Man's ancestors had to adapt themselves to orthograde locomotion on the ground that differed from the pronograde locomotion of the baboons—they walked on two legs and not on four The conditions for and the possibility of the emergence of man are to be found first and foremost in the peculiarities of structure and ecology of the Upper Tertiary fossil apes (Gremyatsky 1961) As man too, is an ape like catarrhine Primate he could not have descended from the American monkeys that in many respects differ sharply from the Old World monkeys Take for example the position of the head for many of the highly developed ring tailed types head downwards is the

normal attitude To expect any of the Cebidae to become bipedal and at the same time reduce the external part of the tail to assume it possible for them to develop an opposable thumb and a highly complex brain cortex to expect them to develop the entire group of prerequisites necessary for the ape to become man is quite out of the question The Hapalidae are no more suitable Hypotheses that require the descent of man from the *American monkeys do not hold water*

It will be sufficient to point to the considerable anatomic dissimilarities between the New and Old World monkeys or apes and, consequently between them and man The American monkeys have three premolars instead of two the external acoustic duct is short and not long the laryngeal sacs are not derived from Morgagni s ventricles

Still less admissible is the idea that man has descended from a Primate of a much lower anatomical type, such as the tarsiers or lemurs Nevertheless such hypotheses are met with in scientific literature although they are a direct contradiction of Darwinism *The next chapter will be devoted to the struggle against* anti Darwinist hypotheses of anthropogenesis

C H A P T E R T H R E E

CRITICISM OF THE LATER HYPOTHESES CONCERNING THE ORIGIN OF MAN

1 RELIGIOUS EXPLANATIONS OF ANTHROPOGENESIS

From the foregoing it follows that Darwin s theory of anthropogenesis in the part dealing with the descent of man and with his nearer ancestors on Earth is fully confirmed by modern biology a science which is delving ever deeper into the evolution of the animal kingdom and providing a clearer picture of the factors determining the development of organisms

Darwinism struck a crushing blow at religion with its false teleological conceptions of an eternally predetermined harmony in nature or of the development of living and lifeless nature in accordance with the divine plan of creation Even today, there are many people whose minds are filled with the idea that the changes taking place in the world have no connection with each other

Metaphysically thinking people believe that the world remains unchanged and is directed by the divine being that created it The idealist metaphysical philosophy the basis of religion, is the diametrical opposite of dialectical materialism a genuinely scientific philosophy The religious concept of the world prevents an understanding of the emergence of new qualities and does not admit of the transition from quantity to quality The metaphysicists therefore deny the descent of man from the apes

Many anthropologists in the West do not connect the problem of anthropogenesis with the leading role played by work *It is* precisely this factor that takes first place in the Marxist explanation of the qualitatively specific process of the formation of man

The capitalist system prevents many bourgeois scientists from correctly understanding the processes of development in nature and society as being effected dialectically it frequently dictates conclusions that are in direct contradiction to the facts from which they were drawn Alfred Wallace (1823 1913) the

eminent British biologist and evolutionist is a singular representative of this class of scientists

He could not admit that the human body developed from that of an ancestor resembling an ape and that man's big brain could have developed from an ape brain by means of such evolutionary factors as mutation and natural selection

In particular Wallace did not agree that it was possible for the human psyche to have developed on the basis of the higher nervous activity of an animal   We possess intellectual and moral faculties which could not have been so developed, but must have had another origin and for this origin we can only find an adequate cause in the unseen universe of spirit * In connection with this we may recall that Linnaeus recognized the great similarity between man and the apes but declared that the human soul was a particle of the divine spirit

Wallace speaks as a true representative of metaphysics He merely stated openly that which many other evolutionists of his time remained silent about In his efforts to link up evolution as closely as possible with religion he said that the development of the higher intelligence in man had been guided by the law of natural selection for a more noble aim—apparently in order that man as the most highly developed animal could think about God!

Another fallacious theory opposed to Darwinism was that the structure of the ape evolved from that of man the prototype of all animals Johann Ranke (1897) for example said that the highest type of skull formation that of man, is the common starting point for the development of the skulls of the whole family of mammals

A similar viewpoint was developed later by Johann Kollmann (1906), who thought that the common ancestor of man and the anthropoid apes had a more highly developed skull round in shape as distinct from the low skulls of the modern apes Kollmann based his ideas on the fact that the skull of the newborn ape has a shape more resembling that of an adult man than of an adult ape

The theories of Ranke and Kollmann have no basis because the skull in the period of uterine development, is rounder and higher in other mammals and not only in apes the conclusion that the mammals are derived from man obviously does not conform to the facts of palaeontology and other branches of biology

Some twentieth century authors like E Dacque (1935) and Otto Kleinschmidt (1931) have attempted, under the guise of

---

* Alfred Russel Wallace *Darwinism* London 1898 p 478

science to resuscitate Kollmann s ideas Dacqué even tried to reconcile scientific data on the origin of man with the Biblical myth of the creation of the first man

With regard to Kleinschmidt he erroneously regards all fossil men and the Australopitheci as being races of modern mankind, he furthermore takes the line of development of other anthro poids far from the human line and links up the apes with a set of types that are alien to man

The anti evolutionist M Westenhofer (1935), tried to show that man had descended directly from the lower mammals, by passing the ape stage He tried to find support for his hypothe sis in the fact that man's kidneys have a complicated structure and consist of almost a dozen renal pyramids This is indeed one of the greatest structural differences that distinguishes man from the apes monkeys and other Primates

With regard to this feature in the anthropoid apes it is known that in certain individuals among the chimpanzees as many as seven pyramids have been counted the gorilla has one and the gibbon up to four in the orangutan the four pyramids grow together and open into the renal duct by means of a common nipple The marmosets macaques baboons and other Certopi theci of the Old World have one pyramid each The New World monkeys also have kidneys with one pyramid although in some of them it is of complex form having grown out of four to six pyramids

To refute Westenhofer s hypothesis it is sufficient to mention the great variation in the number of renal pyramids in man— from three to twenty The kidney is clearly divided in the foetus stage The complex pyramidal structure is also found in mon keys Although the division of the kidneys is very pronounced in man their evolution from the anthropoid type can be shown

Westenhofer a follower of Rudolf Virchow a German pathol ogist who opposed Darwin s theory and rejected the view of the Pithecanthropus as the earliest man is also a fierce anti Darwinist in his concepts of anthropogenesis Westenhofer adopts the position that the essence of the process of anthropo genesis is unknowable and prefers the poetic intuitive spirit to scientific knowledge (Gremyatsky 1932, pp 182 191, 1937 pp 136 137)

The mechanical fusing of science and religion of evolution and miracles in explaining anthropogenesis shows how helpless reactionary biologists are in their attempts to reconcile natural science and religion, although such attempts have been made on many occasions in the past and are still being made today

The reactionary scientist Franz Koch (1929) for example says that Darwinism is a problem in pure science that is a

problem of the outside world and has nothing whatever to do with problems of our inner world with questions of religion or philosophical conviction Only ignorance or intolerance can unreservedly tie up Darwinism with materialism or atheism

It was only in 1957 that S L Sobol published Charles Darwin s autobiography in full in this book the great scientist makes his materialist and atheistic views quite clear Darwin s theory shows that Koch had better look for ignorance and intolerance in himself and in others of his ilk and not in the camp of materialism

Statements similar to Koch s have been made by H Weinert (1932), and B Bavink (1933) who were of the opinion that the question of the origin of man has nothing to do with morals and religion

All this however is nothing more than an attempt to unite two antipodal world conceptions, the idealist and materialist conceptions Science and religion are incompatible Religion is based on belief in God, the creator of the universe The scientific method is based on knowledge of nature and society on the study of their laws and development

The bourgeoisie cultivates religion Reactionary bourgeois scientists, fulfilling the demands of the ruling class lend their aid to the clergy in defending religion from the blows dealt it by science Lenin pointed out on many occasions that the exploiting classes need the social functions of religion to retain their supremacy

The question of the origin of man is not one of abstract science that gives rise to purely theoretical disputes inside the scientist s study The battles fought around this question on the contrary, are skirmishes in the class struggle Suffice it to recall the Scopes Trial in America

In 1925, in Dayton, Tennessee a young teacher John Scopes was arraigned and tried for having in contravention of the law on the subject, told the school children about Darwin s theories and his hypothesis of the descent of man from an ape

In at least fifteen of the United States of America there are state laws forbidding the teaching of evolutionary theories On March 23 1925 the Governor of the State of Tennessee endorsed the following law Be it enacted by the General Assembly of the State of Tennessee that it shall be unlawful for any teacher in any of the universities normal and all other public schools of the State which are supported in whole or in part by the public school funds of the State to teach any theory that denies the story of the Divine creation of man as taught in the Bible, and to teach instead that man has descended from a lower order of animals The law was again discussed on its

expiration by the General Assembly of the State (1931) and, by the decision of a majority of the members was prolonged

The Scopes Trial took place before a huge crowd, many visitors being present as well as local citizens The chief prosecuting counsel was William Jennings Bryan a former Secretary of State and presidential nominee he held the Bible in his hands as the "foundation of life"

The Bible was not much help to him in his attempts to answer the sarcastic questions of Scopes counsel—about the whale that is supposed to have swallowed Jonah about Joshua who ordered the sun to stand still and others—Bryan publicly disclosed his complete ignorance of natural science and history and incidentally of the Bible itself

In the words of Bernard Shaw the eminent British man of letters the Monkey Trial had made the American continent the laughing stock of the civilized world Despite everything the class court of the bourgeoisie found Scopes guilty and fined him a hundred dollars

Religion continues to be the faithful ally of capitalism The capitalist states give every support to religion and maintain metaphysical philosophy as a means of ensuring their domination The world that is building socialism and communism bases itself on the philosophy of dialectical materialism an implacable enemy of religion

Dialectical and historical materialism is a powerful instrument for the transformation of human society with the building of socialism and then of communism the social and economic base is being fundamentally changed the world outlook of the working people is undergoing a profound change and they are freeing themselves from the shackles of religion and from the old metaphysical idealist outlook on the world The dissemination of a correct understanding of natural phenomena and of society the process of anthropogenesis in particular will accelerate the change in philosophy

2 THE TARSIER HYPOTHESIS

Attempts have been made by some scientists to replace the conception put forward by Darwin and Engels that man has developed from a fossil anthropoid ape by ideas of his descent from other Primates One of them is the English biologist and anatomist, Frederick Wood Jones who propounded a detailed hypothesis of the origin of man directly from an ancient Lower Tertiary tarsier

The only living representatives of the tarsiers are tiny animals (fig 41) living in the East Indies Malaya area where they are a

typical feature of the local fauna Outwardly the tarsiers resemble the jerboa They have the huge eyes typical of nocturnal animals, very long hind and very short fore limbs and a long tail that they use not only as a rudder and counterbalance when leaping nimbly from branch to branch but also as a support when they are resting The tarsier moves about in a more or less upright position with the aid of its hind limbs The calcaneus and navicular bones of the foot are extremely long from which it gets its name of tarsier



Fig 41 Tarsius spectrum Storr After E Boulenger 1936

The tarsier hypothesis got its name from these peculiarities According to Wood Jones the tarsier bears more resemblance to man than man does to the anthropoids He maintains that the tarsier s upright locomotion is the starting point for the development of the erect position in man s ancestors

The only grain of truth in this contention is that the tarsiers bear more resemblance to monkeys than the lemurs do, and there are many scholars who believe that the Old and New World tarsiers were the forerunners of the respective groups of monkeys They *have for example, a partition between the* orbital and temporal fossae while the lemurs have a broad penetrating orifice surrounded by a bone ring (Hill, 1955)

Other features show that the tarsier is more primitive than the lemurs and approximates more closely to the Insectivora some of these are the dental system (an anterior cusp on the lower molars the paraconid that has been absent in other Primates since the early Tertiary Period) and a big gut of a very simple form The place of the tarsiers in the phylogeny of the Primates is therefore a rather complicated question

There are two or three species of tarsiers living today They are the specialized descendants of an extensive group that lived over large areas of Europe, Asia and North America in the early epochs of the Tertiary Period Many of the tarsiers living at the very beginning of the Tertiary Period in the Palaeocene were closer to the lemurs in the structure of the body, they had common ancestors in the insect eating mammals (Insectivora) of the Upper Cretaceous Period Some of the primitive tarsiers of the Eocene Epoch were the ancestors of the Old and New World monkeys (Gremyatsky 1955) It was from the Old World group of monkeys that man s closest ancestors in the shape of bipedal ground living, highly developed apes took form in the last epoch of the Tertiary Period From this fact however we must not draw the conclusion that man evolved directly from the tarsiers as Wood Jones asserts

Wood Jones first put forward his hypothesis in 1916 The hypothesis, however, did not gain support among scholars In 1929 Wood Jones' second monograph appeared in which he mustered the whole arsenal of his proofs of man's descent from the tarsiers and not from the monkeys In this monograph Wood Jones made a detailed analysis of the specific nature of the tarsier s structure and compared it with that of man and other Primates He tried to show in particular that all the similarities between man and the apes are the result of parallel development and not of blood relationship as the majority of anthropologists and other scientists believe He finds that the apes approximate more closely to the lower monkeys than to man

An important argument put forward by Wood Jones is that the proportions of the human body (short arms and long legs) differ from those that are typical of all apes (long arms and short legs) while the proportions of the tarsier s body are supposedly more reminiscent of man To these Jones adds the peculiarities of the hairy coat (in particular the distribution of the hairs on the body) the shortened face section of the skull absence of bones in the penis and clitoris the peculiar form and structure of the external reproductive organs of the female and other apparent similarities with man

Wood Jones contends that some primitive features of the human body point to a very distant stage of evolution of those mammals that served him as ancestors these are the peculiar structure of the collar bone and certain muscles that are to be found apart from man only in such oviparous mammals as the platypus the structure of man s hands apparently recalls such ancient animals as the amphibians of the Carboniferous Period of the Palaeozoic

Jones hypothesis was sharply criticized in his own country and abroad Some of the data produced by Wood Jones are not in accordance with the facts and others permit of a different explanation Wood Jones for example, lays great stress on the shape of the roots of human premolars It is common knowledge that human premolars have a single instead of a double root as is usual for catarrhine monkeys The roots of the premolars in the latter are placed side by side along the dental arch where as when a human premolar has two roots they are placed one on the cheek side of the tooth and one on the tongue side

The upper premolars of catarrhine monkeys normally have three roots while those of man have one or two or a root that is not fully divided into two in the latter case the root is in the cheek tongue position as Wood Jones particularly stresses He grants that the position of the roots of the upper premolars in man could be evolved from the dental system of the great apes because two of the three possessed by the latter are in the cheek tongue position But still the lower premolars in man have not been satisfactorily explained because, Wood Jones maintains the catarrhine monkeys have never had lower premolars with double or with triple roots in the cheek tongue position such as are sometimes found in man

In this case Jones is mistaken because this arrangement of *roots has been noted in some of the higher catarrhine monkeys*

Lower premolars with triple roots in a chimpanzee have been described in scientific literature M Ch Bennejeant (1936) pub lished a description and photographs of the lower jaw of a chimpanzee with such premolars

Franz Weidenreich (1937) studied the structure of the pre molars and their roots in the Sinanthropus and stated categor ically that they are a development of the type of premolar found in fossil anthropoid apes Gregory (1934) explains the changes in the position of the roots of man s premolars as being *due to the shortening of the jaw in the course of anthropo genesis*

The study of the teeth of people and anthropoid apes at the Moscow Institute and Museum of Anthropology showed me the possibility of still another explanation the anterior root of the three found in man s ancestors has been lost and the remaining two are arranged across the dental arch This possibility also contradicts the Jones hypothesis

There are many other facts that go to disprove the tarsier hypothesis Contrary to Wood Jones assertion the blood of the *tarsier is not related to that of man* *Between the blood of man* and that of the chimpanzee and other apes great similarity even identity has been noted Frederick Tilney (1928) stated in a

report on the precipitation reaction that the blood of the tarsier is closer to that of man the orangutan and the gibbon than to that of the macaque and the American monkeys This was an obvious error according to data given by Le Gros Clark (1931) experiments with the precipitation tests for their similarity with human blood tarsier and loris blood gave negative results—there was no precipitation and no clouding or rings

Wood Jones lists the following points of similarity between the lower catarrhine monkeys and the anthropoids that distinguish them from man

1) the nasal bones grow together at an early age

2) the frontal and temporal bones are closer especially in the gorilla and chimpanzee *

3) the upper premolars have three roots,

4) there are noticeable differences in the size of the canines of the two sexes

5) there is a long bony outer auditory canal (only that of the orangutan is short),

6) in all these monkeys only two main arteries branch off from the arch of the aorta (in the gorilla and the chimpanzee the branched form typical for man is also found)

7) there is a superficial brachial artery

8) in the hind limbs there is a big saphenous artery

9) there are highly developed air sacs (these are not developed in the majority of the gibbons)

10) the majority of kidneys consist of one pyramid

11) the Simian sulcus is highly developed in the temporal occipital region of the cerebral cortex

To these could have been added the fact that the chimpanzee and orangutan for example have (according to Charles Sonntag, 1923) a much less developed system of lymphatic glands than man the chimpanzee has 21 the orangutan 20 and man 48 groups There is still another difference in the vascular system that may be mentioned When the subclavian artery in man enters the upper extremity it is called the axillary and goes

* The junction of the frontal and temporal bones by means of a suture of some length is called the frontal temporal pterion Another type of pterion is typical of the lemurs and tarsiers the American monkeys gibbons the orangutan and man In which the chief contact is between the wing of the parietal bone and the temporal bone—this is the alisphenoid parietal pterion which has the form of the letter H lying on its side and not standing up right as is the case with the frontal temporal junction in this region (in many American monkeys the zygomatic bones also form part of the pterion so that it is zygomatic alisphenoid temporal) Some scholars connect the character of the pterion area with the development of the temporal lobe in Primates as being the region of the cerebral hemispheres that is typical for them In any case the shape of the pterion characterizes the different groups of Primates and is useful in systematics

deeper into the shoulder than the biggest nerve the median The lower monkeys and apes have an axillary artery that is superior to the nerve This is explained in the following way in the shoulder of the embryo two blood vessels are formed one above and the other deeper than the median nerve As the human foetus develops the superior artery atrophies and as the monkey develops the inferior artery atrophies

These points of similarity between the lower monkeys and the apes however fall far short of the common structural features that were established by Thomas Huxley for man and the apes and which were briefly expressed in his well known thesis on their great similarity Huxley drew the conclusion that the apes are more similar to man than to the lower monkeys He said Thus whatever system of organs be studied the comparison of their modifications in the ape series leads to one and the same result—that the structural differences which separate Man from the Gorilla and the Chimpanzee are not so great as those which separate the Gorilla from the lower apes' *

The lower catarrhine monkeys are very specialized animals they possess ischial callosities and cheek pouches the four cusps on their molars are joined in pairs by typical transverse ridges The monkeys have a more primitive brain structure and the vascular system of the brain is differently constructed from that of man and the apes In the so called monkey type there is only one anterior cerebral artery that outwardly resembles a basilar artery (a cerebri basilaris) Man and the anthropoid apes like the majority of mammals have two anterior cerebral arteries joined by an anterior communicating artery (B K Gindtse and A M Fedotova 1932 pp 107 112) The points of greater similarity between the lower and higher apes are explained by their common ancestry The numerous points of similarity between the anthropoid apes and man constitute one of the best proofs that man descended from a species of fossil anthropoid ape

The facts cited above confirm Darwin s simian hypothesis and disprove the tarsier hypothesis proposed by Wood Jones The tarsier s shortened face is to a great extent to be explained by the powerful development of the organ of vision and the reduced olfactory organ The proportion of the tarsier s extremities are less similar to those of man than man s are to those of the lemur or monkey The tarsier s long tail with its many functions including that of catapulting it from a sitting position does not favour the tarsier hypothesis The tarsier is no bigger than a rat so that in size it is far removed from the apes Among

* Thomas Huxley *Evidence as to Man s Place in Nature* London 1863 p 103

the fossil forms of the tarsier known to science there are no middle sized or big forms to say nothing of giant tarsiers

Another fact disproving Wood Jones theory is that the tarsier is not a gregarious animal They live either alone or in pairs and are not found in herds such as are typical for many lemurs and almost all monkeys This is a very important fact for man is, first and foremost a social being who produces tools and uses them

The very significant objections raised to the tarsier hypothe sis of anthropogenesis propounded by Wood Jones and its obvious contradiction of many facts of comparative anatomy primatology palaeontology and anthropology lead us to the conclusion that this hypothesis is completely unfounded (cf Roginsky 1948)

3 SOME SIMIAN HYPOTHESES

A number of scholars (Karl Vogt Florentino Ameghino Giu seppe Sera) have tried to show that man descended from the American monkeys Let us examine the platyrrhinian hypothe sis of the South American scholar Ameghino He discovered the remains of skulls of fossil Primates and other mammals includ ing those of ancient man in Miocene and higher strata in South America On the basis of his study of these remains Ameghino drew up a new genealogy for man in which he included among man s ancestors some of the fossil animals he had discovered

A critical study of the skulls and bones from Ameghino s collection by other scientists Hans Bluntschli in particular (1913) led to quite different results Some of the remains that Ameghino had placed among the Primates proved to belong to other mammals while the true representatives of fossil Primates such as the Patagonian homunculus did not differ substantially from some modern American monkeys Ameghino s hypothesis was completely refuted although in other spheres of South American palaeontology Ameghino s works proved of great value

The finding of the Hesperopithecus must also be placed among similar discoveries by certain American scholars The one and only tooth of the Hesperopithecus was found in 1922 by Harold Cook in the Lower Pliocene strata of Wyoming (U S A) The find created a sensation in the scientific world such prominent American palaeontologists as Henry Osborn William Gregory and Milo Hellman defined the tooth as be longing to a fossil anthropoid ape the first discovered on the American continent Far reaching conjectures on the relation ships and the migrations of the Hesperopithecus cooki appeared

in the press One of them for example was an article by a well known British biologist J Elliot Smith, in an English magazine on the cover of which were depicted a male and female Hesperopithecus who were called primitive members of the human family in the article

A thoroughgoing further examination of the tooth (Gregory 1927) and fresh finds showed that not an ape but a fossil form of the peccary the North American pig of the genus Prosthenops had been discovered

The reactionary German scientist Franz Koch whom we have already mentioned made original use of the discovery of the Hesperopithecus In a monograph (1929 S 164 Karte X) he included a curious genealogy in which the Hesperopithecus was shown as an ancestor of modern man Since Koch s monograph gave the central place to the North European or Nordic race as being the highest type of human being he had included that fossil North American pig amongst the ancestors of his Nordic man

There can be no doubt that extreme caution must be applied to the examination of many theories and hypotheses of anthropogenesis that have been offered in such profusion by reactionary bourgeois scholars Of course the possibility of finding the tooth of an anthropoid ape in North America is in itself extremely remote as it seems that such apes have never existed there Apart from that mammalogists know that the molars of apes and swine at times bear close resemblance to each other both in shape and structure *

The American monkeys therefore are not among man s ancestors It is believed that the aboriginal inhabitants of America arrived there in relatively recent times no more than 25 000 years ago Their ancestors most likely made their way there across the isthmus that later became the Behring Strait after the melting of the glaciers The Red Indians are an ancient branch of the Mongoloid race that first developed in Asia thousands of years before the Europeans

Certain reactionary bourgeois scientists apparently tried to create plausible proofs of the Indians descent from a local anthropoid of the Hesperopithecus type This would be of particular value to the champions of polygenesis—the descent of man from a number of different ultimate ancestors that is from different species of apes In the conception of such anthropologists

---

* The eminent Austrian palaeontologist Othenio Abel (1931) analysing the specific features of the dental system in Primates even places human teeth among the porcine (suid) type for which rounded conic cusps on the grinding surface of the molars are typical—i e they are bunodonts

as Theodor Arldt and Giuseppe Sergi, the human race is not a single species but consists of several species or even genera. Sergi (1911) for example, regards the main human races as genera that include eleven different species and more than forty smaller systematic groups.

It has, however long been known that the human races, despite their great diversity are closely related. This can be seen even from the close resemblance they bear to each other. Europeoids may marry Negroes, Mongols and Hottentots; Japanese marry Malays and Polynesians, Negroes marry Mongols. The offspring of such marriages are normal and healthy children who, in their turn are capable of further propagation. Such facts are one of the most important proofs of the fallacy of polygenesis. The human races so approximate each other that up to the present day no substantial differences between them have been found such as the structure of the brain, the properties of the blood or the functioning of the glands of internal secretion. This proves the correctness of Darwin's theory of monogenesis according to which mankind descended from one species of anthropoid ape and not from several species.

The polygenesists gather together all sorts of scientific and unscientific material for the construction of their race theories. Their hypotheses serve to justify every kind of oppression of the working people of their own and the colonial countries. An outstanding representative of the racists and polygenesists was the reactionary German anthropologist Herman Klaatsch (1922) who expressed the opinion that modern science cannot give its support to that superfluous love of mankind that wants to regard all the lower human races as our brothers and sisters.

A strange attitude is reflected in the works of the reactionary French anthropologist Georges Montandon (1933) who developed and applied to man the hypotheses of the Italian biologist Daniel Rosa (1918) on the origin and development of life on Earth. Rosa says that life began simultaneously over the entire surface of the Earth. It consisted of innumerable minute unicellular organisms of the most primitive organization but all belonging to one and the same species. The present day big and small divisions of the animal kingdom are of independent origin. Rosa furthermore assumes that living beings appearing in different parts of the world could, by independent development, originate very similar organisms on the different continents.

The extremes to which Rosa goes in his postulates can be seen from his statement that even two men from the same village may have nothing in common not only from the time of man's appearance, but even from the moment life began to develop on Earth.

Montandon, in applying Rosa's hypothesis to man said that people appeared on the continents independently of each other and, consequently, are not connected with each other by any bonds of relationship. Montandon even tried to prove that in America also man could have originated from an American anthropoid ape.

In his search for confirmation of his hypothesis Montandon *came across the report of an interesting adventure related by* the geologist, Francis de Loys. It occurred in South America in 1920. When they were journeying through an extensive tropical forest on the borders of Venezuela and Ecuador de Loys and his companions were attacked by two huge monkeys.

De Loys describes the event as having taken place on the bank of a river. Hearing a loud noise the travellers ran out of their camp. Two rather big monkeys screaming and breaking branches that got in their way came running towards the camp. The travellers allowed them to get close and then fired and killed one of them, a female (fig. 42). The other monkey was wounded but fled and hid in the dense forest (de Loys believed it to be a male). The dead monkey was placed on a box and photographed. Although de Loys maintains that the monkey



Fig. 42. Ameranthropoides loysi Montandon. After F. de Loys, 1931

was tailless it cannot be seen from the photograph whether this is true or not Apart from that it is difficult to believe from the photograph that the female was 160 cm tall as he asserted

De Loys took the skull lower jaw and skin with him Unfortunately the skin got lost on the long and difficult expedition as did also the lower jaw (which was supposed to have contained 16 teeth and was kept by de Loys as head of the expedition) The skull got into the hands of the cook who kept salt in it through the action of the salt in the damp climate the skull fell to pieces and was thrown away And so the only document left was the photograph of the monkey and the description given by de Loys

Montandon rescued de Loys story from the limbo to use as proof of the truth of the ologenesis hypothesis that treats of the independent origin of man in America He maintained that the female killed by the expedition was a real American anthropoid ape the big dimensions of the body the absence of a tail and the human features of the face all served Montandon as positive argumentation

After a communication made by Montandon to the Paris Academy articles on the Ameranthropoides loysi appeared in several journals An article by de Loys was also published in support of the ologenesis hypothesis A number of critical articles also appeared It all resulted in the Ameranthropoid being defined as nothing more than a big spider monkey (Ateles) perhaps even a representative of a new species of that animal The female killed had only four fingers on each hand and the thumb was atrophied like that of the spider monkey its face also resembled that of the latter animal The nose partition is broad like that of most American monkeys The body and the limbs are slender Most likely the animal had a long prehensile tail that must have been hidden behind the box According to Montandon and de Loys the height when seated was about 70 cm which is not much more than the height of the spider monkey when seated (up to 65 cm) (Nesturkh 1932)

From the sum of evidence we must conclude that the ologenesis hypothesis suffered a further defeat in this case Other facts cited by Montandon in support of ologenesis can be given other explanations (Gremyatsky 1932 and 1934)

Rosa s ologenesis hypothesis is based on the mechanistic assumption that the spontaneous development of species can take place only by dichotomy or division into two branches the earlier and later Of these the earlier according to Rosa is not usually divided any further and in the end becomes extinct the

later has chances of further development again by dichotomy and progresses evolves

Dichotomy, however is an absolutely arbitrary concept one species may serve to originate a large number of subspecies or varieties and not merely two Of the eight modern races that Montandon lists the European Mongol and Negro races are in his opinion the late comers that is they are capable of further evolution and perfection All other races belong to the earlier branches and he says are doomed to extinction Montandon s hypothesis is fundamentally unacceptable to progressive scien tists

The next group of anthropogenetic hypotheses consists of those that treat of the descent of man from a group of Old World monkeys these are known as catarrhine simian hypoth eses to distinguish them from the platyrrhine There are very few biologists who claim that man is descended from the group of lower monkeys with their quadrupedal or pronograde means of locomotion tails of varying lengths cheek pouches and ischial callosities although quite recently the Proconsul has been includ ed among man s ancestors

The authors of simian hypotheses usually begin an analysis of the living anthropoid apes to decide which of them has the most significant signs of relationship with man This approach has provided gibbonoid orangoid gorilloid and chimpanzoid hypotheses as well as those that are a combination of several of these

Supporters of the gibbonoid hypothesis for example take as their starting point the fact that the Propliopithecus a species that apparently had gibbonoid features produced the Pliopithecus and through it the gibbons the Propliopithecus however was the common ancestor of the other anthropoids as well and therefore of man (Gregory 1933) The idea of the gibbonoid phylogenetic connections of man has also been propounded by the palaeontologist Guy Pilgrim (1925) and the anthropologist Hans Werth (1928)

Man s bipedal method of locomotion however developed under circumstances differing from those in which the gibbon developed The latter with his long arms does not move in the upright position on account of his terrestrial way of life but because he is arboreal and brachiating habits have given his body its upright position Man did not pass through the stage of superspecialization like the gibbon such a stage would have had a more pronounced effect on the proportions of his limbs in the uterine period of development and in later periods of his life

Supporters of the gibbonoid hypothesis (among whom in

particular, are some representatives of the Johns Hopkins University school of anatomists in the U S A) point to the fact that the gibbon more than other apes, resembles man in certain of its features—the position of the internal organs the thorax with a dorso ventral diameter that is less than the transverse diameter and a very wide and short sternum, strongly developed great toes and thumbs the smooth outer surface of the cranium, the shape of the molars and the structure of the lower jaw which in the syndactylian gibbons or siamangs has a comparatively well developed chin with an initial chin ridge (protuberantia mentalis)

There are however such specific features of the gibbons as the small size of the body the more primitive brain the absence of frontal cavities, the free central bone in the wrist, the ischial callosities that all go to show according to Gregory and others that the group of extinct gibbons cannot be taken as the point of departure for the study of man s descent

A peculiar variant of the gibbonoid hypothesis was produced by Adolph Schultz (1936) who believes that the gibbons and man approximate each other in a number of important features more closely than man and the big anthropoid apes The ancestors of the hominids and gibbons says Schultz branched off from the main trunk of anthropoid higher Primates even earlier than the ancestors of the orangutan together with the gorilla and chimpanzee left the main stem of big anthropoids Man's great approximation to and relationship with living and fossil anthropoids make Schultz s gibbonoid hypothesis unacceptable

Some scholars have propounded the hypothesis that man descended from the orangutan Herman Klaatsch (1922) said that the Aurignacian man derived from the orangutan and the Neanderthaler from the gorilla Somewhat later (1926) Hans Friedenthal pointed to the relatively high skull of the orangutan as proof of the similarity of that ape with members of the Mongoloid race

The long armed orangutan however must be crossed out of the list of man s closest relatives on account of many signs of specialization such as the cheek pads of the males reduction of the great toe which has no nail bare patches with hard skin in the regions usually occupied by ischial callosities, the lungs are not divided into lobes deep furrows in the enamel of almost all the teeth no uvula attached to the rear of the soft palate a concave bulldog type of profile known as symognathous that is to a lesser degree typical of the chimpanzee they both differ from the gorilla the latter having a regular profile and facial part of the skull the wavy character of pigment distribution on the cross section of the orangutan s reddish brown hair

(the corrugated edge of the pigment layer), huge throat pouches an enigmatic sternal gland found in embryos and young individuals, especially males

As far as the gorilla is concerned some scholars Sir Arthur Keith for example, are inclined to accept that huge anthropoid as man s closest relative The gorilla s brain is bigger and of a more complicated structure than that of the chimpanzee or orangutan Some of the features of the male genitals of the gorilla and man are astonishingly similar and the sex cells of the gorilla are extraordinarily like those of man The structure of the skull of the female gorilla is according to Weidenreich (1943) closest to what is believed to be the skull shape of Pithecanthropus immediate ancestor

There are, however serious objections to the gorilloid theory of anthropogenesis since the skull of the male gorilla with its powerful ridges places this powerful ape and his immediate ancestors in a branch that is more likely to be parallel to man s on the genealogical tree The gorilla s blood produces a lesser precipitation reaction than that of the chimpanzee or even the gibbons, although the clot is greater than that of the orangutan which in this respect is closer to the catarrhine monkeys of the baboon type

The most widespread simian hypothesis of anthropogenesis is the chimpanzoid Such prominent scholars as Gustav Schwalbe William Gregory Hans Weinert attribute to the Dryopithecus and later Upper Tertiary ancestors of man features that approximate them to the chimpanzee There are features of astonishing resemblance in the structure of the cerebral hemispheres of the chimpanzee and man In general the chimpanzee shows signs of far less specialization There are no great differences between the sexes such as the gorilla or the orangutan display Gregory (1933) even called the chimpanzee a living fossil

When we speak of man s closest relatives, it is quite obvious that the accumulation of anatomical and physiological data on anthropoids and man does not affect Darwin s thesis on the close relationship of man and the African anthropoids Attempts to upset that thesis however are being made even today

Many bourgeois scientists do their best to rid man s genealogy not only of the anthropoids but of all Primates and depict the ancestor of man not as a tree dweller but as a tiny bipedal terrestrial man the Eoanthropus or Dawn man who is supposed to have derived directly from primitive lower mammals somewhere in the depths of the Tertiary Period Marcellin Boule (1946), who does not deny man s relationship to the apes describes this mysterious ancestor of man unknown to science as a tiny representative of the human family that held its body in

a more or less upright position, had an enormous cranium and, consequently, a brain that was very big in comparison with the size of its body Boule does not accept the Dryopithecus as an ancestor of man The view that a Tertiary man existed is ex pressed by Osborn in a hypothesis close to Boule s Eoanthropus hypothesis

4 OSBORN S HYPOTHESIS

The very prominent American palaeontologist Henry Osborn (1857 1935) is an outstanding representative of those reaction ary bourgeois scientists who try to reconcile science with reli gion by their declaration that the creation of the organic world is effected by means of purposeful evolution The metaphysical formula of creation through evolution is very popular among certain American biologists

Osborn assumes that the Tertiary progenitors of man in the form of Eoanthropi or Dawn men had almost all the qualities possessed by modern man According to his thesis the ancestors of man had no connections with the ancestors of the apes i e, man does not derive from the monkey group man first devel oped in Inner Asia and his ancestors led a terrestrial life Osborn admits the existence of man not only in the Pliocene but even in earlier epochs of the Tertiary Period

Osborn s theses are of a purely hypothetical nature and are not founded on facts His ideas emerge from the fallacious pre mises of the aristogenesis hypothesis which too, was his own creation Osborn postulates that evolution does not take place so much through natural selection or under the influence of the environment as on account of the miraculous ability for spontaneous progressive development that is inherent in the organism Osborn s hypothesis is in complete contradiction with everything including the data that prove the relationship of man to the living apes and the known extinct apes to fossil man Equally unfounded is his attempt to find evidence of the exist ence of Tertiary man in the Tertiary eoliths, or stones having the appearance of primitive weapons

Osborn s views on the problem of the origin of man under went considerable change in the course of his many years of work in the spheres of palaeontology general biology and anthropology Osborn himself admitted that up to 1923 he had fully shared the view that the human race derives from one of the species of fossil anthropoid apes in accordance with Darwin s theory of evolution As a palaeontologist however he had his doubts about the monkey theory of anthropogenesis His doubts were expressed in the following three points 1) the proportions

of the limbs of fossil men are not anthropoidal but completely human the lower limbs of the Pithecanthropus and the Neanderthaler are long and the upper limbs of the latter are short 2) the structure of the hand of the Neanderthaler is fully human, the thumb is no less developed than that of a modern man and the fingers are no less flexible 3) certain flint weapons for example those found at Red Crag (south east coast of England) have an antiquity dating back 1 200 000 years

From this Osborn goes over to an acknowledgement of the extreme antiquity of man whom he perceives as a creature with a straightened erect body and who is capable of work and of art i e who is already highly developed His journey with Charles William Andrews to the Gobi Desert served as an impetus to Osborn s elaboration of the eternal character of the human type with its original habitat in Mongolia and Tibet During the expedition to Mongolia with its mountain plateau landscapes and abundance of strange extinct giant reptiles Osborn conceived the idea that it was precisely here that the cradle of man was to be found he pictured it as a region with winding streams and scant forests alternating with grassy plains (1929) It was precisely in such a region reasoned Osborn that quadruped and biped mammals could develop rapidly and among them were the ancestors of the so called 'ape men Here they could easily keep the environment under observation take cover from their enemies in good time and had stones close at hand for use as weapons

Some years prior to Osborn a similar idea of man s original home in the form of a semi arid plateau was propounded by the American palaeontologist Joseph Barrell but Osborn insisted that he arrived at his hypothesis independently Osborn first published the hypothesis in 1923 In the years that followed he frequently returned to different aspects of the problem of anthropogenesis Finally, in 1929 Osborn developed his hypothesis into a widely based theory of the semi arid plateau in a paper he read at a congress in honour of the 200th Anniversary of the American Philosophical Society

Speaking of the original home of mankind and of the assumed ecological conditions of life of man s ancestors Osborn conducted a polemic against Darwin s contention that it must have been a country with a warm or hot climate covered with forests Contrary to Darwin s opinion Osborn maintained that man already adapted to orthograde locomotion could not have developed further if he had been surrounded by tropical forests where he would not have been able to find material for the manufacture of stone weapons As proof of the truth of his views Osborn put forward the concept that progressively

intellectual and independently adaptive types of man could take form on a level plateau such as are found in Mongolia and Tibet (cf P P Sushkin 1928)

Tertiary man s inventiveness in methods of acquiring food must, according to Osborn have been produced by the fact that there was little vegetable food and game in sufficiency The extreme difficulty and sharpness of the struggle for existence under such natural conditions said Osborn, must have served as a strong impetus to use wooden and stone weapons for the hunt Furthermore the severity of the climate on a mountain plateau compelled the most ancient hominids to make use of fire for warmth and for the cooking of food The hunting of wild animals must have developed the strength and agility of the legs, the organ of sight and the lungs of man s ancestors This is how Osborn pictures the ecology and way of life of the Dawn men

Now let us examine the physical type structure and behaviour of Osborn s Tertiary men who lived earlier than the Pithecanthropi He believed the Pithecanthropus to be a type that had been caught in the cul de sac of evolution a relic of a more ancient form of man the remnant of a group that had been driven out of the southern part of the Asian continent by more progressive hominids to live under island conditions in Oceania In Osborn s opinion the following were the characteristics of the Eoanthropus acquired millions of years ago

1) progressive intelligence rapid development of the forebrain
2) bipedal habit and development of the walking and running type of foot and big toe
3) shortening arms and lengthening legs,
4) development of the tool making thumb,
5) tool making capacity,
6) adaptation and design of implements of many kinds in wood bone and stone
7) design and invention directed by an intelligent forebrain,
8) use of the arms and tools in offence, defence and all the arts of life
9) the use of the legs for walking running travel and escape from enemies
10) tree climbing by embracing the main trunk with the arms and limbs after the manner of the bear

The following are typical features according to Osborn of the ancestors of living apes

1) arrested intelligence and brain size
2) arboreal to hyper arboreal quadrumanal habit—living chiefly in trees
3) quadrupedal habit when on the ground,
4) lengthening arms and diminishing legs

5) loss of the thumb and absence of tool making power and development of the grasping power of the big toe for climbing purposes,

6) limb grasping capacity of the hands

7) adaptation of the fore and hind limbs to the art of tree climbing and brachiating

8) design limited to the construction of very primitive tree nests,

9) use of the arms chiefly for tree climbing purposes secondarily for the prehension of food and grasping of the foe

10) use of the legs in tree climbing and limb grasping

11) escape from enemies by retreat through branches of trees

12) tree climbing always along branches never by embracing the main limbs and trunk

Thus we see that Osborn draws a sharp line between men and the anthropoid apes and not only the living species but also the ancient Tertiary species In this way he tries to undermine Darwin s theory of the descent of man from the group of Old World monkeys Osborn s anti Darwin anthropogenetic hypothesis is based on the biological theory of aristogenesis that he developed and defended throughout half a century of scientific work

It is quite reasonable to ask what connection there is between Osborn's hypothesis of anthropogenesis and his theory of aristogenesis The link between them is organic and unbreakable the former is part of the latter By the law of aristogenesis or rectigradation, Osborn understands the gradual, in the course of many centuries appearance of new adaptive features in an organism that occur in the embryonic plasma and at the early stages of development are quite independent of natural selection

In his monumental work on Proboscidea (1936), published posthumously we read the following From the author s prolonged thirty five year research on Titanotheres and Proboscidea there issue not only the principles governing the classic modifying modes of evolution known to Lamarck and Darwin (variation *development, degeneration*) but also the newly discovered and hitherto unrecognized principle and modes of the origin of new characters through aristogenesis or creative biochemical rectigradation * It is on this principle of rectigradation that Osborn bases his explanation of the evolutionary process which he maintains, is of a purposeful creative nature

The following example will give us some idea of the idealist nature of Osborn s views on the evolution of the animal kingdom views that resurrect the idea of the psychological creation

* Henry Fairfield Osborn *Proboscidea* New York 1936 Vol I p XIV

of animals In his study of a series of skulls belonging to young and adult Titanotheres Osborn (1912) found that their horns emerge in a definite predetermined manner Osborn examined a group of heads and skulls of modern bovines and established the fact that before the appearance of bony elements at the points where the horns grow rounded thickenings of the skin with an intense growth of hair and an accumulation of keratin make their appearance In connection with this Osborn poses the question which made the earlier appearance the psychic impulse to use the horns the epidermal keratin protection of the bony centre of the horn or the horn itself? Osborn's reply to his question is amazing it seems he says that the psychic tendency must have preceded the epidermal and that the latter anticipates the bony growth

From this it follows that Osborn s evolutionary views are based on an undisguised idea of autogenesis He is an orthogenetist insofar as he admits in organisms a hidden predetermined tendency to development in one direction or another Spontaneous changes in the embryonic plasma that are of an adaptive nature in respect of future changes in environment from the moment of their occurrence are according to Osborn the orthogenetic biological features that develop independently purposefully and consistently Not confining himself to the introduction of the creative element into the concept of rectigradation the author of the aristogenesis theory adds a further element of improvement he gives the rectigradations the new name of aristogenes meaning better heredity and simultaneously better adaptation of the organism to the life that lies before it Osborn s views on evolution therefore have a clearly defined teleological character—a creative evolution taking place in the world of organisms that is directed towards a definite goal

On the strength of his half century of work as a scientist and popularizer of science Osborn placed a high value on his scientific and philosophical views In the above mentioned monograph on Proboscidea he says Through the clear distinction between change of proportion (alloiometry) and the origin (aristogenesis) of new parts also through the newly discovered multiple lines (forty one or more) of ancestry and ascent technically known as phyla the Proboscidea afford a complete revolution in our biological philosophy and concepts of the nature and causes of evolution * In other places in his monograph Osborn finds it possible to apply to man the same biological laws or factors as he does to his elephants without any regard for the powerful influence of social factors on the formation of mankind a quali

* *Ibid* p xx

latively specific process when compared with the evolution of the whole remaining world of living beings on our planet

In trimming his hypothesis of the origin of man to fit the general biological theory of aristogenesis Osborn not only makes methodological and factual mistakes he even goes further than his theory of aristogenesis requires Osborn s main postulate is that the ancestral form of man must have possessed 100 per cent of the *specific features and potentialities for development that* are found in his successors Here however we have nothing more than a different formulation of the old preformation views asserting that future generations are built up in those preceding them Osborn s thesis therefore is a purely metaphysical construction *Why did Osborn resurrect preformation?* Apparently he thought it important to draw the lines of the evolution of the apes and man as far apart as possible to reduce the obvious contradiction between the scientific conception of anthropogenesis and the religious myth of God s miraculous creation of man in his own image as related in the Bible

Being unable to refute the many facts that go to prove the blood relationship and close anatomical physiological and psychological approximation of man and the apes Osborn preferred to stick to palaeontology where he feels himself to be an authority As a basis for his theoretical views he perceives man s Tertiary ancestor, as we have already mentioned in the form of the Dawn *man* a small, bipedal, terrestrial anthropoid Primate with limbs of protohuman proportions a big brain and a comparatively well developed intellect The Dawn man had not experienced the arboreal phase of evolution except perhaps for a short sojourn in the trees at the beginning of the Tertiary Period *Osborn even comes close to picturing* the Dawn man with a form similar to some kind of ground living tarsier of the Eocene Epoch—anything to get man further away from the apes His Dawn man branches off from the common stem of the Primates genealogical tree as early as the Oligocene Epoch and *does not link up* with the anthropoid apes Osborn explains man s similarities with the latter by parallelism and analogous adaptation that is supposed to have occurred during the process of development of man all apes and some of the lower monkeys

One cannot help but see the connection between the aristogenetic hypothesis of the Dawn man and the tarsier hypothesis Wood Jones also explains the similarities of man and the apes as homoeomorphism or similarity of form such as we observe in the New and Old World monkeys that have many similar features but apparently developed independently of each other on widely separated continents for tens of millions of years But this outward resemblance of which Wood Jones speaks is of an

incomparably more distant analogical character, while the similarity of man and the apes belongs not only to the category of homology but is only to be explained by phylogenic relationship Numerous palaeontological and palaeanthropological facts prove the correctness of Darwin s hypothesis of anthropogenesis

Darwin s view that the *Dryopithecus* was the common Miocene ancestor of the gorilla the chimpanzee and man has stood up to the test of facts for almost a century The discovery, furthermore of the Ramapithecus and the Australopithecoid African anthropoid apes has thrown light on the morphological peculiarities of the Pliocene anthropoids that are close to man genealogically The discovery of the teeth of the fossil anthropoid Udabnopithecus by the Soviet scientists N I Burchak Abramovich and E G Gabashvili in Georgia (1939) serves to confirm the wide geographical distribution and the great variety of form and structure of apes that approximate to man Lastly, the latest discoveries of the fossil bones of gigantic Pliocene and Pleistocene anthropoids (the Gigantopithecus blacki in South China [1935] and the Meganthropus palaeojavanicus in Java [1943], for example) show that anthropoids approximating man s ancestors also lived in South East Asia

There is therefore no doubt that the Neogene was rich in its variety of great anthropoids of which quite a large number were close to the later developing first men the Pithecanthropi The idea that the most ancient representatives of the human race emerged from this group of similar forms now has a firm enough foundation It does not follow from this however that we may accept either the Gigantopithecus or the Meganthropus as our ancestors in the way Franz Weidenreich (1945) does in his Gigantoid or degeneration hypothesis of anthropogenesis Like Osborn he adopts the orthogenesis theory of the evolution of the Primates and man as opposed to the materialist theory of Darwinism

In his examination of fossil anthropoids and hominids Osborn tries to squeeze the earliest men and the Neanderthalers out of the human genealogy he takes the line of descent of the Dawn man directly to a modern type of man whose antiquity he exaggerates * The support which Osborn found for his theory in the fossil bones of Dawson s Dawn man found in England between

* *An outline and criticism of Osborn s hypothesis are to be found in my* works *Osborn s Hypothesis of Anthropogenesis and Its Criticism* in *Uspekhi sovremennoi biologii* 1940 Vol XIII issue 2 pp 347 53 *Osborn s Orthogenetic Hypothesis of the Origin of Man and Its Criticism* in *Yestestvo znaniye v shkole* 1948 No 3 pp 3 7 See also obituary in *Antropologichesky Zhurnal* 1936 pp 371 75 in which his reactionary ideas on anthropology are discussed

1908 and 1915 has been deprived of all scientific verisimilitude in view of later information that caused some of the bones to be discarded the lower jaw proved to be that of a modern orangutan (female) that had been artificially coloured Thus the discovery of the Dawn man that Soviet anthropologists always regarded as dubious, proved to be a falsification (Roginsky 1951 Gremyatsky, 1954)

Osborn bases his assumption of the ancient skill of man s ancestors on the contention that there exist Tertiary eoliths The eoliths from Red Crag that he mentions are by no means as ancient as he supposes Apart from that, it is often difficult to distinguish artificially made stone weapons from natural stones that have been shaped by breaking and by blows against other stones in avalanches or in some raging whirlpool Nevertheless it is quite probable that some of the Quaternary eoliths owe their shape to the first men who in addition to man made weapons also made use of unfashioned stones selecting the most suitable and trimming them very slightly

We cannot reject all the Quaternary eoliths merely because stones of a similar shape have also been found in the Miocene Epoch as it is highly probable that the first man made weapons were barely distinguishable from natural stones

The tools of the ancient Chinese man the Sinanthropus show that they must have been preceded by others of still simpler form and among them there might have been eoliths

Osborn s aim however, was to use his legend of the ' eternal nature of the ancient craftsman to reconcile in some way or another science and religion precisely in the field of anthropology It is not surprising that such scientific constructions meet with the sympathy of the clergy

The most important task facing the theologians is not to permit recognition of the fact that man developed naturally from his predecessors, the apes and in every possible way to cut man off from the remainder of the animal kingdom even from those forms that are actually by the structure of their bodies obviously to be regarded as men This is all done in order to be able to affirm the immortality of the soul which God is supposed to have breathed into the first man at the moment of his miraculous creation Furthermore, the theologians give their support to the unscientific tendency to prove that modern man is of greater antiquity than even the Pithecanthropus, from which it follows that man did not descend from the apes It is therefore much easier for them to declare modern man to be of extreme antiquity and to have made his appearance independent of the animal kingdom i e by the performance of a miracle All such attempts however lose more and more ground with each new discovery

incomparably more distant analogical character, while the similarity of man and the apes belongs not only to the category of homology but is only to be explained by phylogenic relationship Numerous palaeontological and palaeanthropological facts prove the correctness of Darwin s hypothesis of anthropogenesis

Darwin s view that the Dryopithecus was the common Miocene ancestor of the gorilla the chimpanzee and man has stood up to the test of facts for almost a century The discovery furthermore of the Ramapithecus and the Australopithecoid African anthropoid apes has thrown light on the morphological peculiarities of the Pliocene anthropoids that are close to man genealogically The discovery of the teeth of the fossil anthropoid Udabnopithecus by the Soviet scientists N I Burchak Abramovich and E G Gabashvili in Georgia (1939) serves to confirm the wide geographical distribution and the great variety of form and structure of apes that approximate to man Lastly the latest discoveries of the fossil bones of gigantic Pliocene and Pleistocene anthropoids (the Gigantopithecus blacki in South China [1935] and the Meganthropus palaeojavanicus in Java [1943] for example) show that anthropoids approximating man s ancestors also lived in South East Asia

There is therefore no doubt that the Neogene was rich in its variety of great anthropoids of which quite a large number were close to the later developing first men the Pithecanthropi The idea that the most ancient representatives of the human race emerged from this group of similar forms now has a firm enough foundation It does not follow from this however that we may accept either the Gigantopithecus or the Meganthropus as our ancestors in the way Franz Weidenreich (1945) does in his Gigantoid or degeneration hypothesis of anthropogenesis Like Osborn he adopts the orthogenesis theory of the evolution of the Primates and man as opposed to the materialist theory of Darwinism

In his examination of fossil anthropoids and hominids Osborn tries to squeeze the earliest men and the Neanderthalers out of the human genealogy he takes the line of descent of the Dawn man directly to a modern type of man whose antiquity he exaggerates * The support which Osborn found for his theory in the fossil bones of Dawson s Dawn man found in England between

* An outline and criticism of Osborn s hypothesis are to be found in my works *Osborn s Hypothesis of Anthropogenesis and Its Criticism* in *Uspekhi sovremennoi biologii* 1940 Vol XIII issue 2 pp 347 53 *Osborn s Orthogenetic Hypothesis of the Origin of Man and Its Criticism* in *Yestestvoznaniye v shkole* 1948 No 3 pp 3 7 See also obituary in *Antropologichesky zhurnal* 1936 pp 371 75 in which his reactionary ideas on anthropology are discussed

1908 and 1915 has been deprived of all scientific verisimilitude in view of later information that caused some of the bones to be discarded the lower jaw proved to be that of a modern orangutan (female) that had been artificially coloured Thus the discovery of the Dawn man that Soviet anthropologists al ways regarded as dubious proved to be a falsification (Roginsky 1951 Gremyatsky 1954)

Osborn bases his assumption of the ancient skill of man s an cestors on the contention that there exist Tertiary eoliths The eoliths from Red Crag that he mentions are by no means as ancient as he supposes Apart from that it is often difficult to distinguish artificially made stone weapons from natural stones that have been shaped by breaking and by blows against other stones in avalanches or in some raging whirlpool Nevertheless it is quite probable that some of the Quaternary eoliths owe their shape to the first men who in addition to man made weapons also made use of unfashioned stones selecting the most suitable and trimming them very slightly

We cannot reject all the Quaternary eoliths merely because stones of a similar shape have also been found in the Miocene Epoch, as it is highly probable that the first man made weapons were barely distinguishable from natural stones

The tools of the ancient Chinese man the Sinanthropus show that they must have been preceded by others of still simpler form and among them there might have been eoliths

Osborn s aim however, was to use his legend of the eternal nature of the ancient craftsman to reconcile in some way or another science and religion precisely in the field of anthropol ogy It is not surprising that such ' scientific ' constructions meet with the sympathy of the clergy

The most important task facing the theologians is not to per mit recognition of the fact that man developed naturally from his predecessors, the apes and in every possible way to cut man off from the remainder of the animal kingdom even from those forms that are actually, by the structure of their bodies obviously to be regarded as men This is all done in order to be able to affirm the immortality of the soul which God is supposed to have breathed into the first man at the moment of his miracu lous creation Furthermore the theologians give their support to the unscientific tendency to prove that modern man is of greater antiquity than even the Pithecanthropus from which it follows that man did not descend from the apes It is therefore much easier for them to declare modern man to be of extreme antiquity and to have made his appearance independent of the animal kingdom, i e by the performance of a miracle All such attempts however lose more and more ground with each new discovery

In order to give their writing a similitude of science, the theologians make good use of the works of reactionary biologists and other scientists In their search for proofs to be used against the conception of evolution as a process that proceeds exclusively according to natural laws the theologians adopt any of the hypotheses propounded by idealistically minded bourgeois scientists that elaborate the theory of evolution as the unfolding of a divine plan of creation

Hypotheses which base evolution on the eternal combination and recombination of the same unchanging hereditary particles the genes are of great convenience to the theologians As an outstanding representative of this trend in bourgeois biology we may name Jan Lotsy (1927) he applies to man the anti evolutionary theory of organisms as a combination of genes The mechanistic character of Lotsy s conceptions related to Osborn s gene mosaic may be seen from the following statement It is important even if species are immutable that evolution should, at least be reasonable And my hypothesis has a complete analogy in lifeless nature the genes correspond to the elements and the chromosomes to constant chemical compounds

Lotsy s hypothesis of anthropogenesis turns man into an accumulation of unchanging genes and leads to idealist views on the human races, it is scientifically unsound, contradicts Darwin s conceptions of anthropogenesis and in fact, leads to the idea that the human type is essentially unchangeable

5 WEIDENREICH S HYPOTHESIS OF ANTHROPOGENESIS

Franz Weidenreich a prominent German anthropologist for many years elaborated the autogenetic theory of evolution in its application to the animal kingdom in general and to man in particular We shall now analyse Weidenreich s hypothesis According to Weidenreich the whole course of human evolution, insofar as it is revealed by the dental system is a typical case of orthogenetic development that affects every system of organs and the structure of the body as a whole by transforming them in one and the same direction In conformity with his idealistic views on evolution Weidenreich maintains that everything that has happened to the dental system is merely the result of general changes to the body and cannot be the result of any direct or accidental effect on the teeth such as for example changes in the method of feeding or the selection of indefinite accidental variations In the light of Darwinism however not only Weidenreich s idealistic hypothesis of evolution but also his views on the orthogenetic course of the evolution of the hominids as a physical type and of their ancestors are unfounded

Weidenreich tries to prove that changes in the physical organization of living beings are of a spontaneous nature and take place because of an inner tendency to develop Such reactionary views are nothing more than a return to the theory of life forces, in other words an attempt to hold out a hand to religion and have nothing whatever to do with Darwin s materialist theory We have already seen that changes in the method of feeding and external factors have a real effect on the evolution of the skull and teeth of the Primates



Fig 43 The upper and lower molars of man (left) and Black s Gigantopithecus superior and vestibular aspects
6/5 natural size After G Koenigswald 1947

The gigantoid hypothesis of the origin of man, proposed by Franz Weidenreich in 1945 would seem to be the most soundly argued of the idealistic hypotheses of anthropogenesis Its factual basis is the fossil remains of huge anthropoids found in South East Asia Weidenreich regards them as hominids as the most ancient representatives of the human race Weidenreich s main idea is that gigantism is a typical feature of man s more immediate ancestors

He gives first place to the Gigantopithecus blacki so named after the English anatomist Davidson Black who is well known for his Sinanthropus researches The new genus of fossil anthropoids was established in 1935 by G G R von Koenigswald on the basis of a badly worn tooth a lower right end molar (fig 43) This tooth has an interesting history Koenigswald did not find it in the earth but acquired it in the shop of a Chinese apothecary in Hongkong from whom he also purchased about fifteen hundred teeth belonging to fossil orangutans Judging by the teeth and bones of other fossil animals together with which the teeth were on sale either for the preparation of medicines or for use as amulets the orangutan teeth came from some

caves in Yunnan and Kwangsi in South China and are of comparatively recent, Pleistocene, origin Koenigswald later found among the orangutan teeth he had bought two huge molars belonging to a Gigantopithecus (the last lower left and first upper right molars) and still later another About 1 000 teeth of the Gigantopithecus have now been found (Tung Ti cheng, 1963)

The length of the crown of the lower Gigantopithecus molars is 22 and 22 3 mm that of the gorilla is 18 19 1 mm and of modern man 10 7 mm, i e almost half the size The crown of the Gigantopithecus tooth averages 4 420 cu mm that of the gorilla 2 356 cu mm, i e about one half Since the crown of man's third lower molar has a volume of only 723 cu mm that of the Gigantopithecus is six times greater than that of man

Now let us look at some other peculiarities in the shape and structure of the Gigantopithecus teeth and point out those that in our opinion, contradict Weidenreich's assertion that the South Asian giant representatives of the ape world belong to the human species Take the proportions of the crown the rear section of the lower molar the talonid, is narrower than the front section the trigonid which in the ancestors of the monkeys has a triangular arrangement of the cusps—the paraconid that in the majority of the Primates has disappeared the protoconid and the metaconid In this important point the Gigantopithecus clearly approximates the anthropoids more closely than it does the hominids who as a rule have teeth with the talonid wider than the trigonid Other signs confirm this such as the supplementary cusps on the grinding surface of the lower molars Here we must make special mention of the so called sixth cusp situated on the inner posterior edge between the entoconid and the hypoconulid that is so typical of the Dryopithecus to which the Gigantopithecus shows relationship in the distribution of the main cusps Lastly, the third lower molar of the Gigantopithecus shows no signs of the reduction that is typical of the last molars or wisdom teeth of hominids Koenigswald admits that the Gigantopithecus can even be approximated to the Sivapithecus i e to a group that is closer to the ancestors of the orangutans an opinion that is probably closer to the truth than Weidenreich s hypothesis (Tung Ti cheng 1963)

In any case Weidenreich s thesis that the Gigantopithecus is not an anthropoid but a typical hominid, has to be completely rejected as having no scientific foundation

The Gigantopithecus is neither a hominid nor an ancestor of man The huge skull of the Gigantopithecus was probably bigger than that of modern man Judging by the find of lower jaws with a full set of teeth (Pei Wen chung 1957) the skull of the Gigantopithecus had a rough outer surface The tremendous

strength of the Gigantopithecus gave him superiority in the interspecies struggle—he had no need to recourse to weapons for aid He hunted animals and carried parts of their flesh to the caves in which he lived There are, however no data from which we might assume that he was capable of developing into a human being

Weidenreich's second argument is the find of a fragment of the lower jaw of the ancient Javanese Meganthropus (fig 44) which one of Koenigswald s collectors discovered in 1941 in a hollow caused by a geological fault at Sangiran on the island of Java The fore middle section of the right half of the body of the jaw (ramus horizontalis dexter corporis mandibulae) had been preserved The dimensions of the fragment and the teeth indicate that its owner was a being with an extremely big body the height of the fragment at the level of the chin foramen was 48 mm while that of the gorilla between 39 and 49 mm The first molar two premolars and the socket of the canine have been preserved

Weidenreich asserts that the pattern of the grinding surface of the Meganthropus molar is that typical of the Dryopithecus



Fig 44 Meganthropus palaeojavanicus Koenigswald fragment of mandible right aspect Above—reconstructed by F Weidenreich with human (left) and gorilla (right) mandibles 2/7 natural size After G Koenigswald 1947

this includes the sixth cusp which increases the impression of the simian nature of the Meganthropus The grinding surface on the molar is wrinkled like that of an anthropoid Judging by the shallowness of the canine socket the crown must have been a small one This supposition is supported by the shape of the premolars that are reminiscent of human teeth From this it may be assumed that the upper canines were also small One canine has since been found

On the basis of the height of the jaw at the chin foramen it may be assumed that the dimensions of the body of the Meganthropus were surpassed only by those of the gorilla and Gigantopithecus and approximated those of orangutan It is not only the peculiarities of the teeth that exclude the Meganthropus from the hominid family but also the jaw itself On the tongue side of the body of the jaw for example there is an enigmatic hollow for the digastric muscle 15 mm deep in the vicinity of the symphysis Weidenreich believes this hollow to be an anomaly Nearby as Weidenreich notes there is a fossa for the digastric muscle but its triangular shape and elongated flat surface differentiate it sharply from the corresponding fossa in man We are of the opinion that both the hollow and the fossa are of natural origin and are due to some specialization of the muscles and bones in the region of the lower jaw In any case such morphological deviations remove the Meganthropus from the list of man s ancestors

The peculiarities of the contours of a vertical cross section made through the medial plane of the reconstructed mandible of the Meganthropus also show how far removed it is from man These contours show that the Meganthropus should be placed somewhere between the Dryopithecus and the Paranthropus Lastly we would draw attention to the mandibular foramen which is situated low in apes and high in man The opening is approximately on the level of the boundary between the premolars and molars at the height of the centre of the horizontal branch of the jaw body In the Meganthropus it is placed at middle height in the body of the jaw i e as in hominids The mandibular canal however as can be seen from the cross section runs low down from the foramen more like that of an ape and not high up as in the hominid Here again the Meganthropus is closer to the anthropoids

We consider the pithecoid peculiarities mentioned above to be of greater importance than the hominoid which it seems, are also found in the Meganthropus and believe it more correct to place the Meganthropus amongst the anthropoids rather than the hominids Owing to its unique elements of specialization and huge proportions the Meganthropus could not have been

amongst man's ancestors and must be excluded from man s genealogy

Gigantism amongst the Primates is the exception and not the rule in India there was a giant Dryopithecus in South East Asia the Gigantopithecus and Meganthropus and on the island of Madagascar the giant lemurs—Megaladapis and others—and the Proconsul major in East Africa Far better known are the fossil anthropoids with pre hominoid features and one cannot agree with Weidenreich that our ancestors were giants something in the nature of an overgrown Adam and Eve Weidenreich s hy pothesis cannot provide the answer to the following question how can the autogenetic conception of the development of the animal kingdom be reconciled with the reverse process of evolution that it proposes i e , the reduction in size or degeneration of the giant anthropoids and their conversion into men with bodies very much smaller than those of their ancestors? Weidenreich in his scientifically unsound gigantoid hypothesis of anthropogenesis has if one may say so, perverted his own orthogenetic concep tion Weidenreich s idea is also unsound because the geological antiquity of the Meganthropus and the Gigantopithecus is not so great as to place them amongst the ancestors of the hominids (Nesturkh 1954)

We may conclude this analysis of some of the anti Darwinist hypotheses of man s origin by suggesting that it would be con venient to divide the Upper Tertiary anthropoids into two groups One of the groups would include the predecessors of the homi noids and of the apes morphologically related to them these we could call the pre hominoid anthropoids In this group we would place the Dryopithecus darwini Oreopithecus Ramapithecus Australopithecus Paranthropus and Plesianthropus The other Miocene and Pliocene anthropoids would be included in the group of pre simoid anthropoids the ancestors of the living gibbon orangutan chimpanzee and gorilla There were more genera and species of Upper Tertiary anthropoids than there are of those living today and they were far more widespread

A working hypothesis of this sort helps focus our attention on the pre hominoid anthropoids and is of assistance in deter mining the immediate ancestor of man It is more than likely that this ancestor was an Upper Pliocene relative of the Australo pithecus living in South Asia where his fossil bones must be sought To some extent support for this thesis is the finding of the fossil remains of the anthropoids in India Indo China Java and elsewhere in South Asia From these early man began to spread towards the South East and North East before him lay new lands that he was able to make his own thanks to the soli

this includes the sixth cusp which increases the impression of the simian nature of the Meganthropus The grinding surface on the molar is wrinkled like that of an anthropoid Judging by the shallowness of the canine socket the crown must have been a small one This supposition is supported by the shape of the premolars that are reminiscent of human teeth From this it may be assumed that the upper canines were also small One canine has since been found

On the basis of the height of the jaw at the chin foramen it may be assumed that the dimensions of the body of the Megan thropus were surpassed only by those of the gorilla and Gigan topithecus and approximated those of orangutan It is not only the peculiarities of the teeth that exclude the Meganthropus from the hominid family but also the jaw itself On the tongue side of the body of the jaw for example there is an enigmatic hol low for the digastric muscle 15 mm deep in the vicinity of the symphysis Weidenreich believes this hollow to be an anomaly Nearby as Weidenreich notes there is a fossa for the digastric muscle but its triangular shape and elongated flat surface dif ferentiate it sharply from the corresponding fossa in man We are of the opinion that both the hollow and the fossa are of natural origin and are due to some specialization of the muscles and bones in the region of the lower jaw In any case such mor phological deviations remove the Meganthropus from the list of man s ancestors

The peculiarities of the contours of a vertical cross section made through the medial plane of the reconstructed mandible of the Meganthropus also show how far removed it is from man These contours show that the Meganthropus should be placed somewhere between the Dryopithecus and the Paranthropus Lastly we would draw attention to the mandibular foramen, which is situated low in apes and high in man The opening is approximately on the level of the boundary between the premo lars and molars at the height of the centre of the horizontal branch of the jaw body In the Meganthropus it is placed at middle height in the body of the jaw, i e as in hominids The mandibular canal however as can be seen from the cross section runs low down from the foramen more like that of an ape and not high up as in the hominid Here again the Meganthropus is closer to the anthropoids

We consider the pithecoid peculiarities mentioned above to be of greater importance than the hominoid which it seems, are also found in the Meganthropus and believe it more correct to place the Meganthropus amongst the anthropoids rather than the hominids Owing to its unique elements of specialization and huge proportions the Meganthropus could not have been

mongst man's ancestors and must be excluded from man s enealogy

Gigantism amongst the Primates is the exception and not the ule in India there was a giant Dryopithecus in South East Asia he Gigantopithecus and Meganthropus and on the island of Madagascar the giant lemurs—Megaladapis and others—and the Proconsul major in East Africa Far better known are the fossil nthropoids with pre hominoid features and one cannot agree with Weidenreich that our ancestors were giants something in he nature of an overgrown Adam and Eve Weidenreich s hy othesis cannot provide the answer to the following question how an the autogenetic conception of the development of the animal ingdom be reconciled with the reverse process of evolution that proposes, i e the reduction in size or degeneration of the giant nthropoids and their conversion into men with bodies very nuch smaller than those of their ancestors? Weidenreich in his cientifically unsound gigantoid hypothesis of anthropogenesis as if one may say so, perverted his own orthogenetic concep on Weidenreich s idea is also unsound because the geological ntiquity of the Meganthropus and the Gigantopithecus is not o great as to place them amongst the ancestors of the hominids Nesturkh, 1954)

We may conclude this analysis of some of the anti Darwinist ypotheses of man's origin by suggesting that it would be con enient to divide the Upper Tertiary anthropoids into two groups One of the groups would include the predecessors of the homi oids and of the apes morphologically related to them these we ould call the pre hominoid anthropoids In this group we would lace the Dryopithecus darwini Oreopithecus Ramapithecus ustralopithecus, Paranthropus and Plesianthropus The other Miocene and Pliocene anthropoids would be included in the group f pre simoid anthropoids the ancestors of the living gibbon rangutan chimpanzee and gorilla There were more generi nd species of Upper Tertiary anthropoids than there are of those ving today and they were far more widespread

A working hypothesis of this sort helps focus our attention n the pre hominoid anthropoids and is of assistance in deter nining the immediate ancestor of man It is more than likely hat this ancestor was an Upper Pliocene relative of the Australo ithecus living in South Asia where his fossil bones must be ought To some extent support for this thesis is the finding of he fossil remains of the anthropoids in India Indo China Java nd elsewhere in South Asia From these early man began to pread towards the South East and North East before him lay ew lands that he was able to make his own thanks to the soli

darity of the primeval human herd their communal activities and their tools

Anti Darwinist hypotheses of anthropogenesis have been and are being disproved by anthropological primatological and general biological data Darwin s theory of anthropogenesis has long served as a basis for work on the problem of man s origin Engels used it as the foundation of his new Marxist theory of anthropogenesis based on the method of dialectical and historical materialism

The next part of our book is an attempt to throw a little more light on that turning point in the history of the development of the animal kingdom at which man made his appearance

Here it will be advisable to outline a few general concepts on the question of the division of man s genealogy and of the entire process of anthropogenesis into two unequal parts The first division is extremely lengthy—from the first microscopic living beings to the immediate predecessors of the Pithecanthropi—it lasted almost 2 000 million years The course of development taken by man s ancestors depended on the constantly changing reaction of the organism of one or another ancestor as a whole to changes in the environment under the influence of purely natural including biological factors beginning with natural selection

In the widest possible sense even one might say in the philosophical sense there was a constant quantitative accumulation of new qualities in the development of the animal kingdom or more precisely in that line which led to the Pithecanthropi All the time such an evolutionary change was going on that, in hominid ancestral forms inevitably created a new quality that has neither before nor since appeared in any other subdivision of the class of mammals This very special quality characterizes a new being—the earliest man Owing to the work he performed in the sense that he regularly made his implements and used them in practice for the needs of life jointly with other members of the primeval horde, qualitatively new social laws came into existence new factors appeared that formed man s body and man as a whole

P a r t T w o

PHYSICAL PECULIARITIES OF THE HUMAN BODY AND THE EMERGENCE OF MAN

C H A P T E R O N E

THE ROLE OF WORK AND ERECT LOCOMOTION IN ANTHROPOGENESIS

1 THE ROLE OF WORK

Several times in the preceding chapters mention has been made of the fact that man although the structure and other biological aspects of his organism are similar to those of the animals possesses certain qualitatively different anatomical and physiological features that can only be explained by the specifics of evolution from ape to man under the influence of his activities

The modern human organism displays a high degree of adaptation to the performance of work and to erect locomotion But the latter is in itself also an adaptation to that most typical of all the arts of human life the ability to work

Data drawn from the natural and social sciences must be applied in an examination of the problem of man's inception and further development Only a complex study of the problem can show how man evolved from the animal kingdom The correct application of data provided by the biological and social sciences to the problem of anthropogenesis implies an [illegible] bracing study of nature and society based on dialectical and historical materialism

In his treatise on anthropogenesis Darwin [illegible] stopped half way He was able to give only a partial [illegible] of the way in which man s biological peculiarities [illegible] because he applied in the main, purely biological [illegible]

According to Darwin s theory, the chief factors [illegible] making of man were mutation the struggle for [illegible] natural and sexual selection and the direct [illegible] influence of the environment

The founders of Marxism provided [illegible] of the problem of man s formation, giving [illegible] influence [illegible] work Engels concept of the [illegible] man was not accepted by [illegible] of [illegible] ophy

In the works of Marx we find cardinal concepts that take us deep down to the roots of anthropogenesis In the first volume of *Capital* (Ch 5 § 1) Marx defined the concept of "work" and indicated its tremendous role in dividing man off from the animal kingdom

Marx regards operations with non fabricated natural objects as the undeveloped embryonic form of labour activity Concerning man s use of implements Marx says Thus Nature becomes one of the organs of his activity one that he annexes to his own bodily organs adding stature to himself in spite of the Bible'* Tools in a way increase man s physical strength and enable him to overcome obstacles that would be beyond the power of his bare hands

Work with fabricated implements is a more highly developed form of labour The use and fabrication of instruments of labour although existing in the germ among certain species of animals is specifically characteristic of the human labour process and Franklin therefore defines man as a tool making animal'**

The work theory of anthropogenesis is a development of the basic postulates of Marxism

Engels says that labour is the primary basic condition for all human existence and this to such an extent that in a sense we have to say labour created man himself*** It is precisely work processes that constitute a distinct boundary between man and the higher animals such as the apes that he approximates in the structure of his body and common descent

In his classic monograph on the role of work Engels begins at that stage of the development of our ancestors when they were as he says an unusually highly developed species of ape This we understand as meaning a high level of corporeal organization in our ancestors their flexibility in adapting themselves to a new environment and their well developed brain

Erect locomotion said Engels was a decisive step on the road to humanizing the ape since this position of the body released the arms from their former functions in pronograde locomotion and as supports for the body The hands at first became adapted to the very simplest forms of work and then developed progressively over the tremendously long period when man was taking shape under the influence of the labour he performed Engels finds that work had a direct influence on the structure and functions of the hand and that individually acquired peculiarities were transmitted by heredity

---

* K Marx *Capital* Vol I Chap VII Section 1 Moscow 1965 p 179
** *Ibid* p 179
** F Engels *Dialectics of Nature* Moscow 1954 p 228

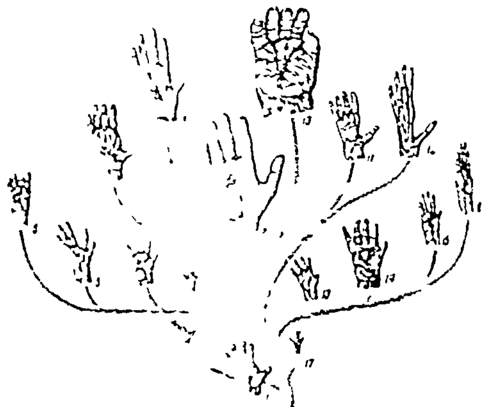
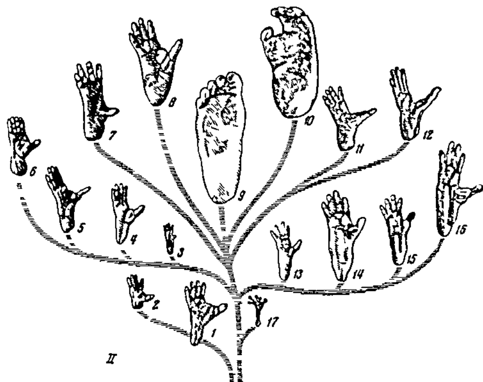


Fig 4a Shape I— I—hands and II—feet ... [illegible] ... P. L. S. Muller ... schweinfurthii (Igloo ... Geoffroy 13—Macaca ... abyssinicus ... After W ...

... as for example the anterior prominence ... weakly developed ... than the other teeth lips developed in ... and a furrow between the upper lip ...

... our ancestors changed their ... terrestrial and how biped locomotion ... examine the modern apes methods of ... ground During life in the ... serve primarily as ...

... resembles its ... quadrumanous as it was ...



regions of Primate extremities

monkeys and half monkeys
Jacchus L 4—Cebus versutus D G Elliot 5—Alouatta seniculus L 6—Ateles
Homo sapiens L 10—Gorilla gorilla beringei Matschie 11—Symphalangus
Blyth 14—Papio hamadryas L 15—Lasiopyga callithrichus Oken 16—Colobus
Tarsius spectrum Pallas
M Roigneaux 1937

erroneously termed The monkey can grasp the limb of a tree with equal agility with either hands or feet and indeed functionally the feet do resemble hands An anatomical comparison of the structure of a monkey s hands and feet with those of man that shows the number and structural character of the bones muscles blood vessels and nerves is sufficient to convince us that the hind limbs of the monkey correspond to the inferior extremities (the legs) of man The fore limbs in the same way, correspond to man s superior extremities (the arms)

In climbing trees the monkey uses all four limbs It moves along branches with perfect confidence its tail helping it keep its balance Some of the higher apes (gorilla chimpanzee orang

[illegible] to a considerable extent to the transition from life in the trees to life on the ground

It must be [illegible] that the common ancestor of man and the [illegible] was not so highly specialized as the living anthropoids and that the thumbs of the extinct species were not so greatly reduced as those of the chimpanzee or orangutan

We may suppose that the anthropoid apes that served as man's ancestor made partial changes in their method of locomotion while they were still living in the trees It is probable that they like the living gorilla and chimpanzee, did not so much grasp the branches with their feet when moving through the trees as walk along thick branches, balancing themselves by grasping higher branches with their hands

This idea was put forward by the eminent anthropologist Sir Arthur Keith (1934 He was of the opinion that man's ancestors during the last period of their life in the trees, used their lower limbs for movement more than their upper limbs he even calls our ancestors cruriating animals as opposed to the ancestors of the living anthropoids who were brachiating animals Our ancestors the cruriators, held their bodies in a more or less vertical and straightened posture This was a circumstance that enabled them later to move on the ground on two legs Further locomotion was accomplished in a more and more erect position The long process of the development of orthograde locomotion reached greatest perfection only in modern man But obvious traces of man's descent from an ape like ancestor who lived in the trees at a very distant period have been retained in his body to the present day Man's hand retains some of the peculiarities of the structure of the once highly developed prehensile limbs of his arboreal ancestor Man's hand however has undergone considerable change in the course of its use for work by numerous generations for hundreds of thousands of years

We see from the example of the living anthropoids that they have a very uncertain gait when moving on their hind limbs alone The gibbon performs this best of all, but he balances himself with his arms holding them out level with the shoulders or even placing them on his head The chief support is the foot which like the chimpanzee's has three points of contact with the ground 1) the heel 2) the great toe which in these anthropoids is highly developed and projects outwards and 3) the remaining four toes held together

These peculiarities in the structure of the foot especially the highly developed great toe enable the gibbon and the chimpanzee to remain poised on two legs better than the orangutan or gorilla

In man s foot it will be remembered the main point of contact is the great toe which has not only developed progressively in the course of evolution but has become closely bound to the second digit The gorilla s great toe is not so evolved This ape has a heavy body and when standing or walking on two legs is very unstable and rarely therefore resorts to that position The typical pose of the gorilla and chimpanzee is semi erect practically on all fours the digits of the hands are bent and the ape usually rests his weight on their medial or terminal phalanges

The big toe of the orangutan on account of his purely arboreal way of life, is nothing more than a short thin outgrowth from the foot on which there is usually no toe nail The orangutan s other toes are very long and function in unison, like a hook As they are always bent to some extent it is almost impossible to unbend them into one plane with the sole of the foot it is easier to do this with young animals On those rare occasions when he stands or walks on two legs he usually rests his weight on the outer edges of the foot with the toes turned inwards and all of them, from the second to the fifth in a horizontal position but more or less curled up in rings

The young male orangutan Moritz, in the Moscow Zoological Gardens walked on two legs resting his weight on the entire sole of the foot and on the bent toes it is possible however that he adapted himself to this method of locomotion during his life in captivity Another orangutan in the Moscow Zoological Gardens a female named Frina during the first years of her life sometimes walked on the ball of the foot and on the upturned surface of the toes but later at an age between 5 and 10 years she began to walk on the outer edge of the soles and on her horizontally curled toes The young female chimpanzee Mimosa walked with some of her weight supported by the outer edge of the foot, but mostly putting her weight on the triangle sole great toe and the other toes constricted

An orangutan s gait resembles that of a man on crutches as his legs are short and his movements are made by jerking them forward between the widely outspread arms that give him support on the ground The apes have very different gaits standing on two legs they may hop mark time dance or twist round in one place Varying degrees of transition from quadruped to biped locomotion are found among them in all cases the erect stance is easier for them than for the quadruped monkeys

The living anthropoid apes are extremely interesting animals by studying their methods of arboreal and terrestrial locomotion we can to some extent get a picture of that period of transition when our ancestors began to change their quadruped gait for

emergence to a considerable extent to the transition from life in the trees to life on the ground

It must be assumed that the common ancestor of man and the great apes was not so highly specialized as the living anthropoids and that the thumbs of the extinct species were not so greatly reduced as those of the chimpanzee or orangutan

We may suppose that the anthropoid apes that served as man s ancestors made partial changes in their method of locomotion while they were still living in the trees It is probable that they like the living gorilla and chimpanzee, did not so much grasp the branches with their feet when moving through the trees as walk along thick branches, balancing themselves by grasping higher branches with their hands

This idea was put forward by the eminent anthropologist Sir Arthur Keith (1934) He was of the opinion that man s ancestors during the last period of their life in the trees used their lower limbs for movement more than their upper limbs, he even calls our ancestors cruriating animals as opposed to the ancestors of the living anthropoids who were brachiating animals Our ancestors the cruriators held their bodies in a more or less vertical and straightened posture This was a circumstance that enabled them later to move on the ground on two legs Further locomotion was accomplished in a more and more erect position The long process of the development of orthograde locomotion reached greatest perfection only in modern man But obvious traces of man's descent from an apelike ancestor who lived in the trees at a very distant period have been retained in his body to the present day Man's hand retains some of the peculiarities of the structure of the once highly developed prehensile limbs of his arboreal ancestor Man s hand however has undergone considerable change in the course of its use for work by numerous generations for hundreds of thousands of years

We see from the example of the living anthropoids that they have a very uncertain gait when moving on their hind limbs alone The gibbon performs this best of all but he balances himself with his arms holding them out level with the shoulders or even placing them on his head The chief support is the foot which like the chimpanzee s has three points of contact with the ground 1) the heel 2) the great toe which in these anthropoids is highly developed and projects outwards and 3) the remaining four toes held together

These peculiarities in the structure of the foot especially the highly developed great toe enable the gibbon and the chimpanzee to remain poised on two legs better than the orangutan or gorilla

In man's foot, it will be remembered the main point of contact is the great toe which has not only developed progressively in the course of evolution but has become closely bound to the second digit The gorilla s great toe is not so evolved This ape has a heavy body and when standing or walking on two legs is very unstable and rarely therefore resorts to that position The typical pose of the gorilla and chimpanzee is semi erect practically on all fours the digits of the hands are bent and the ape usually rests his weight on their medial or terminal phal anges

The big toe of the orangutan on account of his purely arboreal way of life, is nothing more than a short thin outgrowth from the foot on which there is usually no toe nail The orangutan s other toes are very long and function in unison like a hook As they are always bent to some extent it is almost impossible to unbend them into one plane with the sole of the foot it is easier to do this with young animals On those rare occasions when he stands or walks on two legs he usually rests his weight on the outer edges of the foot with the toes turned inwards and all of them from the second to the fifth, in a horizontal position but more or less curled up in rings

The young male orangutan Moritz, in the Moscow Zoological Gardens, walked on two legs resting his weight on the entire sole of the foot and on the bent toes it is possible however that he adapted himself to this method of locomotion during his life in captivity Another orangutan in the Moscow Zoological Gar dens, a female named Frina during the first years of her life sometimes walked on the ball of the foot and on the upturned surface of the toes, but later at an age between 5 and 10 years she began to walk on the outer edge of the soles and on her horizontally curled toes The young female chimpanzee Mimosa walked with some of her weight supported by the outer edge of the foot but mostly putting her weight on the triangle sole great toe, and the other toes constricted

An orangutan s gait resembles that of a man on crutches as his legs are short and his movements are made by jerking them forward between the widely outspread arms that give him sup port on the ground The apes have very different gaits standing on two legs they may hop, mark time dance or twist round in one place Varying degrees of transition from quadruped to biped locomotion are found among them in all cases the erect stance is easier for them than for the quadruped monkeys

The living anthropoid apes are extremely interesting animals by studying their methods of arboreal and terrestrial locomotion we can to some extent get a picture of that period of transition when our ancestors began to change their quadruped gait for

erect locomotion The evolution of the ancestors of the living anthropoids differed from that of man s ancestors because they lived in another environment they continued to live in forested areas and perfected methods of locomotion in the trees Their pectoral limbs became longer especially those of the gibbons and orangutan but to a lesser degree in the chimpanzee and gorilla whose ancestors came down to the ground at a later date The pelvic limbs of the great apes on the contrary grew shorter both relatively and absolutely

At the time when the ancestors of the chimpanzee became partially and the ancestors of the gorilla almost entirely terrestrial animals they had become more specialized and were almost incapable of effecting the transition to the erect position that was typical of man s ancestors But the slow progression of the living anthropoids in the trees during which they do not so much climb as walk on the limbs of the trees holding on to higher limbs with their hands is reminiscent of the type of arboreal locomotion that was common to an early stage in the development of the common ancestors of man and the great apes (Gremyatsky 1955)

The development of biped locomotion was connected to a greater or lesser extent with the liberation of the fore limbs from their functions as supports and aids to locomotion As our ancestors adapted themselves to life in open country and to the use of natural objects as implements or weapons their erect gait was perfected

In the early period of the transition to movement in the erect position the adoption of a more or less vertical position by the body must have developed very rapidly in the process of natural selection under the influence of a fiercer struggle for existence in the new conditions especially the interspecies struggle against various terrestrial beasts of prey

Theoretically the further development of terrestrial locomotion could have led our ancestors either back to the semi erect position of the body with the curled fingers of the hands serving as ground supports when moving which would have closed to them the road to humanization or there could have been a very great perfection of locomotion in the erect position which would open the road to humanization and further progress

Our ancestors evolved in the latter way At some stage of evolution they most probably crossed the critical boundary at an accelerated rate after which the progress of evolution in the erect position proceeded more regularly but was still fairly intensive Other, less developed species of fossil apes that had practised erect locomotion but in different natural surroundings apparently never crossed the critical boundary some of them became extinct

and others became the ancestors for example of the chimpanzee with its semi terrestrial or the gorilla with its fully terrestrial mode of life

3 THE WEIGHT OF THE BODY AND THE CENTRE OF GRAVITY IN MAN AND THE APES

Our ancestors transition to erect locomotion was probably complicated by the fact that they belonged to the bigger and heavier types of anthropoid apes Modern man is among the heaviest of the Primates the average weight being between 60 and 75 kg Males often reach a weight of 90 to 100 kg and more (350 400 kg and more in extreme cases) The gorilla is on the average much heavier than man the males having a weight of 100 150 kg with some of them much bigger (up to 200 300 kg) The young mountain gorilla Bobby (figs 48a and 48b), living in Berlin Zoological Gardens weighed 262 5 kg at the age of 10½ years The gibbons cannot compare with man as they weigh from 5 to 20 kg i e the weight of a human child



Fig 48a Young male mountain gorilla (Gorilla gorilla beringei Matschie) Bobby aged 10 years Berlin Zoological Gardens After P Eipper 1935



Fig 48b Young male mountain gorilla Bobby aged 10 years After P Eipper 1935

between six months and five years old The female of the gibbon differs very little in weight from the male

The difference in the weight of the two sexes is very small both in the gibbons and the chimpanzee when compared with the gorilla and orangutan whose females have a weight of from three fifths to two thirds of the males According to Lyon (1911) four male orangutans from Borneo weighed 175, 180, 200 and 260 kg and four females 72 82 88 and 100 kg respectively

In human beings the difference in weight between the two sexes averages 5 to 10 kg European women for example, have an average weight of 56 kg (with individual variations mostly between 38 and 76 kg) and the average weight of men is 64 kg (with individual variations between 42 and 84 kg)

The weight of the human body has a different significance from that of the pronograde mammals as it rests on only two limbs and not on four The relative load on man s legs, there fore, is double that of the quadrupeds When the great apes stand on two legs it is obvious how difficult it is for them to stand or walk in that position They are typically unadapted to lengthy locomotion on two legs over an even surface The centre of gravity in such a pose is much higher and farther forward in the apes than in man this is due especially in the orangutan and the gorilla to the powerful trunk muscular arms big head with its massive jaws, and the huge stomach covered with a thick layer of fatty tissue

If a plumb line be dropped from the ape s centre of gravity it will fall in front of the space occupied by the feet which shows that the animal is unbalanced The muscles of the legs and trunk are not able to support the body in the erect position and the ape rests its hands on the ground and adopts its typical semi quadruped pose The situation is different in the trees where the ape can grasp higher branches with its hands and remain in the upright position for a long time

Man differs from the apes first and foremost by being accus tomed to erect locomotion on an even surface The human organism is adapted to stand for long periods and to walk and run on two legs Man is no longer adept in walking on all fours

Georges Cuvier (1798) wrote that man could not walk on all fours because his eyes would be looking downwards his neck muscles are not strong enough for him to hold his head in the proper position his lower limbs would be raised too high relative to his arms, and his feet are too short for him to use them as animals do using the toes for support his chest being too wide would hamper the free movement of his arms Nor can he climb

as easily as a monkey, because his great toe is not separated from the other toes, or as easily as a cat because his nails are too weak

Man's foot rests on a comparatively small area His centre of gravity is rather high usually at the height of the second or third sacral vertebra With the body in the erect position a plumb line dropped from the centre of gravity falls through a point some 3 cm behind the line joining both coxofemoral articulations and then another 3 cm in front of the medial malleoli and rests on the ground within the area occupied by the feet (V P Vorobyov 1932 M F Ivanitsky 1956)

Man in the erect position is incomparably more stable than the great apes A young child, however, at first stands and walks very uncertainly owing to poorly developed muscles and lack of co ordination in its movements and to its instability which accounts for the frequent falls of young children The very process of transition from the crawling to the walking stage of development shows how long and how difficult it is

The pelvis of the child learning to walk is not yet in the position necessary for developed erect locomotion it is almost in line with the vertebral column and later diverges from this position with the lower part forward, the angle of 50° 60° from the horizontal (30° 40° from the vertebral column) is typical for the more adult The disproportionately large and comparatively heavy head of the infant increases its instability the neck muscles are still comparatively weak and the centre of gravity is higher than that of the adult which again worsens the balance of the child

The infant s transition from the crawling stage to erect walking reminds us of an important moment in the evolution of our ancestors when erect locomotion first began to develop The child on all fours is reminiscent of the more distant of man s ancestors, the quadruped vertebrates Ales Hrdlicka (1932) carried out a special investigation of the peculiarities of crawling with several hundred children He considers that such a method of locomotion typical of young infants is a manifestation of *instinct* inherited from pre human ancestors and that it was developed by much earlier forms of mammals or even the reptiles of the Mesozoic Era

After our ancestors had achieved a certain degree of erect locomotion and with the aid of the liberated hands had turned to the use of natural objects as implements and weapons the development of this new type of activity would have been impossible without a further perfection of the biped habit A heavy club or stone in their hands would help increase their instability on feet that were still too flat and with spines that were still

not curved sufficiently. Individuals that stood most firmly on their feet and were the better masters of their implements would prove better adapted for the struggle for existence; these individuals must have handed down from generation to generation a more stable organization of the body.

4. THE INFERIOR EXTREMITIES

In the course of anthropogenesis the hind limbs of the ape were transformed into the legs of man. The changes were mainly in the character and degree of development of the muscles and in the structure of the straightened knee joint. The structure of the foot also changed: the longitudinal arch appeared in standing and walking, the main support changed from the outer to the inner edge of the foot and the great toe increased in size and grew closer to the others.

A flexible longitudinal arch is the most specific feature of man's foot. It developed in the hominids by means of a reorganization of the foot skeleton accompanied by changes in the muscles and ligaments. The sural quadriheaded and gluteal muscles developed progressively and became the muscular features most specific in man. It was these changes in the former hind limbs that converted them into man's powerful legs that were capable of supporting the bodies of our progressively more erect ancestors when standing, walking and running.

William Gregory (1934) is of the opinion that a foot similar in structure to that of the chimpanzee or gorilla could over a sufficiently long period develop into a human foot under the influence of erect locomotion. Other scholars, G. Miller (1925) and V. V. Bunak (1954) for example, object to this admission; they maintain that during the period of pre-natal development the great toe of the human foetus, according to Leboucq's investigations, shows no signs of opposition to the other toes and that man's foot must be derived from a structure different from that of the apes.

The structure of the human foot is one of the most important and at the same time one of the most difficult features in the explanation of how man became a biped. The liberation of the hands for the use of implements was most intimately dependent on this important biological condition—the development of a flexible walking foot—which in turn took place simultaneously with the conversion of the former prehensile limbs of our ancestors into the lower fulcral limbs of the early hominids.

The change to biped habits was not only facilitated by the preliminary conditions having arisen through the more erect posture of man's ancestors (cruriation) during the arboreal pe-

riod of their life it was brought about mainly by the fierce struggle for existence under new natural conditions of environment.

In the savannahs and later in the open plains ancestral man had to escape carnivorous enemies by vigilance, flight and concealment. He had to raise himself on to his lower limbs to get a view of a more extensive area. In times of danger early men could conceal themselves from their enemies in good time in a grove of trees, for example, could climb trees or could join forces to drive wild beasts away.

It is obvious that under these conditions those herds of our ancestors would survive that were best adapted to life on the ground under the conditions of more or less open territory.

This must have been the case at the time when our ancestors changed the arboreal for a terrestrial way of life; they remained instinctively in the vicinity of small woods, groves and groups of trees. The erect position was probably also developed by the search for food in the form of fruits on low growing trees and bushes and also in hunting animals with the aid of sticks and stones.

The very considerable weight of our ancestors must also have been of great significance in the transition to erect motion. If we assume that they had at that period of evolution a weight of between 40 and 60 kg, each of their upper extremities was released from a weight of 10-15 kg, while each of the lower extremities received a double load that amounted to 20-30 kg. Such a redistribution of weight naturally must not only have led to, but must itself have caused profound changes in physical structure. In the anatomical peculiarities thus engendered the lower extremities underwent a much greater reconstruction than the upper.

The foot of modern man is shaped very differently from the prehensile foot of the apes whose great toes are readily opposable to the others. The great toe of the human foot is no longer opposable to the others and lies more or less parallel to them. It is joined to them by a strong transverse ligament (ligamentum metatarsale transversum) thus differing very greatly from the foot of the chimpanzee (fig. 49) in which the transverse ligament connects only four toes (the second to the fifth). Researches carried out by Henry Raven (1950) however show that the elastic fascia between the chimpanzee's first and second toes is a homologue of the corresponding division of the transverse ligament in man; the fascia is thick and strong.

Another convincing proof of the development of man's foot from that of the ape is the presence of the oblique head of the abductor muscle of the great toe (which is very characteristic of the Primates as distinct from the other mammals). This part

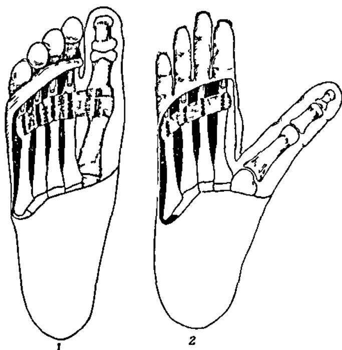


Fig 49 Feet of higher Primates
1—man 2—chimpanzee Transverse metatarsal ligament joins five toes in man and four in chimpanzee After F Jones 1929

of the muscle is less developed in man than in the apes (fig 50) varies very greatly in individuals, is to some extent rudimentary and may even be entirely absent

As a result of the somewhat flattened articular facet of the first metatarsal with the medial cuneiform bone man s great toe can only move very slightly laterally from the others and cannot oppose them like that of the ape which has a saddle joint at this point

Man s thumb on the contrary is readily opposable to the other digits The human hand is in general similar in ... ture to that of the ape But man s ability to do work and ... various implements for the execut... that work hav... about a number of noticeable ch... hand

When man s upper ex... been rel... func tions of locomotion and ... greater ... d with those of the ape, ... le to ... of rotational movements ov... in the and bones of the pectoral ... reed themselves and in the ...

contrary, had the whole weight of the body transferred to them and had some of their former functions reduced They could for example, no longer be used for grasping and scratching the sural and gluteal muscles became much stronger and the femur and tibia became more massive

There is also a difference between man and the ape in the vascular system of the lower extremities Man has no saphenous artery such as the apes have but like them he has a saphenous vein the biggest in his leg The complete absence of the big saphenous artery in man is connected with his erect posture (it is very rarely found in man as an atavism)

As the erect position of the body became a permanent feature the lower extremities lost some of their functions and acquired others their main function now is to support the body when standing or in motion and also during locomotion The ability to hold the body erect and maintain its stability for a long time was one that evolved over a period of hundreds of thousands

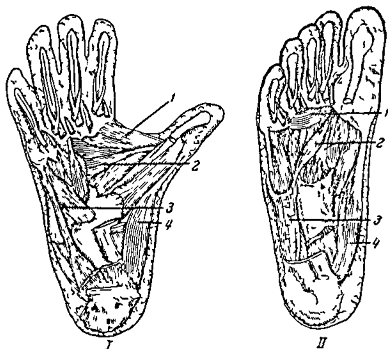


Fig 50 Muscles of plantar surface of foot of (*I*) gorilla and (*II*) man

1 and 2—transverse and oblique heads of abductor muscles of great toes *3* and 4—adductor muscles of little toe and great toe

After H Raven (W Gregory and M Roigneaux 1937)

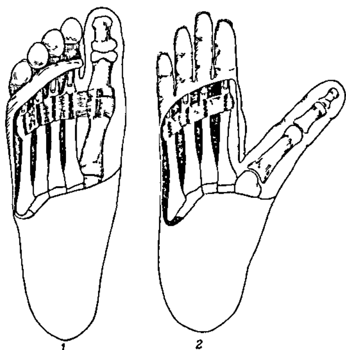


Fig 49 Feet of higher Primates
1—man 2—chimpanzee Transverse metatarsal ligament joins five toes in man and four in chimpanzee After F Jones 1929

of the muscle is less developed in man than in the apes (fig 50) varies very greatly in individuals is to some extent rudimentary and may even be entirely absent

As a result of the somewhat flattened articular facet of the first metatarsal with the medial cuneiform bone, man s great toe can only move very slightly laterally from the others and cannot oppose them like that of the ape which has a saddle joint at this point

Man s thumb on the contrary, is readily opposable to the other digits The human hand is in general similar in structure to that of the ape But man s ability to do work and his use of various implements for the execution of that work have brought about a number of noticeable changes in the hand

When man s upper extremities had been relieved of the functions of locomotion and support to a greater degree as compared with those of the ape they were able to make a number of rotational movements owing to changes in the muscles, tendons and bones of the pectoral girdle in the freed upper extremities themselves and in the hands But the lower extremities on the

contrary, had the whole weight of the body transferred to them and had some of their former functions reduced They could for example, no longer be used for grasping and scratching the sural and gluteal muscles became much stronger and the femur and tibia became more massive

There is also a difference between man and the ape in the vascular system of the lower extremities Man has no saphenous artery such as the apes have but like them he has a saphenous vein the biggest in his leg The complete absence of the big saphenous artery in man is connected with his erect posture (it is very rarely found in man as an atavism)

As the erect position of the body became a permanent feature the lower extremities lost some of their functions and acquired others their main function now is to support the body when standing or in motion and also during locomotion The ability to hold the body erect and maintain its stability for a long time was one that evolved over a period of hundreds of thousands

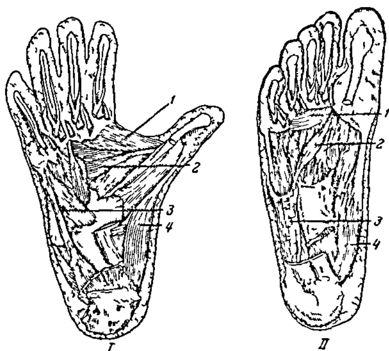


Fig 50 Muscles of plantar surface of foot of (I) gorilla and (II) man

1 and 2—transverse and oblique heads of abductor muscles of great toes 3 and 4—adductor muscles of little toe and great toe

After H Raven (W Gregory and M Roigneaux 1937)

morphological and physiological changes take place in his feet I A Semyonova (1937) studied structural changes that take place from the time the embryo is ten weeks old and during the first two post natal years she found that the greatest change takes place when the child is learning to walk It is difficult for man to stand still or walk for lengthy periods his muscles tire and he is forced to sit down to rest while a heavy quadruped such as a horse, can remain on its feet for twenty four hours or more without injury

Not only the structure of the foot but also its length shows its similarity with those of certain apes and monkeys (the following data are taken from Rudolf Martin s book 1928 Vol 1)

THE LENGTH OF THE FOOT AS A PERCENTAGE OF THE LENGTH OF THE TRUNK (LIMITS OF VARIATIONS AND SOME AVERAGES)

Inhabitants of Baden			
Men	52 0 (46 60)	Marmoset	47 0 41 6
Women	49 8 (41 66)	Rhesus monkey	52 0 47 5
Orangutan	71 6 (62 87)	Baboon	53 3 48 4
Gorilla	58 5 (58 59)	American monkeys	45 2 45 0
Chimpanzee	57 5 (52 62)	Spider monkey	69 0
Gibbon	54 2 (49 65)	Lemurs	43 0 3[illegible] 5

From these data it is clear that man approximates the group of anthropoid apes among which the orangutan with its unusually long foot is an exception as is also the prehensile tailed American spider monkey This peculiarity indicates a high degree of specialization in the orangutan—its adaptation to slow climbing, hanging by its arms from the branches and grasping them with its feet The spider monkey, who hangs from trees by its feet and tail transfers a considerable part of the weight of its body to its hind limbs

Man however, is an exception among the Primates as far as the length of his leg from hip to ankle is concerned (R Martin *idem*)

LENGTH OF THE LEG FROM HIP TO ANKLE AS A PERCENTAGE OF THE LENGTH OF THE TRUNK IN MAN AND OTHER PRIMATES

Inhabitants of Baden			
Men	158 5 (136 185)	Marmoset	99 7 93 2
Women	159 1 (135 197)	Rhesus monkey	110 2 96 2
Gibbon	150 7 (113 1[illegible]9)	Baboon	119 0 111 0
Chimpanzee	113 0 (10[illegible] 120)	American monkeys	9[illegible] 5 91 [illegible]
Gorilla	113 0 (111 115)	Spider monkey	133
Orangutan	112 7 (105 131)	Lemurs	110 0 85 0
Mangabey	105 7 (10[illegible] 108)		

Typical of man's femur or thigh bone is the rough line (linea aspera) on its posterior side which serves to anchor several strongly developed muscles and also the very considerable length of the neck. The angle formed by the neck of the femur and the diaphysis is greater than that of anthropoids because the tip of man's great trochanter is lower and that of the apes higher than the head of the femur. Apart from the greater and lesser trochanter there is sometimes a third trochanter on the human femur which indicates a recession to a type of structure typical of some lower Primates.

Only man is able to straighten his legs at the knee joint completely and for a lengthy period. The chimpanzee can straighten its legs but only for a short time.

The phalanges of the great toe of man, the gorilla, the chimpanzee and the gibbons are the strongest while those of the orangutan are much thinner than those of its other toes. The metatarsal bone of man's big toe has an almost flat articular surface proximal to the medial cuneiform bone which does not allow the toe to make the movements that would be possible with a semi-globular joint.

As this flattened articular surface has been found by Lebouck in the human embryo, it is clear that very great influence was brought to bear on the foot of our ancestors during the hundreds of thousands or even millions of years in which they were adapting themselves to erect locomotion.

5. THE PELVIS, SPINE AND THORAX

At the same time as changes took place in the skeletal structure of our ancestors' lower extremities, changes were also taking place in the structure of the pelvic girdle. The sacral iliac articulation had to become wider and stronger and therefore in man and the apes we find five sacral vertebrae instead of the two or three usual in the lower monkeys.

The human pelvis is more developed in the width than in the length (fig. 51) and the blades of the ilium have large fossae in them. In shape the human pelvis approximates that of the gorilla, chimpanzee and orangutan, while that of the gibbons more closely resembles the pelvis of the lower catarrhine monkeys on account of its elongated shape and shallow fossae in the ilium. In the great apes the length of the pelvic girdle slightly exceeds its width. The widening of the pelvis is directly connected with erect locomotion.

Man's vertical stance and orthograde locomotion is directly dependent on a number of factors, e.g. 1) the strength and width of the pelvis, 2) the strength of its articulation with the sacrum

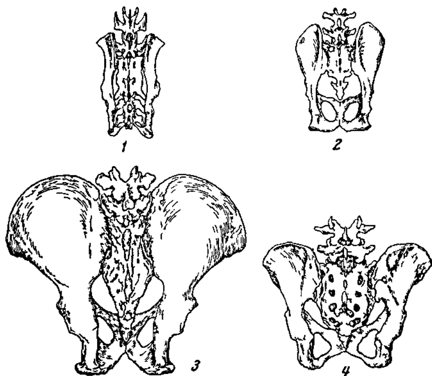


Fig 51 Pelvic girdles of Primates
1—gibbon 2—chimpanzee 3—gorilla 4—man
After W Gregory and M Roigneaux 1937

3) the extent of the deviation of the acetabulum on which depends the angle formed by the neck and diaphysis of the femur (100° 130°) and 4) powerfully developed muscles and tendons of the pelvic region and their special method of attachment

The shape and structure of the human pelvis underwent considerable evolution on account of the head of the human foetus being much larger than that of the ape or monkey embryo Typical of the female pelvis is the wider inlet from the pelvis major (bounded by the blades of the ilium, partly by the lumbar and sacral vertebrae and the superior edge of the symphysis of the pubis) into the pelvis minor (bounded by the remaining part of the sacrum the coccyx inner sides of the ischium and pubis and by the inferior aspect of the pubic concrescence) The head of the foetus is in the region of the pelvis major until the onset of parturition when it must pass through the inlet into the region of the pelvis minor The inlet of the female pelvis is wider than that of the male and the angle is greater between the

branches of the pubes that diverge from the symphysis inferiorly and laterally. This structure facilitates the exit of the foetus from the pelvis minor when the lower part of the sacrum together with the coccyx moves back.

The basic dimensions of the pelvic inlet are 1) the straight conjugate or antero-posterior diameter (from the middle of the superior border on the interior side of the pubic symphysis to the uppermost protruding point of the corresponding sacral vertebra on the promontorium), 2) the transverse diameter, i.e. the greatest distance across the inlet (between the innominate lines), and 3) the oblique diameter. All three dimensions are greater in man than in any of the anthropoids except the gorilla (table 2).

Table 2

DIAMETERS OF THE PELVIS IN MAN AND THE ANTHROPOIDS (cm)

Primates	Conjugate	Transverse	Oblique
Man			
Male	10	11	10.5
Female	11–11.5	13	12
Chimpanzee	12	9.5	12
Gorilla	13.5–14	14	14.5
Orangutan	10	9	10
Gibbon	8–9.5	4–6	5–7

Table 2 shows us that only in the human pelvis can the transverse diameter exceed the conjugate; in the anthropoids the pelvis is somewhat elongated in the antero-posterior direction. The smaller pelvic dimensions of the anthropoids correspond to the size of the foetal head, their progeny being born smaller and lighter in weight than human children. Nevertheless Herman Rohleder (1918), discussing the probability of crossing man with any of the anthropoids, came to the conclusion that in the event of the successful artificial insemination of the female chimpanzee with human semen the hybrid could be born without cesarotomy.

The human pelvis, in addition to its shape, differs from that of the anthropoids in forming a much wider angle with the vertebral column. When the apes assume the erect position the pelvis points downwards, i.e. is in one line with the vertebral column, while that of man is inclined forward and forms an angle of 50°–60° with the horizontal.

The long axis of the pelvis of all Primates except man is more or less parallel to the long axis of the body, as is that of a new born infant this latter fact explains the position of the infant lying on its back with its legs raised slightly bent at the knees and with the soles of the feet turned inwards This position is also typical of newborn apes When the infant is lying on its back its pelvis has the ventral side uppermost and the legs and knees can only be forcibly straightened because such an action causes the spine to bend very considerably As the child grows the pubic articulation of the pelvis inclines forward in respect of the vertebral column (V V Bunak 1923) Further develop ment gives the pelvis its final shape which serves to support the abdominal viscera as well as the foetus with the placenta mem branes and fluid during pregnancy

In the lower monkeys that usually move on all fours the weight of the abdominal viscera (in females the weight of the embryo placenta and fluid must be added) is supported by the lower wall of the abdomen the pelvis being higher In the anthropoid apes the pelvis plays a part in supporting the abdom inal viscera when the trunk is in a more or less vertical posi tion during locomotion along the branches of trees or on the ground The same is true of some of the lower Primates (lemur sifaka and tarsier) or the American spider monkey (Ateles E Geoffroy) and short tailed monkeys (Cacajao Lesson) for which a more or less vertical position of the body is by no means unusual

The long process of development in the erect position has still not fully adapted man to this type of locomotion as can be seen from the frequent cases of hernia caused by lifting or carrying weights and cases of prolapse of the uterus during difficult births frequent cases of appendicitis intestinal inversion and other manifestations During the formation of the human body in the course of anthropogenesis the internal organs were dis placed by the force of gravity acting on them in a direction different by 90° from that experienced during the quadruped locomotion of man s most distant ancestors The method of attachment of the abdominal viscera also changed especially the attachment of the intestines to the mesentery and the dor sal attachment of the latter

During pregnancy in women gravity pulls the foetus towards the pelvis and not only towards the abdominal wall as was the case with our ancestors the extinct quadruped mammals

The *reconstruction of the female pelvis enabled it to perform* two functions more or less satisfactorily it serves as a support for the trunk and at the same time provides a sufficiently wide opening for the large head of the foetus during parturition In

modern man cases occur in which the pelvis outlet does not correspond to the size of the head of the foetus and births in such cases may be of a pathological nature

Very extensive changes took place in the human spine in the transition to erect locomotion it was at first curved like that of the lower monkeys then almost straight like that of the anthropoids until finally it assumed a number of curves more suitable to support the head trunk and arms and better suited to dampen the jolts caused by walking The number of vertebrae in the various divisions of man's vertebral column differs little from that of the anthropoids but sharply from that of the monkeys with their long tails and quadruped locomotion The latter have a greater number of vertebrae in the coccygeal division but in the sacral division where the spine is articulated with the pelvis their number is smaller (Table 3)

Table 3

NUMBER OF VERTEBRAE IN THE DIVISIONS OF THE SPINE OF MAN AND OTHER PRIMATES (FIGURES IN BRACKETS SHOW EXTREME LIMITS) DATA TAKEN FROM VARIOUS AUTHORS

Primates	Cervical	Thoracic	Lumbar	Sacral	Coccygeal	Total
Man	7	12(11 13)	5(6)	5	4 6	33-35
Chimpanzee	7	13(12 14)	3(4)	5(6)	3 5(2)	29-35
Gorilla	7	13(12 14)	3(4)	5(6)	3 5(2)	29-35
Orangutan	7	12(11 13)	5(3)	5	2 3	29-33
Gibbon	7	13(14)	5	3	1 4	29 32
Old World monkey	7	12 14	7 5	2 3	2 26	29-57
Capuchin monkey	7	13 14	6-5	3	14 26	42 51
Marmoset and tamarin	7	12 13	7 6	3	25	53 55
Tarsier	7	13 14	6	3	21 23(27)	50-57
Lemur	7	12(18)	7	3 4	6 20	35 58
Tree shrew (Tupaia)	7	13	6(5 7)	3 2	22 28	52 58
Pen tailed tree shrew (Ptilocercus)	7	14	5	3	31	60

Table 3 shows that there has been a reduction in the number of coccygeal vertebrae in all groups of Primates except the Hapalidae tarsiers and tupaias and that the anthropoids have even fewer than man All Primates have 7 cervical vertebrae as do almost all other mammals The number of ribs is usually not greater than 13 although the lemurs as a rule have 12 and the lorises as many as 18

The number of lumbar vertebrae in quadruped Primates is greater than in man and the apes but their sacral vertebrae are fewer The number of the latter was increased by a reduction in the number of lumbar vertebrae and provides a stronger sacro pelvic articulation Of the Lemuroid group the Indridae have four sacral vertebrae instead of three these prosimians include the sifakas (Propithecus Bennet) an animal with short fore limbs that usually moves in the erect position both in the trees and on the ground The number of vertebrae in man and the anthropoids is always within the 32 36 range, although in other Primates it is nearly always over 50 and in the tupaias is as high as 60

Man s vertebral column has a series of very specific curvatures, of which there are four—cervical, spinal or thoracic lum bar and sacral (the latter includes the coccyx) A curvature of the spinal column with forward convexity is called lordosis and the backward convexity is called kyphosis Some people have slight curvature to the right others to the left in the thoracic division of the vertebral column Such lateral curvature is called scoliosis and is usually slight and within the bounds of physio logical norms, the same applies to lordosis and kyphosis When highly developed all three produce deformities of the trunk

The curvatures present in man s spine are the direct result of the straightening of his body In the course of individual devel opment cervical lordosis develops when the infant begins to hold up its head and lumbar lordosis comes late when the child begins to walk on two legs (V V Bunak, 1940)

The vertebral column of quadrupeds is adapted to a different sort of locomotion both in the pronograde animals whose trunk is in a horizontal position and in the orthograde (e g the anthro poid apes) whose bodies are in an inclined or erect position depending on their method of terrestrial and arboreal locomo tion The vertebral column of the lower monkeys and half monkeys has only cervical and thoracic curvatures whose devel opment is mainly due to the method of holding the head In other words the vertebral column of the majority of the Pri mates has the form of an arch usual for quadruped Mam malia The lumbar and sacral curves are met with only in the anthropoid apes and are very slightly developed the cervical and thoracic curves in these animals are also less clearly expressed

During quadrupedal locomotion the spinous processes of the vertebral column usually point backwards the remainder point ing forwards The projections change direction on one of the vertebrae which is known as anticlinal The lemurs tarsiers and lower catarrhine monkeys usually have an anticlinal tenth

vertebra while in the New World monkeys the place varies but is usually in the lumbar division of the vertebral column

The human skeleton not only differs greatly from that of the apes by the peculiarities of the vertebral column there are also great differences in the shape and structure of the thorax, the pectoral girdle and the upper extremities

The human thorax consists of 12 pairs of ribs and a sternum with which only 7 pairs of ribs articulate (the upper or true ribs) the 8th 9th and 10th pairs (false ribs) are attached to the 7th and to each other by costal cartilages the 11th and 12th pairs (the floating ribs) are unattached anteriorly and are very short especially the lower pair a phenomenon that is noticed in other Primates as well as in man

In the human embryo 13 pairs of ribs develop, a peculiarity that approximates man to the chimpanzee and gorilla but the latter both have the same number of ribs in the adult stage (the gorilla, more often than the chimpanzee may have 12 pairs of ribs) The 13th pair of ribs is reduced in the human foetus Some adult humans possess 13 pairs and the extra pair (or single rib) usually grow from the first lumbar vertebra more rarely from the seventh cervical There was a case in Holland of 13 pairs of ribs having been discovered in several members of the same family

K Kuhne (1935) distinguishes types of vertebral column that vary cranially and caudally To the first type belong cases of variations in the number of vertebrae in the upper division of the spine e g cases of a seventh cervical rib Kühne places cases of ribs on the nineteenth vertebra i e the first lumbar vertebra in the second category

In the course of evolution the thorax of our ancestors had the number of ribs reduced from 13 to 12 It also became wider and flatter In the human foetus the transverse diameter of the thorax is greater than the antero posterior diameter, in the infant they are almost equal and in the adult the former again exceeds the latter (see the investigations of N V Popova Latkina 1957)

The sternum consists of three segments the body the manubrium and the xiphoid process The body of the sternum in anthropoids and in man is short and wide and its division into segments is usually more noticeable The sternum of the lower monkeys has a rod like shape and the segments of its body are clearly defined the thorax is usually well rounded although in the majority of cases is not so narrow as that which is typical of ground living quadrupeds The arboreal life of Primates has given their arms a wider range of movement than those of many other arboreal animals

The clavicles articulate mediad with the manubrium of the sternum and laterally with the scapulae with which they form

the shoulder girdle The presence of the clavicles is typical of all Primates and is a point in which they differ from many other mammals The ungulates, for example, do not possess a clavicle due to the development of a specific means of locomotion employing highly specialized extremities that move in an antero posterior direction

The scapula or shoulder blade of man is wider than it is long a feature that is, to a lesser degree also typical of anthropoid apes In other Primates its length is greater than its width (A K Koveshnikova, 1928) The scapula lies in a bed of muscles that make possible the very diverse movements that only the arm of man can perform

6 THE SUPERIOR EXTREMITIES

The bones of man s upper extremities are much thinner than *those of his lower limbs*

The upper extremity has three divisions—the arm the fore *arm (consisting of the radius and ulna) and the hand (consisting of the 8 carpal bones of the wrist the 5 metacarpal bones and the 14 phalangeal bones of the digits)* The latter have 3 phalanges each with the exception of the thumb which has only *two*

The longest of man's fingers is the middle or third finger followed *by either the fourth or the forefinger the little finger* and the thumb being the shortest The most usual digital formula is 3>4>2>5>1 and is the same as that of *the apes When the* fourth finger is longer than the forefinger the hand is said to be ulnar and when the reverse is the case it is *radial* These names have been adopted because the third finger is on the side of the ulna and the forefinger on that of the radius

To determine the type of hand it must be held with the long axis of the middle finger forming a direct continuation of the long axis of the forearm if the hand is inclined outwards the third finger may be level with the middle finger

The radial form of hand is common to children in the first *years of life whereas the ulnar form predominates in adults* (data by M V Volotskoi, 1924) The ulnar form is typical for *all apes except the gibbons among whom 75 per cent have* the radial form According to L P Astanin s data the typical *human hand has a strengthened radial division especially the* first arch the fingers are long relative to the metacarpals and *the distal phalanges have become thickened by work* (Astanin 1951 1952)

In many respects the human hand is the not very greatly changed grasping extremity of the anthropoid ape All the digits

are furnished with well developed flat nails The narrowest nail is on the little finger, the others are even broader than those of the gorilla The dynamics of the human fingers are highly differentiated there is great independence of movement in each of them a feature in which man differs greatly from the other Primates Even the digits of the anthropoid hand are more dependent on each other in their movements

The human shoulder articulation allowing the circumduction of the arm is more highly developed than that of the apes The rotation of the forearm moreover permits man to make a much more complete circular motion with the hand—the movements of pronation palm downwards and supination, palm upwards (M A Gremyatsky 1941, V P Yakimov 1946)

These movements of the hand and arm are essential to many forms of work man has the greatest range of movement and agility

Man s wrist like those of the chimpanzee and gorilla has no free central bone such as that which forms a separate element in the wrist of the orangutan and the gibbons the Asiatic apes therefore approximate the lower monkeys in this respect

The length of man s hand is only about a third of that of his trunk the same is true of the hand of the rhesus monkey and

Table 4

LENGTH OF THE DIVISIONS OF THE UPPER (FORE) EXTREMITIES IN PERCENTAGES OF THE LENGTH OF THE TRUNK IN MAN AND THE OTHER PRIMATES

Primates	Upper Arm	Forearm	Hand
Inhabitants of Baden			
Men	65 (57 73)	50 9 (45 59)	36 8 (32 43)
Women	61 5 (44 76)	46 5 (38 62)	35 7 (30 45)
Gibbon	90 7 (81 103)	97 8 (83 113)	58 1 (48 72)
Orangutan	81 8 (76 95)	78 4 (73 91)	63 4 (56 71)
Gorilla	73 0 (70 76)	60 5 (59 62)	55 0 (53 57)
Chimpanzee	73 5 (58 68)	59 1 (56 61)	57 5 (51 62)
Guenon mangabey and leaf monkeys	42 5 39 5	45 0 38 2	29 7 26 0
Rhesus monkey	50 0 42 5	51 6 42 0	38 1 31 4
Baboon	54 6 49 0	57 2 53 6	37 0 31 9
New World monkeys	46 0 36 6	46 0 31 7	29 0 26 6
Spider monkey	72	68	51
Lemurs	39 3 31 7	38 3 32 0	29 4 25 7

the baboon Other lower catarrhine monkeys the New World monkeys and the lemurs, have a hand that is less than one third of the trunk the spider monkey s is a half, that of the great apes from one half to two thirds and that of the gibbons almost three quarters of the length of the trunk

The length of man's forearm and upper arm, the latter being longer than the former, approximates that of the gorilla and the chimpanzee In the other Primates there is little difference and the forearm may even be somewhat longer than the upper arm, especially in the case of the orangutan whose arms are one and a half times and the gibbon whose arms are twice the length of the trunk (see table 4 data taken from R Martin s book, 1928)

An interesting atavism is occasionally found in the human humerus—the entepicondyloid foramen which is typical for the majority of Primates It is found in the tupaias almost all the lemurs (except, perhaps the Artocebus Gray) the tarsiers some of the Hapale especially the lion marmoset (Leontocebus rosalia Linnaeus) in all the cebus monkeys except the spider monkeys (Ateles) brown woolly spider monkeys (Brachiteles Ateles arachnoides E Geoffroy and allied forms) and the howlers (Alouatta) This foramen is not found in the other lower (catarrhine) monkeys or in the anthropoids In those cases where it is found in man it normally consists of a pair of bony projections joined by a tendinous band The brachial artery and the medial nerve usually pass under the band as in the Primates in which it is usually present

A specific feature of the human humerus is the very considerable twist or torsion, relative to its long axis in the proximal part of the bone The articulating surface is turned inwards because the scapula has its joint cavity turned laterally more than downwards the latter position being common to all other Primates This torsion of the humerus is found only in man and the anthropoid apes, but in the latter it is not well developed

Man s descent from an arboreal pithecoid type is manifested not only in the adult The manual prehension of a newborn infant for example, is astonishing, the child can hang for a long time with its fingers grasping a stick or a finger, as has been established by Henry Drummond L Robinson and other investigators Drummond studied 60 children at ages varying from one hour to one month from birth All the children remained suspended in the air more than 10 seconds, holding on to a stick 2 cm thick or to the investigator s finger An infant that has just been born is capable of hanging from 30 to 60 seconds Infants three weeks old showed the greatest ability—many held on for 1½ minutes and in individual cases as long

as 2 min 35 secs They hung in the air with their legs bent at right angles to the body The infants did not display any signs of fear and only cried out when strength failed them (R S Lull 1929)

By observing monkeys one sees that they use their fore limbs for the prehension of food as well as for climbing They use the hands to tear the rind off fruits and to carry food to the mouth they pick up various objects and hold them close to the eyes and study them attentively When in repose a monkey uses its hands to search energetically for insects and thorns in the fur of another The monkey s hind limbs serve mainly as organs of support and locomotion but in many cases the monkeys use them to scratch themselves to grasp food and to perform many other acts

In the early stages of transition to the erect posture our an cestors most likely made frequent use of their fore limbs in locomotion Their direct participation as supports when walking or when standing still on the ground gradually decreased until it finally ceased altogether Biped locomotion, on the other hand provided the upper extremities with new functions which must be especially linked up with the use of natural objects as tools The later manufacture of artificial tools had a still greater effect on the development of the hand

Engels gives the hand as the work organ an extremely im portant part in the further development of man

The hand itself was transformed and perfected as man trans formed his environment Engels says Thus the hand is not only the organ of labour *it is also the product of labour* Only by labour by adaptation to ever new operations by inheritance of the thus acquired special development of muscles ligaments and over longer periods of time bones as well and by the ever renewed employment of these inherited improvements in new more and more complicated operations has the human hand at tained the high degree of perfection that has enabled it to conjure into being the pictures of Raphael the statues of Thorwaldsen the music of Paganini "*

Although the human hand has retained points of great simi larity with that of the apes, its powerful, easily opposable thumb and the strongly differentiated (in the functional sense) fingers make it a specific and highly perfected organ The higher development of the human hand as compared with that of other Primates is primarily due to its no longer being needed as a means of support and to the influence of the work factor (Da nilova, 1965)

* F Engels *Dialectics of Nature* Moscow 1954 p 230

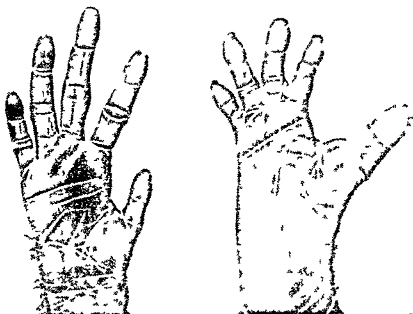


Fig 52 Hand (left) and foot of chimpanzee
After A Schultz 1936

The multitude of delicate and varied operations that the human hand can perform are far beyond the scope of the ape hand (fig 52) because of its somewhat different structure and innervation and also because of the differences in the central nervous system Some physiologists have studied the action of electric current on the motor region of the upper extremity and its fingers in the precentral convolution of the frontal lobe of the cerebral cortex The experiments showed that it is exceedingly difficult to get a monkey s forefinger to bend without causing any movement of the second and third fingers whereas it is a comparatively simple matter to bring about the isolated action of the human forefinger In this respect the great apes also show less ability than man In the early stages of man s evolution his hand was poorly developed it was capable of only the simplest manipulations that differed little in character from the ape s manipulation of natural objects Very gradually over an extremely long period as the ape became a man work operations grew more complicated as the hands became more perfect

Pre human forms of work in distant Pliocene times were of an animal nature In the search for food or in defence against beasts of prey, man s ancestors instinctively grasped a stick or stone that was lying handy and used it as a tool or a weapon

As the manipulation of natural objects as tools became regular and customary, certain stones or sticks proved more convenient for their purpose For example a stone whose edge had been chipped in use could become so sharp that its value as an instrument of offence or defence suddenly increased Such instances could have led our ancestors to the deliberate treatment of natural tools The oldest techniques of stone working however developed with extreme slowness

The development of work techniques would have been impossible unless the hand had been freed of the task of supporting the body but it would have been equally impossible without the further adaptation of the legs to support the body in a vertical position Erect locomotion in turn brought about a reconstruction of the organism and its progressive development is a typical feature of man s physical evolution Ancestral man was first able to walk on two legs, because the upper extremities of his ancestors had not been so well adapted to walking as his lower extremities The new functional activities of the upper extremities therefore must be regarded as one of the most important circumstances facilitating orthograde locomotion The liberation and transformation of the arms therefore acquires the significance of the central moment in anthropogenesis insofar as the hand constitutes the organ of work, and social labour, in turn created man

In the course of anthropogenesis the human organism underwent great structural change relative to the fossil ape organism from which it evolved In the end the organism of the Hominidae reached the peak of its development in modern man, *Homo sapiens* in whom the main specific structural features are a markedly curved vertebral column with four curvatures a skull balanced on the vertebral column with a much larger cranium and smaller facial region a highly developed brain especially the cerebral cortex a highly developed external nose a wide chest flattened in the antero posterior direction a highly differentiated hand as the organ of work and foot as a support for the body many muscular peculiarities that characterize the musculature as having been adapted to hold the body in the erect position, a wealth of facial muscles capable of a variety of expressions

The ancestors of man could not have gone over to a biped gait without a considerable reconstruction or adaptation of the muscular system of their lower extremities and trunk, great changes also took place in the muscles of the upper extremities the neck and the head

The muscles of the anthropoid apes are well developed and very resilient but do not stand out in relief The muscles of the

chimpanzee have greater lifting power than those of man The gorilla has greater physical strength than any of the other Primates the muscular system of the anthropoids, however is adapted to tree climbing and differs from that of man, adapted to erect terrestrial locomotion

There are some muscles necessary for tree climbing that are strongly developed both in the apes and in the lower monkeys such as the scapular cervical muscles and those connecting the upper arm and back These are not found in man except in rare cases and then only in a rudimentary form But in man s upper extremities there are independent thumb muscles (abductor pollicis longus) that in the majority of apes are more or less closely linked with the common flexor muscles of the fingers Due to the erect posture on only the lower extremities the plantar muscles of the foot have been greatly reduced but the gluteal femoral and sural muscles have all progressively developed

The development of new elements in man s muscular system took place parallel to the reduction of others One of the many examples that could be given is the reduction of the caudal and the powerful development of the gluteal muscles

The muscular system of modern man and the skeleton to which it is attached have changed together in the course of evolution and make possible the present more evolved type of biped gait Man's erect posture in walking is, from the standpoint of biomechanics, a very original type of locomotion The legs owing to the corresponding structure of the hip and knee joints are in one line with the body (and not at right angles, as in the quadrupeds) when a man is standing upright The head is well balanced on the spine due to the special attachment of the skull to the neck

7 THE PROPORTIONS OF THE BODY AND ASYMMETRY

As our ancestors gained proficiency in erect locomotion the human body developed proportions that differ greatly from those of the ape (some of these peculiarities have been discussed above) Typical of man are shorter upper and longer lower extremities than those of the ape whose fore limbs are longer than the hinds When we study the relationship between the length of the legs and trunk we see that man s legs are relatively longer than the ape s

Hind limbs that are longer than fore limbs are the general rule among Primates The tarsiers and the sifakas lemurs possess extremely short fore limbs as compared with their hinds

and bear some resemblance to the jerboa (Alactaga) and kangaroo Long hind and short fore limbs are found (apart from the anthropoid apes) only in the American spider monkeys (Ateles)

In respect of the relative length of the legs as compared with the trunk the spider monkey gibbon and orangutan most closely approximate man the chimpanzee and gorilla are further removed, on the other hand, in respect of the relative length of the upper extremities (expressed as a percentage of the length of the trunk) the gorilla and chimpanzee more nearly approximate man and the orangutan and gibbon are further removed Schultz (1934) studying the differences between mountain and coastal gorillas found that the former had shorter arms than the latter and even went to the extent of calling them short armed The sharp differences between the proportions of the body of man and the anthropoids are partially absent in a newborn child the infant s arms are longer than its legs the reach of the arms is greater than the length of the body and the trunk is longer than the arms or legs

Apart from length relationships it is important to examine the width ratios especially those of the thorax and pelvis In this field man forms a single group with the anthropoid apes on account of his broad chest and pelvis the whole group is to some extent orthograde thus differing from the other Primates As far as the development in the breadth is concerned the gorilla is closest and the gibbon furthest from man Erect locomotion has given man a wide pelvis with legs far apart at the hip joint to ensure stability of stance and motion

The female pelvis, wider than that of the male took form during the adaptation of the female organism to childbearing at the same time the extremely wide female pelvis is the cause of somewhat reduced stability during fast movement and of a moderate knock kneed posture that is typical of many women

It is quite probable that the simian like ancestors of the anthropoids and man were apes with fore limbs relatively longer than the hinds This difference later increased to a greater degree in the ancestors of the gibbons and orangutans but did not reach such proportions as those of the common ancestors of the gorilla, the chimpanzee and man Man s later ancestors came down from the trees and adopted a terrestrial way of life and this led to locomotion on the hind limbs Natural selection gradually changed the proportions of their extremities until they were the reverse of those of the anthropoid apes

Erect locomotion and work have brought about many points of asymmetry in man s body and these constitute one of his

distinguishing features It has long been known that the right and left halves of the human body are not fully symmetrical in shape and structure Take, for example man s face the right and left halves quite frequently have noticeable differences If two full face photographs one of which has been printed from the reverse side of the negative, are cut, and the left and right halves joined together pictures of the left and right faces can be obtained In many cases the right and left photographs of the face are so different that they could be taken for those of two different people

A good example of the combination of morphological and functional asymmetry is to be found in man s hands The major ity of people are right handed there being, perhaps no more than 2 to 5 per cent of left handed people Among children the number of left handed is much higher up to 10 per cent while some investigators maintain that as many as 25 per cent of all infants are left handed (Wilhelm Ludwig 1932) Up to the age of seven months the child is usually ambidextrous It becomes right or left handed during the first seven years of its life Training and the use of various articles and instruments adapted for use only with the right hand, however, compel con genitally left handed children to become functionally right handed

The priority use of the right hand affects its structure and the right arm may become longer than the left by several mil limetres or even centimetres The preferential use of the right hand affects the structure of other organs particularly that of the brain The corresponding zone situated in the left hemi sphere of right handed people has a more strongly developed cortex In left handed people it is by nature somewhat under developed as compared with the corresponding zone of the right hemisphere

It is difficult to observe any preferential use of any one hand in the apes Some investigators report right handedness in the anthropoids Viktor Henschen (1926), for example mentions the fact reported to him by Karl Hagenbeck, that a gorilla in Hamburg Zoo used its right hand for throwing By a study of the skulls of gorillas Henschen draws the conclusion that the left cerebral hemisphere is more developed than the right in many individuals G Z Roginsky (1953) reported that some monkeys make preferential use of the right hand which is stronger than the left (the same is true of apes Cf G Lefrou 1956)

Monkeys are as a general rule ambidextrous They use both hands with more or less equal frequency The equal use of both fore limbs is also typical of all other mammals It seems likely

that in various work processes in offence and defence and in hunting the preferential use of the right hand became for some reason or other more convenient and this had great significance in the development of right handedness (Kobler, 1932)

Apart from being dextro or sinistromanual man may be dextropedal or sinistropedal This form of asymmetry depends on which foot has preferential use in standing or walking In dextropedal people the right foot is usually more developed and longer This is partially explained by the fact that erect locomotion facilitated and is today still affecting the preferential use of one of the feet It is known that fatigue is felt less when the weight is brought to bear on one particular leg quadrupeds support their weight more or less evenly on the right and left limbs

Schultz (1937) studied the asymmetry of extremities on the skeletons of 753 people and 530 higher apes and macaques The percentage of distribution and relative number of asymmetric manifestations in the long bones of the upper (or fore) extremities (and clavicles) was found to be greatly different for human beings and monkeys In the lower (or hind) extremities the percentage of asymmetry was found to be the same for man the apes and the lower monkeys Schultz rightly assumes that the preferential and regular use of the right or left hand is observed only in man and that it is incomparably more frequent and more intense than the use of one particular leg when standing or walking Asymmetry is much more strongly developed in modern man than in any ape and is found in many organs including the eyes

A good example of anatomical and physiological asymmetry in man may be observed when people lost in the open in a snow storm or in complete darkness walk in a circle and return to their starting point The same thing happens to a man who loses his way in a thick forest or a swimmer in the open sea if he has no means of judging the points of the compass A right handed man will wander to the left counterclockwise while a left handed man will move to the right, in a clockwise direction

The development of erect locomotion that accompanied the transition of our ancestors to life in open country had great influence on the construction of the entire organism including the features of asymmetry that are so numerous in the human body

No less important in the humanizing of the ape than erect locomotion was the great development of the brain in our immediate ancestors the biped great apes that lived at the end of the Tertiary Period If the brains of those apes had not, by that time reached a comparatively high level of development

it is improbable that they would have turned to the use of tools even in the exigencies of the struggle to obtain food and ward off beasts of prey, and it is improbable that they would have provided material for the making of man The housing of the brain the skull has undergone a most peculiar evolution under the influence of erect locomotion, the development of the brain and changes in diet

8 THE SKULL

The basic difference between the skull of man and that of the other Primates consists in the neurocranium being considerably larger than the facial region Only one New World monkey the squirrel or death's head monkey (Saimiri Voigt) for example has a skull approximating that of man, this is due to the foramen magnum being situated nearly in the centre of the occiput and there is a brain case that is much larger than the facial skeleton The howling monkeys baboons, orangutan and gorilla, on the contrary, have a muzzle that is much larger than the neurocranium

Modern man s skull has very little external relief This is particularly true of the female skull that can, in the majority of cases be easily distinguished from the male by its comparatively thin bones lighter weight and pronounced frontal protuberances with rounded contours (Alekseyev Debets 1964) The skulls of the chimpanzee and the gibbon have a less strongly expressed relief than those of other anthropoids as have also the female orangutans and gorillas but the males of these giant animals possess massive skulls with a framework that consists of crests bony bars and arches (figs 53a and 53b)

Man's temporal bone has a number of typical, strongly developed mammiform (mastoid) and stylus shaped (styloid) processes that are not found in most of the other Primates The external osseous auditory canal is much shorter in man than in the apes The greater part of the temporal bone has a rough surface, the temporal masticatory muscle has its origin here and on the parietal bone and is joined to the coronoid process of the mandible Male gorillas and orangutans have very strongly developed temporal muscles that not only originate from the temporal and parietal bones but also from the longitudinal (sagittal) crest that in some individuals is as much as 5 cm high, and also from an occipital transverse crest that is almost as massive

The antero superior edge of the temporal bones forms part of the pterion the typical junction of sutures with its specific pattern that is formed in different ways in the vicinity of the



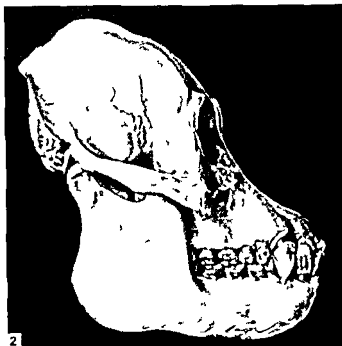


Fig. 53a Skulls of Asian anthropoids
1—gibbon (Hylobates lar L.) *2*—Bornean orang utan (Pongo pygmaeus Lacépède)





Fig 53b Skulls of African anthropoids
3—Cameroons chimpanzee (Pan troglodytes Blumenbach) 4—coastal gorilla (Gorilla gorilla Savage and Wyman)
1/2 1/3 1/3 1/4 natural size After D Elliot 1913

temporal fossa on the skulls of different Primates In the tupaias lemurs and tarsiers the junction of the temporal bone with the alisphenoid or great wing of the sphenoid, is typical in New World monkeys the zygomatic bone often makes contact with the temporal In the majority of lower Old World mon keys the temporal bone joins the frontal which separates the temporal from the great wing of the sphenoid and from the zygomatic this structure of the pterion is frequently observed in the gorilla and chimpanzee but rarely in the orangutan or gibbon

In the majority of cases the pterion in man is a suture formed between the temporal bone and the alisphenoid or great wing of the sphenoid In this respect the gibbon and orangutan more closely approximate man the gorilla and chimpanzee being further removed It is probable that the pterion has no great independent philogenetic significance, but is more likely a reflection of general processes taking place during the recon struction of the skull (Weinert 1932) In Primates the pattern of the pterion to a certain extent depends on the level of devel opment of the zygomatic

M F Ashley Montagu (1933) notes the importance of the level of development of the zygomatic bone for the formation of the pterion By the study of several thousand skulls belonging to various Primates from the tupaias to the anthro poids and man he established sixteen basic types of pterion structure In particular Ashley Montagu found that the shape of the tupaia pterion is similar to that of the lemurs and that of the gorilla to that of man Other investigators note the influence that the development of the temporal region of the brain in Primates has on the formation of the pterional region In the same way the powerful development of man s parietal bone has brought about the separation of the frontal from the temporal bone

The protuberances on the frontal bone are typical for man also typical are the weakly developed supra orbital ridges that differ so greatly from the massive bony bar or supraorbital torus found on the skulls of the gorilla and chimpanzee, as well as those of the Pithecanthropus and Neanderthal man, the an cestors of modern man It sometimes happens that the metopic suture of the frontal bone does not close but remains open as in the uterine period of life The metopic suture is usually found on the skulls of the lower Primates and its appearance in man may be regarded as an atavism On account of the growing capacity of the human brain case however the appearance of the metopic suture has partially the character of a new formation (Uryson, 1959)

There is a large opening the foramen magnum in the occipital bone, almost in the centre of the skull base When the skull is in a certain position known as the Frankfurt or German horizontal position with the upper edges of the auditory orifices and the lower edges of the orbits in a horizontal plane, the foramen magnum is also more or less horizontal although in the majority of cases it is inclined slightly forward It is placed further back in the anthropoids but does not reach the raised edge of the occipital bone The lower monkeys and the other Primates and mammals have the foramen magnum a long way back and more or less strongly inclined posteriorly

The horizontal position of the foramen magnum shows that man is able to keep his head balanced with the aid of neck muscles that are relatively less powerful than those of the anthropoids For this reason the human skull has no saggital crest such as that observed in a highly developed form in the male gorilla and orangutan It is true that some human skulls mainly male have a noticeably developed occipital crest fusing with the exterior occipital protuberance and the nuchal (nape) lines and corresponding to the occipital crest of other Primates

The facial region of man s skull has many features that are typical We must make special mention of the considerable development of the paired nasal bones the inferior parts of which project slightly forward and as a rule are not joined this is a specific feature of the human skull The nasal bones of all monkeys including the anthropoids grow together at a very early age usually in the pre natal period The development of man s nasal bones in the width more closely resembles that of the chimpanzee or gorilla in the orangutan they are narrower and their long pointed ends even penetrate the frontal bone

On the left and right maxillae below the zygomatic bones there are depressions known as the canine fossae These are not found in fossil man or in the apes and monkeys In the human embryo four bones are formed in place of the maxillae—two maxillary and two incisor bones (corresponding to the inter maxillary bones in other mammals) At the time of birth however there is usually no trace of an incisor bone suture

As early as the eighteenth century anatomists noted the absence of an incisor bone in man as one of the ways in which the structure of his body differs absolutely from all other mammals Even then however there were some scholars who had noticed that the human skull on rare occasions showed traces of incisor sutures on the hard palate indicating the division of the maxillary into three parts Still less frequent are cases of a suture between the incisor bone and the maxillary bone on

the anterior side The honour of discovering the incisor bon the skull of an adult is usually given to Wolfgang Goethe, great poet and scholar Although traces of the incisor bone rarely found on the skull of an adult, it is clearly seen a separate bone in the uterine period of development and may regarded as being identical with the intermaxillary bone other mammals

The lower jaw or mandible of modern man has a horses shape and is furnished with a clearly defined chin protuberar The other Primates with the exception of the web toed gibb or Siamangs (Symphalangus Gloger) there is not even suggestion of a chin and the two halves of the mandible eitl form an acute angle or they are parallel to each other The t parts of the lemur's mandible remain unsutured throughout t animal s life The fossae for articulation with the corona processes of the mandible are much deeper in man than in t anthropoids

The greater development of the brain case and lesser dev opment of the facial skeleton is typical for hominids and is tl final stage of evolution in fossil mammals in which the inver proportions of the skull were normal The evolution of the sku of fossil anthropoids had also been going on for millions years evidence of this is to be seen in the many finds that hav been made from the Proconsul and Dryopithecus to the Australo pithecus As the features typical of anthropoid apes such a the chimpanzee and gorilla, grew less pronounced—e g, th sloping forehead the heavy supraorbital torus and the power ful mandible—the specific features of the hominid skull tool shape as the brain developed the jaws weakened and there wa a progressive development of erect locomotion

The apes on their part inherited many of the specific feature of the skull especially the facial region of the primitive fossi mammals and still more ancient reptiles amphibians and fish William Gregory (1936) is quite right in saying that although the ignorant Hebrew priests maintained that man was created in the image of God, modern science has shown that the human face consists of the same elements as that of the gorilla and that the skeleton of the face of both man and the anthropoids is inherited from a long line of lower vertebrates

The skull of the male orangutan and gorilla if one may judge by the strongly developed facial region the heavy bony crests on the cranium and the external relief in general is the culmi nating point of one line in the development of higher Primates while the human skull is the highest development in the opposite direction The development of crests and muscles on the skull is due to a number of different causes among which the more

important are the dimensions of the animal's body, species and sex differences, the type of locomotion and diet (V V Bunak 1923) The ability to bite through the hard skins of fruits or chew the hard parts of plants depends on the powerful development of the mandible and its muscles which in turn requires a thickening of the vault of the skull and an earlier suturing of its bones as well as stronger bony ridges All these things taken together limit the free development of the brain

Among the higher ape like Primates the gibbons, the chimpanzee and man stand out as a separate group The gibbons when moving in the trees or on the ground hold their bodies in a more or less vertical position They are furthermore, rather small, and, as we have already seen grow to a height of only 90 100 cm with a weight of 5 8 kg The gibbon's head is held in position by weaker muscles The chimpanzee whose skull is smaller than that of the gorilla or orangutan possesses a less strongly developed facial region and a less powerful muscular system to hold the head in position The chimpanzee moreover like other anthropoids, frequently moves in a semi erect position and not like a typical quadruped From this it follows that the comparatively weak relief of the chimpanzee's skull is partially to be explained by the dimensions of its body and the type of locomotion common to it (V I Kochetkova 1953)

Of the lower monkeys let us examine the baboon The skull of this terrestrial monkey has a strongly developed snout or facial division and a poorly evolved brain case the South

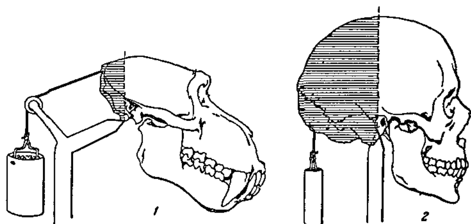


Fig 54 Skulls
1—baboon 2—man Weights show difference in muscular strength required to hold the head on vertebral column in its normal position Diagram by Th Mollison, 1932

African baboon (chakma) for example, has a small cranium and especially powerful jaws The baboon has a thickened cranial vault on the exterior surface of which are noticeable ridges for the attachment of strongly developed masticatory and other muscles

The masticatory muscles of the baboon are very strong They are attached to the zygomatic temporal and parietal bones the cranium is noticeably rough and there are ridges and even crests especially in the males who are much larger than the females The masticatory muscles close the jaws with their strong teeth very tightly and are sufficient to enable the baboon to deal an enemy a dangerous or even a fatal bite The inhabitants of Africa often have to turn out in a body well armed, to defend their village against plundering baboons Despite the persecution however the baboons constitute a flourishing biological group

The head of the baboon furnished with strong jaws and a long snout has powerful neck muscles that hold the head in a horizontal position This powerful group of muscles is attached to the many rough surfaces bony ridges and crests on the occipital and parietal bones of the skull

The structure of the baboon s skull therefore differs greatly from that of man In comparing the skulls of the baboon and man special stress is laid on the importance of the dimensions of the body the type of locomotion and the food habits (fig 54)

W D Wallis (1931) a British scholar considers that the evolution of man s skull in prehistoric times was primarily due to changes of diet and the way of life In particular, he says many of the specific features of man s skull developed under the influence of changes in the properties of food artificially prepared The action of fire made the food softer and also brought about changes in its chemical properties Wallis idea is worthy of attention (see also article by Khrisanfova 1958)

Food that has been artificially prepared and softened can be assimilated by a masticatory apparatus that is not very strongly developed Tools gradually play a more and more important part by replacing man s teeth and cutting up the food preparatory to eating it As its work of mastication decreased the lower jaw of the earliest men was already becoming shorter and wider and assuming its horseshoe shape the crowns of the canines were reduced and the molars especially the third became smaller The size of the processes on the mandible was reduced as was the distance between the condyloid and the coronary processes of the ramus The chin protuberance developed due to a reduction of the limbic ridge (limbus alveolaris)

of the mandible greater than that of its body and also to the development of articulate speech

Together with the mandible the maxillary bone and the hard palate changed their shape The dimensions thickness and degree of projection of the supraorbital ridge were also reduced The various irregularities bony bars and crests that gave the skulls of our ancestors their external relief nearly all disappeared The skull gradually became smoother but throughout the entire period of human evolution the skull of the male has always had a more strongly expressed relief than that of the female The general changes in the skull mentioned above however, are much greater than sex differences The lesser relief and thinner walls of the cranium provided an opportunity for the brain to develop and the human skull, especially the neurocranium, gradually became wider Furthermore, the progressive development of the brain led to a reduction of its relief the skull became higher the forehead steeper and the skull assumed a rounder form (judging by the considerable length of the cranium of the skulls of the majority of ancient men man s nearest ancestors most likely possessed the long type of skull that is they were dolichocephalic)

The preparation of food and changes in its character were of very great significance to the course taken by anthropogenesis Our arboreal ancestors were predominantly frugivorous anthropoids like the modern great apes who live on fruits berries nuts young shoots and leaves Man's immediate ancestors such as the Australopithecus apparently included various small animals in their diet

Earliest man s tools undoubtedly also served as weapons It is quite safe to assume that the first men on Earth were already hunters of small and medium sized animals Engels considers that flesh used as food facilitated the development of man

Ancient man is pictured to us as a peculiar sort of predatory being' whose strength and the sharpness of whose teeth unlike those of other animals diminished in the course of natural selection instead of increasing and were more than made up for by the advantage of artificial instruments Our ancient gregarious ancestors, the possessors of weapons had acquired such great possibilities for attack and defence that the reduction in the strength of their jaws and teeth could have had but little significance

In the course of man s evolution his tools that is his artificial organs underwent greater changes than the natural organs of the body An animal has limited possibilities of adapting itself to changes in its natural surroundings but man can perfect himself endlessly by making his work processes and his tools

more complicated as the community in which he lives develops This is one of the greatest features distinguishing man from all other living beings The use of flesh as food did much to develop the use of fire Man went over from the consumption of the raw flesh of the animals he killed to the baking and boiling of meat which, of course, made it much more digestible As a consequence of this his jaws continued to grow smaller and weaker At the same time changes took place in the abdominal viscera For example, with the transition from vegetable to animal food or to a mixture of both the length of the intestines must have changed

The intestines of modern man are several times longer than his trunk the length varies in representatives of different races from 740 to 1 000 cm According to data published by Edward Loth (1931) the shortest intestines in man have a length of 655 cm and the longest 1,180 cm The intestines of a 7 year old chimpanzee that I measured had a length of 828 5 cm with the length of the trunk at 122 5 cm i e , they were 6 76 times longer than the trunk According to the table compiled by M A Magnan (1912) and cited by Loth the ratio in man varies from 5 0 to 6 3 times

RATIO OF THE LENGTH OF THE INTESTINES TO THE LENGTH OF THE TRUNK OF MAMMALS OF VARIOUS FOOD HABITS AND OF MAN

(Taken from E Loth 1931)

Insectivora	2 5	Omnivorous	6 8
Carnivora	3 7	Frugivorous	7 1
Piscivorous	4 6	Graminivorous	8 7
Man	5 0 6 3	Herbivorous	15 1

This shows that man's intestines are closest in length to those of the omnivorous animals

The influence brought to bear on the bodies of our ancestors by changes in food habits was no small one The above mentioned changes in the human skull are reminiscent of those taking place in certain domestic animals This latter circumstance together with the mutability of many physical features in man for example the colour of the skin and the physique provided the basis for Eugen Fischer s theory of domestication (1914)

According to Fischer the points of similarity in the bodily structure of man and the domestic animals may be explained by the fact that the new conditions of life affected man in the same way as they affect domestic animals Such an explanation is first of all one sided it ignores the qualitative differences between the formation of man and the evolution of domestic

animals, breeds of the latter being developed by the artificial selection of the best individuals those that are the best pro ducers Artificial selection played no part at all in the develop ment of man

The brains of some domestic animals are smaller than those of their wild relatives The brain of the goat for example has been reduced by about one third In the hominids however the brain grew in size and complexity Fischer s theory of domestica tion is unacceptable because it makes the process of anthro *pogenesis a purely biological one without taking into account its specific nature*

It is typical of man's evolution that the ape characteristics in the structure of his body gradually disappeared and the chief human features such as biped gait a stable stance on two feet the differentiation of the digits of the hand and the highly evolved cerebral cortex developed under the influence of work ing activities they became still more sharply expressed in the course of the adaptation of man to the social conditions he him self had created and his gradual conquest of nature

Some of the features of the physical structure of man for example the shortening of the facial region of the skull took place under the influence of a group of factors differing from that influencing similar changes in certain mammals that have been intensively domesticated Apparently Fischer had in mind the similarity of outward signs the so called convergent devel opment

Engels was of the opinion that the ancestral type of man must have been a species of ape that stood higher than the others in its intellectuality and adaptability In the life of ancient man the hunting of various mammals must have played an important part in providing the means of subsistence in addition to the gathering of grubs insects moths, larvae, bird s and reptile eggs and fledgeling birds

Beginning with the small easily obtainable slow moving edible animals ancient man gradually extended his radius of action to the less easily obtainable and often swift small mam mals The capture of the latter and of birds required the devel opment of special skill in the throwing of stones and sticks The hunting of medium sized and big animals however developed very slowly It was only by the end of the ice age that man had learned to actually hunt such huge animals as the mammoth In many cases early man did not disdain to eat the flesh of sick or dead animals

Their work activity at first exercised mainly to obtain food brought about certain new relations between people that were later more clearly expressed as economic or production relations

Thus the transition to hunting and the use of flesh as food exercised a progressive influence on the formation of man and facilitated the development of certain specific features in the structure of the human body Orthograde locomotion was per fected the fixation of the head changed the jaws were reduced and the capacity of the cranium increased The entire skull gradually lost its ape features and at the same time became more and more human (Y Y Roginsky 1934)

The human skull acquires a number of progressive features at the same time losing those that were retrogressive The same may be said of the development of the brain and the whole human organism Progressive and retrogressive manifestations are typical of the dialectical course of development not only of man and of all organisms but of all nature in general

C H A P T E R T W O

THE BRAIN AND HIGHER NERVOUS ACTIVITY IN MAN AND THE APES

1 THE BRAIN AND ANALYSERS OF MAN AND THE APES

The nervous system emerged and developed in the course of the evolution of the animal kingdom and reached its highest level in the vertebrates, especially in the higher mammals with their complex brains

The Darwin theory brought great clarity to this question Engels, writing of the importance of the evolutionary treatment of the structure and activities of the human brain in the light of Darwin s theory, said The evolutionary series of organisms from a few simple forms to increasingly multifarious and com plicated ones as it confronts us today and extending right up to man, has been established as far as its main features are concerned Thanks to this not only has it become possible to explain the existing stock of organic products of nature but the basis has also been provided for the prehistory of the human mind, for tracing the various stages of its development from the simple protoplasm—structureless but sensitive to stimuli—of the lowest organisms right up to the thinking human brain Without this prehistory however the existence of the thinking brain remains a miracle *

The reflex theory, elaborated by Ivan Pavlov based partially on Darwinism, is of primary importance to an understanding of the development of the brain and analysers of man and his ancestors in the course of phylogenetic evolution In connection with this we must mention that the following questions are still of importance to present day Darwinism the extent of the influence and effect of the environment on the organism es pecially in the early stages of its individual development the transmission of acquired features by heredity, the mechanism of the emergence of new species as the result of qualitative

---

* F Engels *Dialectics of Nature* Moscow 1954 p 265

mutations due to an accumulation of anatomical and physiological changes in the organism the presence and extent of the interspecies and intraspecies struggle in the vegetable and animal kingdoms

As far as the animal kingdom is concerned, special attention must be paid to the development of the nervous system, since it effects a special type of contact with the environment and plays a growingly important part in evolution in the infinite process of adaptation to constantly changing living conditions Pavlov s physiological theories, especially that treating of reflexes give us a new concept of the connections between an organism and its environment

The external world that surrounds the animal and on the one hand, gives rise to endless conditioned reflexes, on the other hand just as continuously suppresses them overlays them with other manifestations of life that at any given moment better meet the requirements of the fundamental law of life—the equilibrium of the surroundings' wrote Pavlov, meaning by equilibrium the continuous adaptation of an organism to its surroundings In this way" he continues, the cerebral hemispheres constitute both an organ analysing irritations and an organ forming new reflexes, new bonds They constitute that organ of the animal organism that is specialized for the purpose of constantly effecting a more and more perfect equilibrium of the organism with the environment an organ for the corresponding immediate reaction to the most varied combinations and variations of the manifestations of the external world and to a certain degree, a special organ for the continuous further development of the animal organism '

Pavlov established the fact that the central ends of the analysers, connected with the reception of external excitations are situated in the cerebral hemispheres the parts of the analysers ending on the periphery at the eyes, ears skin, nose, mouth etc, are connected with impulses originating in the skeletal musculature and the internal organs

The evolutionary development of the analysers in Primates was closely dependent on the transformation of the cerebral cortex, where their central zones are situated and with the reconstruction of the brain *in toto* (Shevchenko 1959) Some information of the general developmental characteristics of the analysers in monkeys under the influence of natural factors will enable us to get a better conception of the distinguishing features of the human brain (fig 55) It may be safely assumed that truly human traits emerged mainly under the influence of work and speech

Engels says First labour, after it and then with it articulate

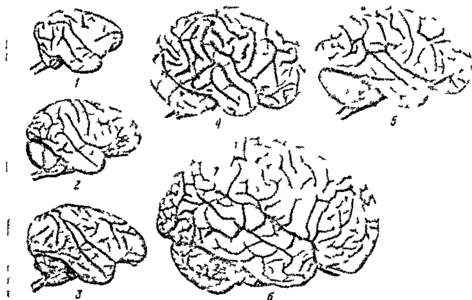


Fig 55 Simian and human brains
1—spider monkey (Ateles geoffroyi Hasselt und Kuhl) 2—baboon (Cynocephalus hamadryas Fr Cuvier) 3—agile gibbon (Hylobates agilis Fr Cuvier) 4—common chimpanzee (Pan troglodytes Blumenbach) 5—orangutan (Simia satyrus L) 6—modern man (Homo sapiens L) Right lateral aspect
After Th Mollison 1932

speech—these were the two essential stimuli under the influence of which the brain of the ape gradually changed into that of man, which for all its similarity to the former is far larger and more perfect Hand in hand with the development of the brain went the development of its most immediate instruments—the sense organs "*

The powerful development of man's brain was in the first place facilitated by the progressive anatomical and physiological peculiarities of the brain of the extinct apes his nearest ancestors At the same time other factors of great importance were—the influence of the new terrestrial way of life the transition to erect locomotion and a meat diet, the more intense gregarious habits and lastly the tool using habit that began with the use of stones and sticks to obtain food and ward off the attacks of wild beasts As we have already mentioned the

* F Engels *Dialectics of Nature* Moscow 1954 p 233

orthograde position of the body lessened the load on the cervical muscles which had been at a maximum in our most ancient quadruped ancestors when the head was held in a horizontal position The occipital crest one of the most important points of attachment for the cervical muscles ceased to develop and became lower and smoother The whole external wall of the cranium became smoother, with greatly reduced relief, a factor of extreme importance for the progressive development of the brain and its component parts in particular for the increase of its dimensions Here, of course it is not only a matter of quantitative growth but what is more important of the internal transformation and greater intricacy of the brain, down to its finest fibres

The perfection of erect locomotion and the growing complication of the functions performed by the hands with the aid of tools facilitated the progressive development of the brain and the corresponding mutation of the skull But the final impulse was given at that remarkable turning point in man's history when our ancestors began making tools when real work activity was instituted when new and more powerful developmental factors appeared one after another

In this way therefore, erect locomotion facilitated even if indirectly, the development of the brain of man s forebears particularly because it freed the fore limbs of the functions of support and locomotion giving them new grasping and striking motions it brought about a special perfection and refinement of the epidermal sensory organs in the form of papillary lines and patterns on the hands and feet

Vision became sharper and this enabled pre man better to find food and observe his enemies it extended the area over which he could see objects in the world that surrounded him All this provided the analysers or sensory apparatus with a new structure and functions this in turn brought about a transformation of the cerebral cortex and to a certain extent, of pre man s entire organism

Here we must mention that Pavlov considered the property of extreme plasticity possessed by the nervous system to be of the greatest importance The Pavlov Michurin principles of general biology are of special significance in analysing the phylogenic development of the brain and of the peripheral parts of the central nervous system that underwent great changes in man s remote ancestors the primitive monkeys and in the still more ancient half monkeys (including tarsiers) that in the course of the sixty million years of the Tertiary Period underwent very great evolutionary changes that gave rise to monkeys apes and man

The most varied methods must be applied in the study of the anatomical and physiological peculiarities of the brain An important place is occupied by macro and microscopic research especially of the cerebral cortex that most important part of the central nervous system

Principles for the cyto architectonic investigation of the cerebral cortex of man and animals were established by V A Betz a famous Russian nineteenth century anatomist who discovered the great pyramidal cells (the motor cells of Betz) in the layer of the cortex now known as the fifth (V) of the six basic layers counting from the external surface (fig 56) Betz paved the way for a study of the functions and delicate structures of the brain thus providing a basis for the division of the cortex from the standpoint of comparative morphology

The cardinal idea of the interconnection of form and function was further developed by V A Bekhterev, L B Blumenau and the later progressive cerebrologists

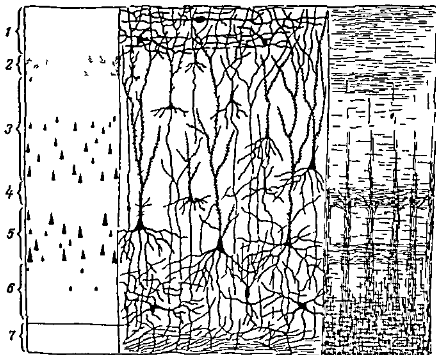


Fig 56 Stratification of human cerebral cortex

Strata 1—molecular 2—outer granular 3—small and medium pyramidal cells 4—inner granular 5—great pyramidal cells of Betz 6—polymorphous cells 7—white matter

After E Villiger 1930

In the U S S R today the brain is being studied by biologists physiologists and other scientific workers on the basis of the Sechenov Pavlov theories The work that has been done and is still continuing at the Institute of the Brain and at the Institute of Anthropology of Moscow State University as well as at other research centres shows that valuable information is obtainable from the study of the cerebral cortices of man the apes and the monkeys in their historical, evolutionary aspect (Y G Shevchenko 1959) In particular, important qualitative differences have been discovered in the star shaped cells of the third layer of the human cerebral cortex (Polyakov 1958)

The volume weight and external relief of the brain are also of great importance to anthropological research The volume of the human brain varies with the individual from 1,000 c c to 2 000 c c As far as group variations affecting races or the territorial distribution of anthropological types are concerned they are between the limits of 1 200 and 1 600 c c Brains with a volume of less than 1 000 c c are rarely met with in man although cases have been described of individuals, who irrespective of their race have been in no way different from their fellows but whose brains after death, have proved to be 900 c c 800 c c or even less

Such great variability distinguishes man from the wild animals in whom variations in the volume and weight of the brain are never more than about 5 10 per cent Domestic animals show variations greater than those of wild animals but they are still not to be compared with those of man to this must be added that the dimensions of the brain in certain species and breeds have been reduced in captivity

The volume of the brain and the capacity of the cranium are not equal there being between the brain and the skull the cranial meninges (dura mater arachnoid and pia mater), the blood vessels and the cerebrospinal fluid which make the difference in volume quite substantial In the adult the difference is from 5 to 10 per cent and in old people as much as 15 per cent in other words, there is a difference of 100 c c or even 200 c c

The weight of the brain may be judged by its volume its specific weight being slightly more than that of water Most of the mass of the brain is contained in the cerebral hemispheres (87 per cent) and in the cerebellum (11 per cent) Not only the absolute but also the relative weight of the brain places man far in advance of the apes (fig 57) being ten times that of the gorilla four times that of the chimpanzee six times that of the orangutan and twice that of the gibbon

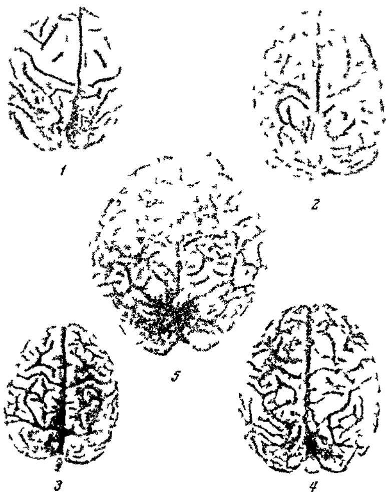


Fig. 57. Primate brains.
1—baboon; 2—gibbon; 3—chimpanzee; 4—gorilla; 5—man.
After F. Tilney, 1928

It is true that the weight of the brain relative to that of the whole body is greater in some New World monkeys than in man, the human ratio being 1:35, that of the capuchin monkey 1:18 and that of the spider monkey 1:15. It must, however, be borne in mind that the smaller the mammal, the greater the relative weight of its brain. In view of this specific regularity, the ratios for man and the apes given above will be easily understood.

Furthermore, although the brain of such a huge animal as the Indian elephant weighs four times as much as that of man

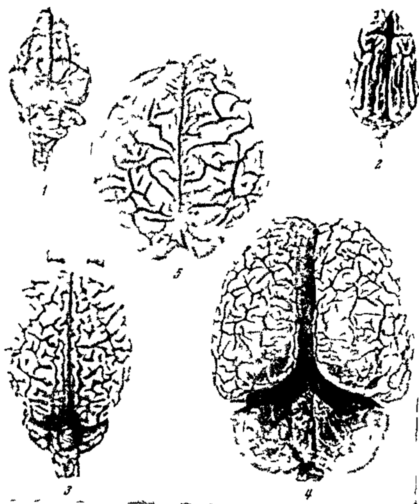


Fig 58 Human and mammal brains
1—kangaroo 2—dog 3—horse 4—elephant 5—man
After F Tilney 1928

(fig 58) its relative weight (1 560) is almost fifteen times less

The absolute and relative weights of man s brain give him such a prominent place in the animal kingdom that this alone is sufficient to place him far above any of the animals named

The specific features of the human brain may be observed during its ontogenetic development (B N Klosovsky 1954) which, on the other hand clearly demonstrates man s close relationship to the higher apes The inception of cortical devel

opment takes place in the central part of the hemispheres and proceeds radially over the surface to the peripheries it differentiates into layers of which there are as many as six Then comes a great change in the further development of the cortex in the foetus—namely the appearance of regions areas and subareas together with their convolutions (gyri) and fissures (fissurae) and furrows (sulci) in the cortex

The inception of the fissures and convolutions says G I Polyakov (1937, 1949) follows after profound cyto architectonic changes in the neocortex that constitutes up to 95 per cent of the total volume of the human cortex

At the beginning of the fourth lunar month of the uterine period of development the first basirhinal or olfactory fissure appears After this the sylvian fossa begins to form and some fissures and furrows emerge on the temporal frontal and parietal parts of the lateral sides of the cerebral hemispheres in the vicinity of this lateral fossa (fig 59)

After the *sylvian fossa in both man and the anthropoids the* central sulcus (Roland) appears in the lower monkeys the formation of the sylvian fossa is followed by that of the parallel sulcus which corresponds to the superior temporal sulcus in man In the fifth lunar month several other sulci are noticeable on the cerebral hemispheres of the human foetus In the following month the edges of the sylvian fossa begin to close and the central lobe of the brain gradually sinks to the bottom of the fossa In the course of uterine development a pattern of fissures and sulci is gradually formed on the cortex of the hemispheres that is typical of those animals that are gyrencephalic i e, whose brains are more or less covered with convolutions as distinct from the lissencephalic those whose brains have a smooth surface

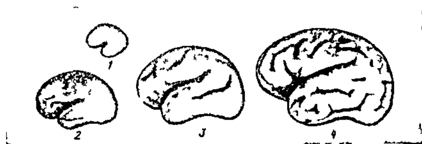


Fig 59 Development of human brain
1—foetus at 3 months 2—foetus at 5 months 3—foetus at 7 months 4—newborn Left lateral aspect From casts at Moscow Museum of Anthropology

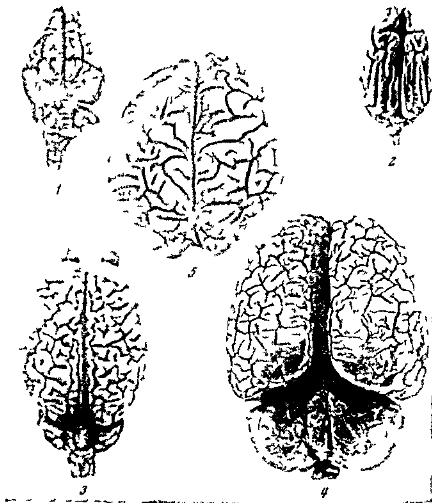


Fig 58 Human and mammal brains
1—kangaroo 2—dog 3—horse 4—elephant 5—man
After F Tilney 1928

(fig 58) its relative weight (1 560) is almost fifteen times less

The absolute and relative weights of man's brain give him such a prominent place in the animal kingdom that this alone is sufficient to place him far above any of the animals named

The specific features of the human brain may be observed during its ontogenetic development (B N Klosovsky, 1951) which, on the other hand clearly demonstrates man's close relationship to the higher apes The inception of cortical devel

opment takes place in the central part of the hemispheres and proceeds radially over the surface to the peripheries it differentiates into layers of which there are as many as six Then comes a great change in the further development of the cortex in the foetus—namely the *appearance of regions areas and subareas* together with their convolutions (gyri) and fissures (fissurae) and furrows (sulci) in the cortex

The inception of the fissures and convolutions says G I Polyakov (1937, 1949) follows after profound cytoarchitectonic changes in the neocortex that constitutes up to 95 per cent of the total volume of the human cortex

At the beginning of the fourth lunar month of the uterine period of development the first basirhinal or olfactory fissure appears After this the sylvian fossa begins to form and some fissures and furrows emerge on the temporal frontal and parietal parts of the lateral sides of the cerebral hemispheres in the vicinity of this lateral fossa (fig 59)

After the sylvian fossa in both man and the anthropoids the central sulcus (Roland) appears in the lower monkeys the formation of the sylvian fossa is followed by that of the parallel sulcus which corresponds to the superior temporal sulcus in man In the fifth lunar month several other sulci are noticeable on the cerebral hemispheres of the human foetus In the following month the edges of the sylvian fossa begin to close and the central lobe of the brain gradually sinks to the bottom of the fossa In the course of uterine development a pattern of fissures and sulci is gradually formed on the cortex of the hemispheres that is typical of those animals that are gyrencephalic i e whose brains are more or less covered with convolutions as distinct from the lissencephalic those whose brains have a *smooth surface*

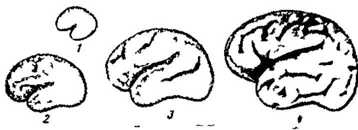


Fig 59 Development of human [illegible]

1—foetus at 3 months 2—foetus at 5 [illegible] at 7 months 4—newborn Left lateral [illegible] Museum of Anthr[illegible]

Not only these but many other specific features of the onto genetic development of the brain of the human foetus bear witness to the stages of phylogenetic development through which our ancestors have passed beginning from the lowest type of Chordata

At the time of parturition the brain of the foetus already possesses the sulci and gyri disposed and developed in such a way that it might serve as the prototype of the adult brain it still has before it almost twenty years of development by way of increasing its dimensions and complicating its surface pattern by the appearance of additional furrows of the second and third order (figs 60 62) The young of Placentalia are born with a sufficiently formed brain which ceases to grow soon after birth The ontogenetic development of the animal brain ceases on the whole at an early age so that man in this respect too constitutes an exception This can be seen even by comparing the brains of man and the apes both by weight and by volume the human child s brain is only about a quarter of that of the adult while that of the young ape is about a half or even two thirds of that of the adult

The brain of a great ape such as the orangutan, acquires considerable weight during the first two or three years of the animal s life but later there is little growth The changes that take place in the weight of the human brain at different ages were studied by V V Bunak (1936) Using a complicated method and special computations he arrived at the conclusion that former conceptions of the greatest cerebralization in the infant were incorrect and that the relative mass of the brain reaches the maximum at the age of 3 to 5 years after which the ratio gradually and to a very small extent undergoes reduction owing to the more intensive growth of the mass of the body

Here are some data relating to the ratio of brain weight to total body weight at various ages taken from *Human Biology* by G A Harrison J S Weiner J M Tanner and N A Barnicot (1964) In the first place the brain even at the early foetal stage is closer in weight to what it will be at full adult growth than any other part of the body with the possible exception of the eye The brain therefore develops more rapidly than the other parts The weight of the brain of a newborn infant is 25 per cent of that of an adult at six months 50 per cent at five years 90 per cent and at 10 years 95 per cent while the overall weight of the body is 5 per cent of the adult weight at birth and 50 per cent at the age of 10 years

In the course of further growth the sex differences in the weight of the brain become more pronounced the average for an adult male is 1,400 gr and for an adult female 1 270 gr,

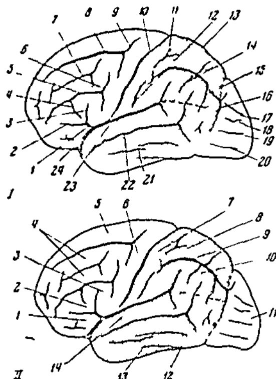


Fig 60 *Lateral surface of human cerebral hemisphere*
I—furrows (sulci) and *II*—convolutions (gyri) Left unshaded area—frontal lobe densely shaded area—parietal dotted—temporal and right unshaded—occipital lobe *1* and *2*—anterior horizontal branch at the beginning of the sylvian fissure *3—anterior ascending branch of 1 and 2 between* lines to *3* and *4*—frontal pole *4*—radial sulcus *5*—inferior frontal sulcus *6*—inferior precentral sulcus *7*—medial frontal sulcus *8*—superior frontal sulcus *9*—superior precentral sulcus *10*—central sulcus (of Roland) *11* and *12*—postcentral sulcus *13*—interparietal sulcus *14*—first intermediate sulcus from *13* (on other side of *13* is point of departure of parietal sulcus) between *14* and *15* at edge between parietal and *occipital lobes parietal occipital fissure can be seen 15*—second intermediate sulcus *16*—transverse occipital sulcus *17 18 19 20*—superior and lateral occipital sulci inferiorly from *20*—occipital pole between occipital and parietal lobes the preoccipital incision and on temporal lobe the inferior temporal sulcus are visible *21*—medial temporal sulcus *22*—superior temporal sulcus (its anterior end extending anteriorly to left joins temporal pole) *23*—posterior branch of sylvian fissure *24*—stem of sylvian fissure *II 1*—inferior frontal gyrus orbital part *2*—idem triangular part *3*—idem opercular part *4*—medial frontal *5*—superior frontal *6*—anterior central *7*—posterior central *8*—superior parietal *9*—superior marginal gyrus of inferior part of parietal lobe *10*—idem angular gyrus *11*—descending gyrus of occipital lobe *12*—inferior temporal *13*—*medial temporal 14—superior temporal gyrus* After E Villiger 1930

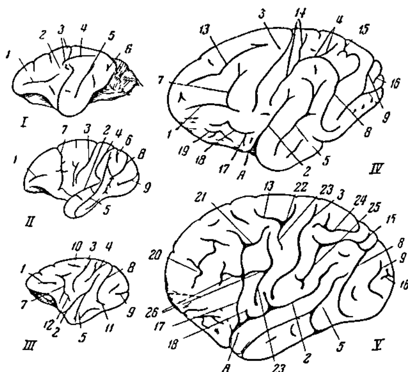


Fig 61 Disposition of the sulci on cerebral hemispheres of Primates

I—black lemur (Lemur macaco L) II—brown capuchin (Cebus fatuellus L) III—pig tailed macaque (Macacus nemestrinus L) IV—Hoolock gibbon (Hylobates hoolock Harlan) V—common chimpanzee (Pan troglodytes Blumenbach) A—exterior region of central lobe 1—sulcus rectus 2—sylvian fissure 3—central sulcus 4—interior intraparietal 5—parallel 6—transverse occipital 7—inferior precentral or arched 8—simian 9—lateral occipital 10—superior precentral 11—inferior occipital 12—inferior transverse 13—superior frontal 14—postcentral 15—parieto occipital 16—calcarine fissure 17—fronto orbital sulcus 18—superior boundary 19—orbital 20—fronto marginal Wernicke 21—medial frontal 22—superior precentral 23—inferior precentral 24—supplementary and intraparietal 25—inferior postcentral 26—inferior frontal sulcus

After Ch Sonntag 1924

i e 130 gr less If we take into consideration the fact that the human brain varies within the limits of several hundred cubic centimetres and that the level of intellectual development does not depend on the absolute weight of the brain then no importance can be attached to this difference

To this must be added that the relative weight of the female brain is usually somewhat greater than that of the male brain

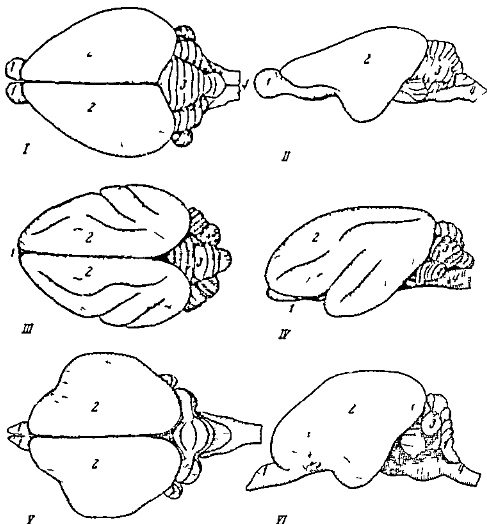


Fig. 62. Brains of lower Primates

I, II—Gunther's tree shrew or lesser tupaia (Tupaia minor Gunther). *III, IV*—black lemur (Lemur macaco L.). *V, VI*—spectral tarsier (Tarsius spectrum Storr).

1—olfactory areas; *2*—frontal lobes; *3*—cerebellum; *4*—medulla oblongata.

After F. Wood Jones, 1929

since the man on the average is 8.9 kg heavier than the woman, the average height of a man being about ten centimetres greater than the woman's average. The same is true of such anthropoid apes as the gorilla and the orangutan: the males are much heavier than the females and the relative weight of the brain is greater in the female than in the male.

Among the specific features of the human brain is also the noticeable asymmetry in the shape and structure of the hemispheres Right handed people have a left cerebral hemisphere that is more highly developed than the right, with the motor speech area located on the former The brain of an anthropoid is not so asymmetric as that of man although cases of the preferential development of the left hemisphere have been noted, the left hemisphere of the young male orangutan Moritz at the Moscow Zoological Gardens proved somewhat longer than the right (the animal died in 1933)

Facts that have been established by the study of the dimensions of the cranial vault of man and the apes enable us to draw the conclusion that man is not the only possessor of an asymmetric brain Apparently this feature was present in a less developed form in the fossil pre men of the Tertiary Period such as the Australopithecus It is possible that the greater asymmetry of the human brain developed correlatively with *the perfection of erect locomotion the liberation of* the hands and the preferential use of the right hand in the work activities of the hominids

2 DEVELOPMENT OF THE PERIPHERAL REGIONS OF THE ANALYSERS

It may safely be assumed that the immediate ancestors of the Primates were the small terrestrial insectivorous mammals that lived at the end of the Cretaceous Period of the Mesozoic Era more than sixty million years ago These animals had a strongly developed olfactory organ as can be judged from their long snouts and the abundance of nasal conchae and also by what were probably huge olfactory brain lobes in other words the peripheral and central regions of the olfactory analyser were well formed and functioned excellently

The olfactory analyser of the apes is poorly developed and its peripheral part, the nose is seldom strongly expressed in man a weak olfactory sense is combined with a big nose that has a strong bone and cartilage framework

The development of the exterior part of the human nose a specific formation in both shape and structure depends to a considerable extent on the upward development of the superior parts of the maxillae, the vertical plate (lamina perpendicularis) of the ethmoid bone and the vomer combined with the recession of the alveolar process (limbus alveolaris) of the maxilla This feature is not found in monkeys even in the anthropoids The nose of the gorilla or gibbon with its strong cartilaginous skeleton most nearly approximates that of man

According to Weber (1936) the nasal skeleton of the ape con sists of the same bones and cartilages as that of man the absence of an externally projecting nose is due to the strong development of the ape s upper jaw the narrowness of the nasal foramen the shape of the nasal cartilages and the small size and slight projection of the nasal bones

The above description applies also to the proboscis monkey of Borneo, an animal belonging to the sub family of Semno pithecinae Its long soft mobile nose is more in the nature of a trunk There is a long deep longitudinal furrow at the end and it can be distended at times of rage or sexual excitement In elderly individuals the nose hangs down below the chin

There are several other langurs (Semnopithecus) that have noses for example, the douc langur (Pigathrix nemaeus Lin naeus) living on the island of Hainan and upper Cochinchina the short tailed langur (Simias concolor Miller) from the south ern island of Pageh, near Sumatra, also has a clearly expressed nose There is the genus of Nosed Apes of which the species are the snub nosed golden monkey (Rhinopithecus roxellanae Milne Edwards) of North West China the Bietian snub nosed monkey (Rh bieti Milne Edwards) of Yunnan, West China and South East Tibet, the Brelichian snub nosed monkey (Rh breli chi Thomas) of Central China and South East Tibet and the *Tongking snub nosed monkey or uncle ape' (Rh avunculus* Dollman Presbytiscus avunculus Pocock) of Tongking North Vietnam

There are very many monkeys whose external organ of smell is quite small, this is particularly true of such anthropoid apes as the orangutan and chimpanzee The skulls of these two apes are somewhat concave in the region of the nasal orifice i e they are symognathous

The median longitudinal gristly frame of the human nose consists of the inferior part of the septum the cartilages of the nasal walls (on either side between the nasal bone and the main cartilages of the alae or wings) and a number of smaller ones

Within the nasal orifice and on its side walls are three nasal conchae the inferior middle and superior A newborn infant has a fourth—Santorini s concha—which in 50 75 per cent of all cases *later disappears*

The presence of a fifth concha in man is very rare Cases of the retention of a fourth or fifth concha in the adult is evidence that man s distant ancestors had a more actively functioning olfactory organ In modern man only the superior nasal concha belongs to the olfactory region The reduction of the number of nasal conchae in man puts him in the group of microsmatic

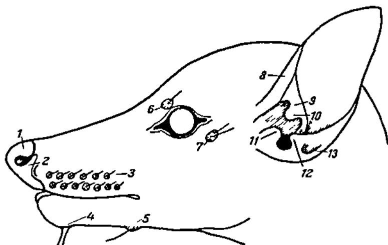


Fig 63 Bunches of vibrissae and ear of Madagascar lemur (Chirogale E Geoffroy) diagram

1—medial nasal eminence 2—lateral nasal eminence 3—vibrissae on upper jaw (vv mysticiales) 4—chin vibrissae (vv submentales) 5—vibrissae between the rami of the mandible (vv interramales) 6—supraorbital vibrissae 7—vibrissae genales 8—the helix 9—the antihelix 10—the antihelical process 11—the tragus 12—the antitragus 13—fossa (bursa)

After F Wood Jones 1929

Primates together with the apes monkeys and the tarsiers as distinct from the lemurs and tupaias who are macrosmatic having a more strongly developed sense of smell The fine distinction of odours as a means of distinguishing objects is intimately connected with the ability to form conditioned reflexes strongly expressed in birds and still more strongly in mammals

Parallel to the retrogression of the olfactory analyser man and the monkeys also experienced a reduction of special sensory organs of the face both these processes were interconnected and were closely linked up with the shortening of the facial region especially the nasal area Of the lower Primates the half monkeys have up to four paired and one unpaired bunches of long stiff bristles known as vibrissae on the face these are specialized tactile hairs (figs 63 64) At the base of these hairs in the epidermis there are special nerve ends and minute accumulations of blood in the form of sinuses The slightest contact between a vibrissa and any object immediately causes a disturbance of the blood sinus and a signal is transmitted by the nerve that produces a concept of the surface of object

Only three paired bunches of vibrissae have remained on the faces of the lower monkeys—in the supraorbital area on the upper lip and the chin The anthropoid apes have only two

bunches (Duckworth 1915) and man has none Even in the embryonic period of man's development such hairs with blood sinuses are rarely found on the face of the foetus

Retrogressive as well as progressive changes took place in the sensory organs as a result of arboreal life For example in place of the separate pads common to the feet of many of the lower mammals the plantar palmar and volar skin in monkeys is covered with papillary ridges in combination with flexure creases (fig 65)

These papillary ridges are furnished with bunches of nerve ends that enable the hand or foot to receive the sum of sensory excitations and to react to contact with branches fruits and other objects in the surrounding world The papillary ridges and their junctions form specific triradial patterns on the palms of the hands and soles of the feet and rings whorls and deltas on the terminal phalanges of the digits The direction of the flexure creases transverse or longitudinal depends on the manner of folding the hand or foot of each species of monkey and of each individual

The dermatoglyphic pattern of ridges and creases on the hand of any man is very intricate and is never repeated This pattern is man's dactyloscopic and at the same time his anthropological signature, the study of these patterns has proved of great interest both to anthropology and to forensic medicine The latter science developed a special branch dactyloscopy or finger print reading that has often made it possible to establish the



Fig 64 The Chiromys madagascariensis E Geoffroy bunches of vibrissae are clearly visible on face

After G Grandidier and G Petit 1932



Fig 65 Flexor and papillary ridges on palmar surface of anthropoid hands

1—gibbon *2*—orangutan *3*—gorilla

After Ch Sonntag 1924

identity of a criminal by finger prints left on the scene of a crime

To the biologist the pattern of the papillary ridges is important because it is the result of phylogenic development it indicates the course taken by species development, the manner in which the Primates adapted themselves to arboreal life In man it indicates the way in which the organism has been transformed by work activities The changes that took place in the patterns as a result of increased receptiveness characterize the special path taken by the evolution of man s sensory system as compared with that of the apes

It must be stressed that the delicate sense of touch possessed by the hands of man s ancestors the extinct apes must undoubtedly have been one of the most important prerequisites for the correct use and fabrication of tools The reverse is also true hundreds of diverse forms of work for many thousands of years have further perfected the human hand It developed as a qualitatively specific organ whose activities are closely connected with the kinaesthetic epidermal visual and other analysers The dimensions shape and weight of a stone tool or of other objects began to be judged in a new way as compared with the tactile perception that had developed during the evolution of man's ape like ancestors who had been accustomed to handling branches fruits etc in the trees

The tactile analysers developed under the influence of the external world no less than the olfactory analysers because in climbing trees by grasping these apes not only developed prehensile feet furnished with nails but also prehensile hands with nails This, however was connected with the powerful development of sensory nerve papillae in the palmar and plantar skin of the hands and feet The entire mutation of the extremities provided the necessary co ordination and stability of movement during the complicated and at times highly risky process of arboreal locomotion

The maintenance of equilibrium when tree climbing and leaping from branch to branch is a priority problem for the monkeys that could only have been solved by the specific development of the organs of balance chiefly the vestibule apparatus of the inner ear and the cerebellum The movements of the hands and feet are co ordinated by these organs

The participation of the extremities in locomotion was very closely connected with the visual analyser that had undergone considerable progressive development The shortening of the muzzle in ancient types of Primates such as the half monkeys enabled the external region of the visual analyser to undergo considerable reconstruction The fields of vision that had been

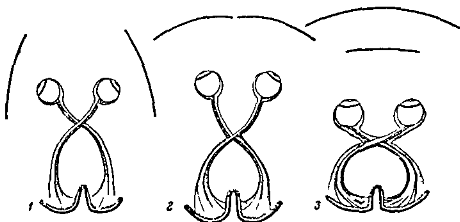


Fig 66 Diagram of decussation of optic nerves in various mammals *1*—with independent movement of eyes and separate (monocular) fields of vision (horse etc)—complete decussation of optic nerves *2*—with correlated movement of eyes and combined monocular fields of vision (hare etc)—almost complete decussation *3*—fully correlated movements of eyes and reactions of pupils with a clear binocular field of vision and a bimacular field of visual fixation (full decussation of retinal and macular fibres of optic nerve i e fibres from right half of retina lead to right cerebral hemisphere and from left half to left in the apes and man)
After F Wood Jones and O Porteus 1929

separate when the eyes were placed at the sides of the head began to cover each other when the eyes moved to the anterior part of the head (fig 66) In other words there was a progressive development of binocular or stereoscopic vision in the Primates that enabled them to see objects in relief it also gave them *the ability more clearly to distinguish the colours of their* habitat, the tropical forest thus evolving colour vision

The changes in the analysers—olfactory tactile and visual—were due to a complex of factors and influences from the external world, one of which was doubtlessly the change in food habits Instead of searching for insects and their larvae in a terrestrial world of the most diverse smells in the manner of the modern insect eating mammals the most ancient Primates themselves probably closely resembling the Insectivora of a type similar to the modern tupaias (M Weber 1936) began to make more frequent use of vegetable food in the form of berries nuts fruits buds leaves flowers and the sap of plants The colour of all kinds of vegetable food must have had great significance even if only because the ancient half monkey must have established some sort of connection between the colouring of a fruit and its degree of edibility and this was a matter of vital importance to them

The modern monkeys, at least in comparison with their distant ancestors the fossil half monkeys have a strongly developed visual analyser The orbits of the monkey are placed anteriorly and in the depth of the retina there is even a 'yellow spot' (macula lutea) with its depression the point of clearest vision monkeys have high visual acuity and see the objects of the external world in relief and colour

Visual acuity in monkeys is superior to that of other mammals because they can see objects in three dimensions that is, they have stereoscopic vision The eyes of our nearest relatives the apes and monkeys are directed forward while those of the majority of other mammals are directed sideways at a greater or lesser angle, the eyes of the lemurs and tarsiers are placed at 45° to the anterior position while those of the tupaias are even farther to the side In the course of evolution the eyes of the ancestors of modern monkeys moved from the lateral to the anterior position so that they can see objects in front of them in full relief

The development of three dimensional vision in man was conditioned by the evolution of his Tertiary monkey like ancestors This feature is typical of the evolution of man and the monkeys Our more distant ancestors like the modern lower mammals had completely crossed (decussated) visual nerves the right visual nerve was attached to the left and the left visual nerve to the right eye The monkeys and man have organs of vision with semi decussation i e half of the left visual nerve fibres are attached to half of the left eye the other half being attached to the right eye and vice versa

As we have already mentioned on the retina of the eyes of man and the monkeys there is a yellow spot with a central depression (macula lutea) at the point of entry of the optic nerve this is the point of clearest vision The combined reception of visual impressions simultaneously by two eyes both placed anteriorly in the head, and the consequent formation of a single field of vision provides an accurate picture of the object viewed The macula lutea is not found in any other mammals In man it has a simpler structure than that of the monkeys as the nerve endings of the former consist of a small number of cones while the latter have rods in addition Both kinds of nerve ending in the monkeys are moreover finer and more numerous

Man therefore owes his binocular vision primarily to his ape ancestors To them also, he owes his ability to see the world of colour Man with his three colour vision approximates the Old World monkeys The chimpanzee can easily distinguish blue and green colours but its perception of the reds and yellows is poor

by the earliest men must have brought changes to th process and accelerated it during the first hundreds of thousan of years of the Quaternary Period this can to some extent traced in casts made from endocrans Tool making is inconcei able without the special development of prehensile fore extr mities the hands or without acute binocular vision It was pr cisely this combination of anatomico physiological peculiarit that our ancestors possessed

For the emergence of man and for his entire further evo tion therefore there had to be a constant progressive devel ment of the general structure of the nerves and muscles of hand and of the delicate architectonics of the correspond parts of the central nervous system and the organ of vision T hand and the brain mutually affecting each other, develo in the course of socially performed work

The tactile and visual analysers in combination with the tor analysers of the early Primates must have developed way that was new as compared with their small terrestrial cestors and enabled them not only to change their method locomotion and food habits but to adapt themselves to the c ditions of interspecies struggle particularly against such d gerous animals as the great cats various kinds of snakes birds of prey

The aural analyser also played an important part by its cialization in distinguishing the various jungle sounds Audit acuity is of great importance to the monkey both by day by night it sometimes saves them from nocturnal beasts of that creep up close to them Monkeys listen constantly to sounds made by the voices of other members of the herd S of the sounds emitted by monkeys have the significance of nals and it does not matter which of the monkeys emits sound that warns the herd of danger

Nina A Tikh a scientist who worked at the Sukhumi Me Biological Station of the Academy of Medical Sciences some important research into the means of communication ployed by monkeys in a herd (1950) Her research was ca out on a herd of hamadryas baboons whose voices appe produce about fifteen different sounds expressing the emoti state of the ape She established the fact that the sounds em by the baboons are closely connected with the emoti basis and with correlated movements of the body It pr to be very difficult to evoke them artificially even by the me of conditioning reflexes partially because of the stereot nature of the sound expression of emotions and the strong nection of congenital (unconditioned) sounds with a definite logical weight For example it is more difficult to evoke a so

of defensive significance by food signals than to evoke a sound indicating food In experiments made by M A Pankratov a derangement in the higher nervous activity of apes was additionally noted (L G Voronin 1952)

To this must be added that the peripheral and cortical regions of the aural analyser in monkeys and anthropoid apes are often more highly differentiated than those of man For example monkeys can hear extremely high tones (with a frequency of about 30,000 cycles a second) that man cannot detect without the aid of special acoustic appliances Monkeys have highly developed auricular muscles and can move their ears freely while the external ear of man, despite its greater size is as incapable (or almost incapable) of motion as those of the gorilla and orang utan who have much smaller helices

In the same way the monkeys have more highly developed analysers in other fields for example the visual and especially the olfactory analysers In other words the monkeys have a number of advantages in the sphere of the first system of signals But man is incomparably superior to his monkey relatives in the functioning of his brain and in his use of the second system of signals (speech) and its analysers which enable him to recognize aspects of objects inaccessible to any animal

The peripheral regions of the auricular tactile visual and other analysers were directly connected with the corresponding cortical regions of the cerebral hemispheres and developed together with them in the course of the evolution of the Primates under the influence of the environment Now let us examine the corresponding areas of the cerebral cortex

The monkey type of brain developed from that of a more primitive Primate such as a half monkey The lemur for example, has a very small brain that weighs only a few dozen grams its olfactory region is well developed but the frontal lobes are small the temporal lobe typical of all Primates in general is clearly expressed the surface of the cerebral hemispheres of most Primates has a small number of gyri or convolutions in the occipital region there is a noticeable spur like fissure (fissura calcarina) such as is found in all other Primates the cerebellum is only partially overlapped by the brain

In the brain stem of all Primates including man there are signs of segmentation This is more clearly expressed in the spinal cord where it is observed in the paired equidistant branching of bunches of spinal sensory and abdominal motor nerves from the cord in the brain stem similar subdivision is expressed by the symmetrical disposition of twelve pairs of cranial nerves Such a tendency to segmentation is proof that man s not very distant ancestors were quadrupeds and that more distant

by the earliest men must have brought changes to this process and accelerated it during the first hundreds of thousands of years of the Quaternary Period, this can, to some extent, be traced in casts made from endocrans Tool making is inconceivable without the special development of prehensile fore extremities, the hands or without acute binocular vision It was precisely this combination of anatomico physiological peculiarities that our ancestors possessed

For the emergence of man and for his entire further evolution, therefore, there had to be a constant progressive development of the general structure of the nerves and muscles of the hand and of the delicate architectonics of the corresponding parts of the central nervous system and the organ of vision The hand and the brain mutually affecting each other, developed in the course of socially performed work

The tactile and visual analysers in combination with the motor analysers of the early Primates must have developed in a way that was new as compared with their small terrestrial ancestors and enabled them not only to change their method of locomotion and food habits but to adapt themselves to the conditions of interspecies struggle particularly against such dangerous animals as the great cats various kinds of snakes and birds of prey

The aural analyser also played an important part by its specialization in distinguishing the various jungle sounds Auditory acuity is of great importance to the monkey both by day and by night it sometimes saves them from nocturnal beasts of prey that creep up close to them Monkeys listen constantly to the sounds made by the voices of other members of the herd Some of the sounds emitted by monkeys have the significance of signals and it does not matter which of the monkeys emits the sound that warns the herd of danger

Nina A Tikh, a scientist who worked at the Sukhumi Medico Biological Station of the Academy of Medical Sciences did some important research into the means of communication employed by monkeys in a herd (1950) Her research was carried out on a herd of hamadryas baboons whose voices appear to produce about fifteen different sounds expressing the emotional state of the ape She established the fact that the sounds emitted by the baboons are closely connected with the emotional basis and with correlated movements of the body It proved to be very difficult to evoke them artificially even by the method of conditioning reflexes partially because of the stereotyped nature of the sound expression of emotions and the strong connection of congenital (unconditioned) sounds with a definite biological weight For example it is more difficult to evoke a sound

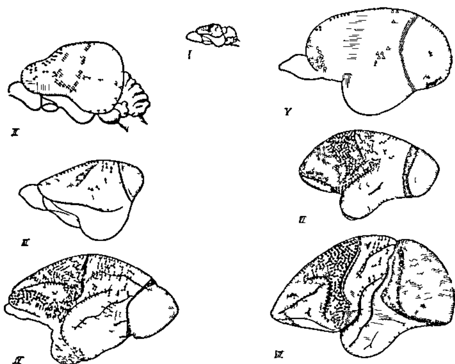


Fig 68 Cyto-architectonic fields of cerebral cortex of Primates
I—insectivorous mammal (Macroscelides elephantulus) II—tupaia proper (Tupaia sp) III—pen-tailed tree shrew (Ptilocercus lowii) IV—lemur (Lemur sp) V—spectral tarsier (Tarsius spectrum) VI—Marmoset (Hapale jacchus) VII—macaque (Macacus sp) VIII—man (Homo sapiens)
I II III V—after F Wood Jones 1929 IV VI VII VIII—after K Brodmann 1925 II III IV V VI are enlarged relative to I VII and VIII

ancestors were the lower vertebrates Man, together with monkeys and half monkeys sends his roots deep down into animal kingdom And the prototype of his brain structure that of the monkey or ape

The brain of the lower monkeys such as the rhesus mac or the baboon is bigger and heavier than that of the lemur weighs between 50 and 100 grams, the olfactory bulbs are very large and the gyri and other parts of the ancient olfac regions of the cortex are poorly developed, although they more prominent than they are in man (fig 67)

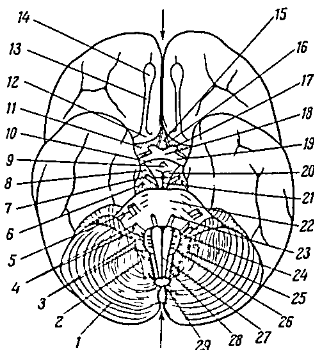


Fig 67 Base view of human brain

1—cerebellum 2—accessory nerve 3—glossopharyngeal and vagus nerves 4—facial and acoustic nerves 5—triangular nerve 6—trochlear nerve 7—oculomotor nerve 8—cerebral peduncles 9—infundibulum 10—tuber cinereum 11—grey anterior perforate field 12—olfactory triangle 13—olfactory tract 14—olfactory bulb (arrow between 14 and 15 points to longitudinal fissure) 15—lamina terminalis 16—diagonal ligament 17—optic nerve 18—optic decussation 19—optic tract 20—mamillary body (corpora candicantia) 21—interpeduncular fossa (Tarini) posterior perforate field lies in this fossa 22—pons and main sulcus of pons 23—abducens nerve 24—pyramid of the medulla 25—olive 26—hypoglossal nerve 27—medial anterior fissure of medulla 28—anterior lateral nerve 29—medulla oblongata (arrow between 1 and 1 points to resection of cerebellum)

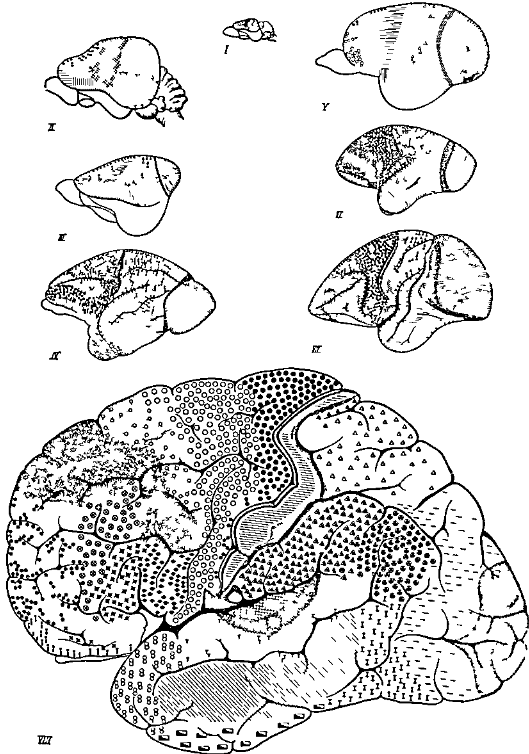


Fig 68 Cyto architectonic fields of cerebral cortex of Primates
I—insectivorous mammal (Macroscelides elephantulus) *II*—tupaia proper (Tupaia sp) *III*—pen tailed tree shrew (Ptilocercus lowii) *IV*—lemur (Lemur sp) *V*—spectral tarsier (Tarsius spectrum) *VI*—Marmoset (Hapale jacchus) *VII*—macaque (Macacus sp) *VIII*—man (Homo sapiens)
I II III V—after F Wood Jones 1929 *IV VI VII VIII*—after K Brodmann 1925 II III IV V VI are enlarged relative to I VII and VIII

ancestors were the lower vertebrates Man, together with the monkeys and half monkeys sends his roots deep down into the animal kingdom And the prototype of his brain structure was that of the monkey or ape

The brain of the lower monkeys such as the rhesus macaque or the baboon is bigger and heavier than that of the lemur and weighs between 50 and 100 grams the olfactory bulbs are not very large and the gyri and other parts of the ancient olfactory regions of the cortex are poorly developed, although they are more prominent than they are in man (fig 67)

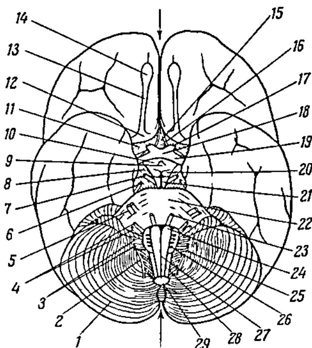


Fig 67 Base view of human brain

1—cerebellum *2*—accessory nerve *3*—glossopharyngeal and vagus nerves *4*—facial and acoustic nerves *5*—triangular nerve *6*—trochlear nerve *7*—oculomotor nerve *8*—cerebral peduncles *9*—infundibulum *10*—tuber cinereum *11*—grey anterior perforate field *12*—olfactory triangle *13*—olfactory tract *14*—olfactory bulb (arrow between *14* and *15* points to longitudinal fissure) *15*—lamina terminalis *16*—diagonal ligament *17*—optic nerve *18*—optic decussation *19*—optic tract *20*—mamillary body (corpora candicantia) *21*—interpeduncular fossa (Tarini) posterior perforate field lies in this fossa *22*—pons and main sulcus of pons *23*—abducens nerve *24*—pyramid of the medulla *25*—olive *26*—hypoglossal nerve *27*—medial anterior fissure of medulla *28*—anterior lateral nerve *29*—medulla oblongata (arrow between *29* and *1* points to resection of cerebellum)

After E Villiger 1930

Y G Shevchenko of the Moscow Institute of the Brain who studied this area of the cortex in the common marmoset (Hapale) guenon monkey gibbon chimpanzee orangutan and man established features of similarity in their basic structural outline and showed that the typical human areas 39 and 40 are also found in the anthropoid cortex (K Brodmann 1925) Simultaneously she discovered noticeable quantitative and qualitative differences On the one hand the boundaries between contiguous areas and subareas in this region of the anthropoid cortex are much more distinct than they are in man on the other hand the areas are much more weakly developed in the anthropoids and do not cover the whole inferior parietal region but only its superior divisions In the common marmoset the inferior parietal region constitutes 0 17 per cent of the entire cortical surface in the orangutan and chimpanzee it amounts to 3 3 per cent while in man it has spread very considerably and covers 7 7 per cent of the total area (Y G Shevchenko 1936 1938)

These ratios are very instructive although the total area of the human cerebral cortex is three times that of the chimpanzee, *the inferior parietal region in man is ten times greater than* that of the anthropoids Such a powerful development of the phylogenically new inferior parietal region in man is apparently due to its increased and more variegated functions under the influence of labour activities and speech (the second system of signals) In complicated nervous disorders a disruption of the functioning of this region is observed The inferior parietal region, therefore is closely connected with the functions of the second *system of signals—speech reading and writing* this phylogenically new region of the human cerebral cortex distinguishes man's brain qualitatively from that of the monkeys and apes

The frontal region also possesses some exceedingly significant features that are phylogenically recent and which place the human brain at a higher level than that of an animal At the Moscow Institute of the Brain this was studied in detail by Y P Kononova and she made a very important discovery in the inferior frontal region of the chimpanzee brain she found areas that correspond to Brodmann s areas 44 and 45 in the human brain scholars abroad have denied the presence of such homologues even in the anthropoids She was even able to find traces of such areas in the initial form in some of the lower monkeys (Y P *Kononova* 1949) Why *are areas 44 and 45 so important* to man? Scholars long ago noted the connection between this structure and the functions of articulate speech and even named this part of the brain *Broca s speech centre after the eminent* French anthropologist Paul Broca It was later established

According to data provided by the researches of I. N. Filimonov (Institute of the Brain, Moscow) the main zone of the human cortex that is connected with olfactory functions and is therefore regarded as the ancient or palaeocortex constitutes only 0.61 per cent of the total area (Filimonov, 1949). If the reduction of the olfactory zone in the human cortex is compared with that of a number of other Primates, then, according to the same investigator, the ratio of ancient cortex to the whole is greatly reduced in man as compared with the common marmoset (Hapale) (4.7 times).

The neocortex, contrary to the palaeocortex, is the progressive part and in a number of Primates, including man, has reached a very high level of development (figs. 68 and 69). This has been achieved in particular by some regions of the cortex increasing in area in a manner that is specific for man alone. By way of example, let us examine the inferior parietal zone of the neocortex in man and the monkeys.

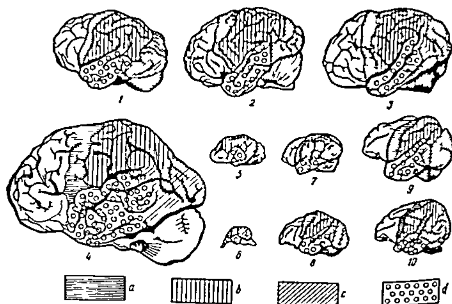


Fig. 69. Regions of cerebral cortex of Primates.
1—orangutan; 2—chimpanzee; 3—gorilla; 4—man; 5—lemur; 6—tarsier; 7—capuchin; 8—macaque; 9—baboon; 10—gibbon; a—motor; b—sensory; c—optic; and d—auditory regions. Left lateral aspect. Frontal lobe is unshaded (drawings show its progressive development from lemur and tarsier to anthropoids and man). Dotted area of frontal region of man's cortex shows motor speech area.
2/7 natural size. After F. Tilney, 1928

from the Moscow Institute of the Brain where the brains of man the apes and the lower monkeys were studied (N S Preobrazhenskaya and I N Filimonov, 1949) It was established that of the three Brodmann s areas of the occipital region area 19 showed the greatest development and complicated structure area 17 being very small In man area 19 covers 4 5 per cent of the total surface of the cortex that of the orangutan, 6 4 per cent that of the lower (guenon) type of monkey 6 0 per cent while area 17 gave the figures of 3 0 per cent 8 5 per cent and 10 per cent respectively

From this it can be seen that the occipital region of the human brain has some peculiar features In other words areas 19 and 17 of the occipital region have developed in an entirely different way from that taken by the brains of man's nearest relatives the apes or monkeys

A different picture is presented by the location of the areas on the cerebral *hemispheres* area 17 *in man is not situated on the* lateral side but almost completely on the medial part of the hemisphere as a result of the profuse growth of the parietal temporal region of the cortex In this region too is the spur like fissure (fissura calcarina) that in monkeys is situated on the lateral side of the cerebrum at the pole of the occiput In the lower monkeys the visual area of the occipital cortex has moved towards the parietal and has partially overlaid its posterior boundary This has given rise to the simian sulcus that is clearly visible on the lateral surface of the cerebral hemispheres at the boundary of the parietal and occipital lobes

In man the occipital lobe has been strongly constricted and has undergone some reduction of its relative dimensions, this is due to the growth of the inferior parietal, temporal and frontal lobes From this it follows that progressive development of some parts of the cerebral cortex have caused the relative retrogression of other parts or elements This is also true of the brain as a whole on the basis of formerly existing features completely new human features appeared during the process of anthropogenesis, while the simian features were weakened or disappeared altogether This can be illustrated by another example

On the boundary between the frontal and temporal lobes deep down *in the sylvian fissure is the central lobe or island of Reil* (fig 70) It can be found by moving back the margins of the fissure over which an operculum or cover is formed by the contiguous *lobes* the temporal *lobe included The simian brain is* somewhat different the central (truncal) or insular lobe frequently protrudes on the surface between the above mentioned lobes and occupies a middle position (A A Deshin 1934)

Cases of the enlargement of gyri (convolutions) for example

however that not only the frontal region but also the inferior parietal and temporal regions play their part in speech functions Investigations have shown that the motor zone of speech functions is indeed situated in the inferior frontal convolution A pathological condition of this region of the left hemisphere causes motor aphasia and other speech defects in right handed people

The progressive nature of the development of the frontal lobe in man is proved by its other anatomical and physiological peculiarities such as its numerous associations with other regions of the brain through bunches of fibrils This is confirmed by the belated myelinization of the fibrils (as in the inferior parietal region) the relative enlargement of the frontal lobe in the course of evolution and the noticeable complication of the pattern formed by sulci of all sizes due to the increased number of gyri on the surface of the cerebral hemisphere

The temporal region is the next one connected with speech functions it contains the sound reception zone is concerned in particular with the reception of articulate speech or, more broadly of sound language Research by S M Blinkov (1949) has shown that area 41 which has particular significance as the auditory area of the cortex is more intricately differentiated in man than in the monkeys The same must be said of the phylogenically new area of the posterior part of the temporal lobe Man s brain is still more sharply distinguished from that of the monkey in the delicate structure of Brodmann s area 21 of the central subregion of the temporal lobe

The importance of certain areas of the temporal lobe particularly that part formerly known as Wernicke s zone (after a German neurologist) can be seen from their pathological state which is accompanied by an inability to understand words i e sensory aphasia Some diseases of the contiguous lobe the occipital cause verbal blindness or optical alexia, when the patient cannot recognize letters or whole words This region therefore most probably plays an important part in functions that are specific to man alone the functions of the second system of signals with which the entire cortex is in one way or another connected

The occipital region of the cortex where the cerebral end of the visual analyser is situated is man s chief organ for the reception of visual images connected with the first and second system of signals It is no wonder that investigators here too find considerable differences in comparison with the brains of other Primates we may even say that in this region a noticeable qualitative reconstruction connected with the development from the simian to the human brain has taken place

In this instance we shall again make use of research material

The whole course taken by the study of the structure devel opment and functions of the human brain constitutes a com plete refutal of the religious conception of the soul as a particle of the divine spirit controlling the human body as the immor tal double of its material aspect The theory of the localization of functions in the brain shows that all psychic processes depend on the normal functioning of undamaged parts of the brain and on that most important organ as a whole

The understanding of the normal functioning of the brain is greatly facilitated by Pavlov s profoundly materialist theory of conditioned reflexes This theory, created by the great phy siologist, proves irrefutably the existence of common laws governing the work of the nervous system in mammals and in man, it shows the common nature of their first system of signals and helps understand the peculiarities of ontogeny phylogeny and the structure and vital functions of the human body that is the product of still more ancient stages of development of the ani mal kingdom

Pavlov, moreover on the basis of his physiological theories evolved a conception of the second system of signals which is specific for man alone as distinguished from the animals it would be difficult to overestimate the importance of this idea for the investigation of the most profound scientific and philo sophical problems connected with speech and thought

Pavlov s reflex theory serves as a convincing natural scien tific confirmation of Lenin s theory of reflection In this way it throws a bright light on the problem of anthropogenesis insofar as the *evolution of the brain as the organ of thought is concerned*

3 HIGHER NERVOUS ACTIVITY IN MONKEYS

Physiologists study the higher nervous activity of animals by the strictly objective method of conditioned reflexes The phy siological reflex theory the theory of nervism, built up by the Russian physiologists I M Sechenov and I P Pavlov forms the corner stone of a single concept that enables biologists anthropologists among them to make a correct and profound materialist approach to the solution of some of the most diffi cult problems in evolution

Pavlov s physiological theories are a powerful and effective weapon against the reactionary concepts that have been intro duced into zoopsychology especially in the U S.A Great Britain and Germany The subjective method of investigating higher nervous activity must in the end give way to the objective method Pavlov it will be remembered never permitted physio logical experiments for the study of higher nervous activity to be

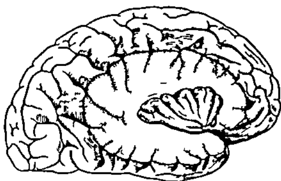


Fig 70 Central lobe or insula of human cerebral hemisphere seen on floor of sylvian fossa after removal of tegumentum (operculum) formed by overlapping parts of frontal parietal and temporal lobes After E Villiger 1930

around the insular lobe turning it into an island on the floor of the sylvian fissure, show that there is an intensive process of their develop ment (gyrification) going on, accompanied by an increase in the number of sulci (sulcation) especially those of the second and third order

The process of growth in the human cerebral cortex is an expression of the transformation of the central organ of higher nervous activity in the course of the de velopment of the human organism under the influence of la bour and speech and distinguishes it from the evolution of the simian brain under the influence of purely biological or more widely natural factors

Although the intense processes of gyrification and sulcation of the human brain cortex are partially due to the growth in size of the brain itself the basic reason is in the qualitative transforma tion of the internal cell composition of the cerebral hemispheres It has been shown that the amazing complication of the delicate cortical cyto architectonics is to a very great degree conditioned by the disproportionately rich composition of the nerve cells the neurons with all their outgrowths

The human brain has a volume three times that of the oran gutan but the latter contains only 1 000 million neurons while there are not 3 000 million but nearly 10 000 million in the human brain This fact as investigations have shown, accounts for the tremendous complication of links between the parts of the brain and again confirms the concept that the human brain is qualitatively different from the simian

Thus the material provided by modern science confirms the view that the human brain is the final product of an extremely long line of animal evolution Towards the end of the prehistoric period, when the first men evolved from apes there began an intensive development of the nervous system under the influence of labour and speech human consciousness took form and this enabled man to gain an insight into the laws of nature and delve into his own origin

ial traits similar to those that must have been
ence of intellecti most ancient hominids that later became reas
possessed by the igs
oning human beifacial expressions of the chimpanzee were also
The different gina Kohts (1935) in the course of the lengthy
studied by Ladyhe behaviour, habits instincts and expressive
observation of tbame young chimpanzee Ionny, from the age
motions of the She studied the expression of its face during
of 1½ to 4 yearsl states as general excitement sorrow, joy, fear,
such fundamentaent, attention and disgust The movement of the
anger astonishm plays an important part in the chimpanzee s
mouth and lips '3) When greatly excited the hair on its head
expression (fig 7legs stands on end There were also other out
trunk arms and the aspect and behaviour of the animal Even
ward changes inith the gorilla and the orangutan, the chimpan
in comparison wi astonishingly rich mimicry that closely resem
zee is capable of
bles that of man have a range of facial expression that is much
The great apes of the gibbons and the lower monkeys but is,
richer than that rior to that of man The superiority of man
nevertheless infe to the very great variety of functions of which
in this field is dudature and its nervous system are capable, the
the facial musculitic analyser is more highly developed, the in
human kinaesthefacial muscles is very intricate the muscles are
nervation of the tiated (fig 74) and the connections with the
strongly differenpplex nature
brain are of a conof the facial musculature of Primates was stud
The evolution (E Huber (1931) He lays great stress on the
ied in detail by system its high level of development being a
central nervous e complication of the facial muscles with their
prerequisite to thal expression They become more varied as the
wealth of emotiorections between the different regions of the
number of conncreases Huber said that while facial expres
cerebral cortex irower Primates is confined to a simple scheme
sion among the lotyped features it becomes richer and more
with a few sterеgoes up the ladder until it reaches an amazing
perfected as one lity and complication in the great apes, and of
degree of variabilat African anthropoids the gorilla and chim
the latter the grеly approximate man the orangutan being fur
panzee most nea
ther removed a and chimpanzee however **cannot** compare
Even the gorilln in their range of facial **expression** since
with modern man addition to the above **natural** bio
man s ancestors including progress in the co area (
logical factors (inf the cortex due to erect and t
the motor zone ofeloped under the very pow
use of tools) dev

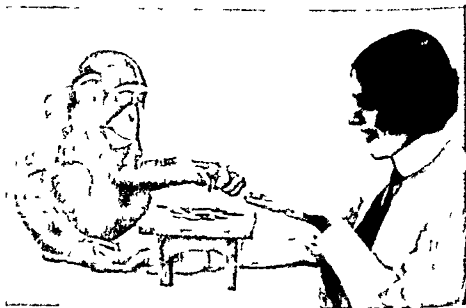


Fig 2 Experiment with young chimpanzee Ionny who hands experimenter a disc of the colour shown him After N Ladygina Kohts 1923

and showed it to the chimpanzee It was able to select an object of the same colour and hand it to the experimenter

Ladygina Kohts made a number of experiments using this method and drew the following general conclusion The behaviour is probably not so much foresight as aftersight If we may say so, the chimpanzee has a reflective mind only when it has practical experience in finding a solution can it begin to apply it correctly The experimenter expressed the opinion (Ladygina Kohts 1923 1924) that in this case there is a great difference between man and the chimpanzee since the former a reasoning being, sums up effects and having no need of concrete experience draws the correct conclusions '

In addition to her experiments with the chimpanzee Ladygina Kohts worked with a rhesus monkey placing various obstacles in the way to food or liberty She drew a similar conclusion in respect of this animal By the character of its elementary cognitive ability the lower monkey is very unlike if not directly the opposite of man (1920)

By comparing the behaviour peculiarities of a young chimpanzee and a human boy of the same age our investigator arrived at the conclusion that although the chimpanzee displays considerable qualitative differences one may assume the exist

ence of intellectual traits similar to those that must have been possessed by the most ancient hominids that later became reasoning human beings

The different facial expressions of the chimpanzee were also studied by Ladygina Kohts (1935) in the course of the lengthy observation of the behaviour habits instincts and expressive motions of the same young chimpanzee, Ionny, from the age of 1½ to 4 years She studied the expression of its face during such fundamental states as general excitement sorrow, joy, fear anger astonishment, attention and disgust The movement of the mouth and lips plays an important part in the chimpanzee s expression (fig 73) When greatly excited the hair on its head trunk arms and legs stands on end There were also other outward changes in the aspect and behaviour of the animal Even in comparison with the gorilla and the orangutan the chimpanzee is capable of astonishingly rich mimicry that closely resembles that of man

The great apes have a range of facial expression that is much richer than that of the gibbons and the lower monkeys but is nevertheless, inferior to that of man The superiority of man in this field is due to the very great variety of functions of which the facial musculature and its nervous system are capable the human kinaesthetic analyser is more highly developed the innervation of the facial muscles is very intricate the muscles are strongly differentiated (fig 74) and the connections with the brain are of a complex nature

The evolution of the facial musculature of Primates was studied in detail by E Huber (1931) He lays great stress on the central nervous system, its high level of development being a prerequisite to the complication of the facial muscles with their wealth of emotional expression They become more varied as the number of connections between the different regions of the cerebral cortex increases Huber said that while facial expression among the lower Primates is confined to a simple scheme with a few stereotyped features it becomes richer and more perfected as one goes up the ladder until it reaches an amazing degree of variability and complication in the great apes, and of *the latter the great African anthropoids the gorilla and chimpanzee* most nearly approximate man the orangutan being further removed

Even the gorilla and chimpanzee however cannot compare with modern man in their range of facial expression since man s ancestors in addition to the above mentioned natural biological factors (including progress in the corresponding area of the motor zone of the cortex due to erect locomotion and the use of tools) developed under the very powerful influence of

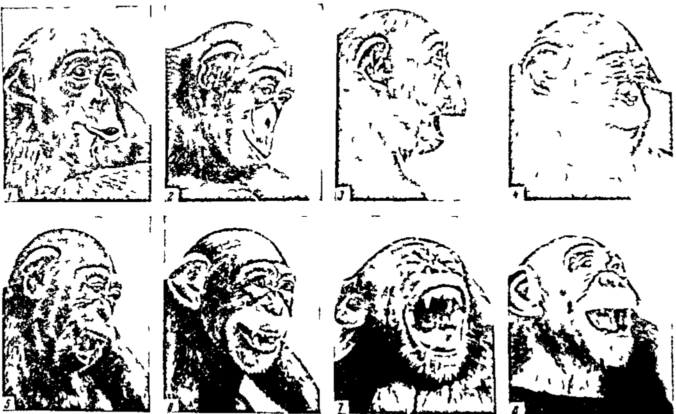


Fig. 73 Facial expressions of young chimpanzee Ionny
1—excitement 2—attention 3—astonishment 4—disgust 5—anger 6—fear 7—sorrow (crying) 8—joy (laughter)
After N. Ladygina-Kohts 1935

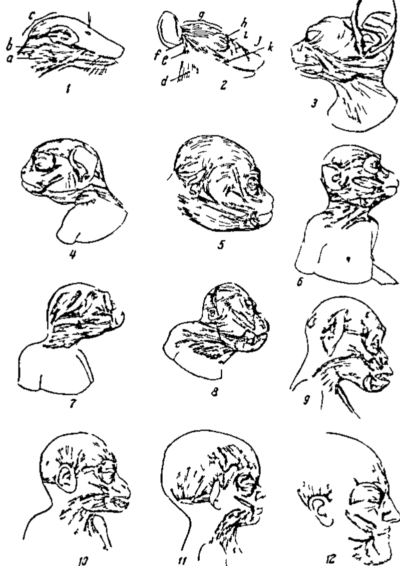


Fig 74 Facial musculature of Primates

1 and 2—diagrams of basic structure of superficial facial musculature of Primates as seen in lemurs tarsiers and primitive American monkeys *3*—Horsfield s jumping tarsier (T saltator Elliot) *4*—lion marmoset (Leontocebus=Oedipomidas rosalia L) *5*—black spider monkey (Ateles ater F Cuvier) *6*—rhesus monkey (Pithecus=Macacus rhesus Audebert) *7*—Siamese capped gibbon (Hylobates pileatus Gray) *8*—orangutan (Pongo pygmaeus L) not fully grown male *9*—common chimpanzee (Pan troglodytes Blumenbach) *10*—coastal gorilla (Gorilla gorilla Savage and Wyman) young female *11*—European infant *12*—adult European *a*—platysma (superficial) *b*—platysma (inferior) *c*—group of posterior auricular and occipital muscles *d*—ventral part of anterior auricular section of deep cervical sphincter *e*—dorsal part of sphincter muscle that raises and lowers ear *f*—tragio cochlear muscle *g*—group of anterior auricular temporal and frontal muscles *h*—orbital muscle *i*—muscle lowering supra orbital region *j*—naso labial muscle *k*—zygomatic or cheek muscle. After E Huber 1931

social factors that promoted the perfection of the brain and the psyche the musculature of the face and facial expression in the very earliest men

The acquisition and gradual perfection of articulate speech must have acted as the direct promoter of development both of the musculature of the face and its expressiveness,' said Huber The beneficial influence of speech on the facial musculature of ancient man and the development of the muscles of expression in modern man Huber went on to say, "still continues in the muscles of the supraorbital regions and the glabella that connects them as well as in the muscles around the mouth

The newborn infant s face has relatively poorly differentiated expression because the sensory organs and the cortex are insufficiently developed although at the time of birth the facial muscles are in the main fully developed It must be mentioned however that negative reactions in the form of expression have been noted in foetuses a few months old (P K Anokhin 1957) In infants the functional activity of the facial muscles is not fully evolved at birth although it develops very rapidly especially during the first year of life and then somewhat more slowly during the next two years The facial muscles of an adult are very highly differentiated Actors by lengthy and careful training are able to achieve the very finest degrees of facial expression A tremendous variety of expression—laughter anger and other emotions—can also be observed in everyday life The oral muscles are well developed for various shades of laughter and draw back the angles of the mouth exposing the teeth The oral muscles of the apes are not so highly differentiated the baring of the teeth is mostly an expression of anger, although at times in the chimpanzee for example it may be an expression of laughter (G Lefrou 1956)

A typical trait in the monkey especially in its youth, is its interest in all objects in the world that surrounds it irrespective of whether they are edible or not N Y Voitonis (1949) made a special study of the orientational investigating activities of lower monkeys He established that the monkey is not only attracted by the newness of an object but also by the intricacy of its structure and the extent to which he can operate on it The baboon and the rhesus monkey differ from the anthropoid apes in one respect—their interest in an object is not increased if it emits sounds

The monkey s curiosity in something new and interesting is so great that it may be stronger than hunger and will make the animal examine the object from all sides Such great curiosity in the objects in their environment has no doubt been developed

by its way of life the monkey has a fairly well organized brain excellent vision and prehensile fore limbs it is able to obtain a varied diet in its natural habitat and reacts in different ways to the phenomena and objects in its environment Voitonis drew a very important conclusion the orientational investigating impulses of the monkey which says Pavlov are peculiar to it even in the lower monkeys greatly exceed what is required by the search for food In this we see a valuable confirmation of Darwin s idea that our ancestors must have been apes capable of using objects in order to obtain food Voitonis conclusions on the other hand make it necessary for us to seek the roots of some of the distinctive intellectual peculiarities of man in the fossil monkeys or apes of the distant past

Augmented interest in objects was however in itself insufficient to make our ancestors turn to the use of tools and to work with them These extinct apes had also to possess the ability to note the relationships between objects and change them either by the use of their natural organs or by the use of some object that could serve as a tool in the hands of the monkey Voitonis established that the lower monkeys not only possess such an ability but that it is manifested in an original way, in addition to augmented interest in a particular objective and persistence in achieving it the lower monkeys make use of the most varied objects and often easily abandon an unsuccessful attempt and turn to a more successful method after several even many, attempts

Voitonis arranged a very interesting series of experiments in which a young pigtailed macaque (Macacus nemestrinus L) learned to get water or sand from a shallow well with a bucket and to reach an apple with the aid of a long fork (fig 75) Another young male of this species learned to make independent use of a long or short crooked stick to obtain food (This series of experiments was carried out by A I Katz the photograph was taken from the thesis he presented for his Candidate of Science degree)

These investigations led to the establishment of new facts that showed that monkeys are able to form intricate and persistent habits for the attainment of an objective even when no food was used as an enticement Man s ancestors must have possessed this ability in a much more developed form They must have been able to use tools to bring about changes in the relationship between objects for example to dig bulbs roots grubs, insects and their larvae out of the ground

According to Voitonis investigations the lower monkeys take note of the details of objects to an amazing degree Such a quality must have had great significance for our ancestors in

the fabrication of stone implements which at first were very crude but were later made with a high degree of skill

The work carried out by Voitonis, therefore by explaining some of the typical behaviour features of the lower monkeys confirms one of the basic conclusions of Darwinism, the roots of man s intellectual abilities must be sought in the mental powers of his simian like ancestors (so far as can be judged by modern monkeys) his investigation on the other hand is an excellent illustration of Engels idea of the importance of the hand in the transition from ape to man

Platyrrhine monkeys of the capuchin type also displayed a tendency to handle tools very great curiosity and a persistent interest in new objects during experiments The investigations made by G Z Roginsky (1940) demonstrated the high degree of development reached by the capuchin monkeys and revealed the important role of the visual receptor for the correct solution of a problem the capuchin monkey proved capable of rapid reorientation when the conditions of the experiment were changed Experiments made by J A Bierens de Haan



Fig [illegible] A I Katz s experiment with macaque Pat at the Sukhumi Medico Biological Station monkey uses a stick with a forked end to reach an apple in a deep wooden box the experimental well lying on one side

Photo from Archives of Moscow Institute of Anthropology

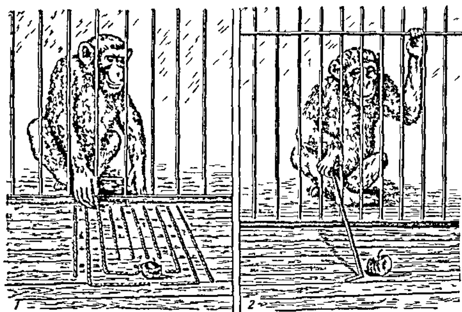


Fig 76 Experiments with a chimpanzee
1—ape selects a tape to which an apple is tied 2—ape manipulates a crooked stick to reach an apple
After G Roginsky 1948

(1931) and H Klüver (1933) also revealed the quick wittedness of the capuchin monkeys

Of still greater interest were Roginsky s experiments with chimpanzees in connection with the problem of the initial steps (1948) in intellectual activity (fig 76) Roginsky took into consideration the biological specifics of the monkeys who have highly developed organs of sight and touch combined with special locomotor abilities and who differ noticeably from other Mammalia in a number of other features

It is important to take into account the monkeys conditions of life in freedom because their behaviour is biologically very complex as compared with that of other mammals although their congenital, unconditioned reflexes can hardly be quantitatively greater Behaviour is not the simple sum of various reflexes or their association

Roginsky's investigations showed that the chimpanzee s behaviour is distinguished by its great plasticity adaptability to circumstances, well organized activity in difficult situations individual experience proved of great importance Contrary to Koehler the Soviet scholar showed that the chimpanzee is by no means a slave of its field of vision but is capable of

easily changing one situation for another and of making use of a stick as a tool more rapidly and more agilely than the lower monkeys (G. Z. Roginsky, 1948, 1953). Of outstanding interest to the anthropologist studying the process of anthropogenesis are those transformations in higher nervous activity that must have taken place during the evolution of man's ancestors, particularly of the fossil Primates.

Engels describes man's immediate ancestors as unusually highly developed anthropoid apes who far exceeded all others in intellect and adaptability. The concept of 'adaptability' is through the cortex more closely connected with the general biological anatomical and physiological qualities of the organism but intellectuality must be computed by the activity of the cortex itself together with the central regions of the analysers.

Soviet anthropology is closely linked up with Pavlov's teachings on the laws of higher nervous activity, which it employs organically for the solution of its problems. Pavlovian physiological theories in their entirety have outstanding importance in their application to anthropogenesis they provide a better understanding of how a 'being with a thinking brain' evolved on Earth, how there appeared that most complicated organism in which as Engels said, nature achieved cognition of herself.

Pavlov's materialist theory of higher nervous activity in man and the animals, the direct opposite of the idealist physiology and psychology of reactionary bourgeois scientists, is an aid to the struggle against various shades of idealism in the science of man that are at times extremely refined. Typical of Pavlov's philosophy is the materialist conception of man's evolutionary development.

Pavlov connected the problem of anthropogenesis with the specific features of higher nervous activity in the animals that he studied from the evolutionary standpoint. In 1913 he wrote:
Charles Darwin may justly be considered the initiator and inspirer of the modern comparative study of the higher manifestations of animal life as every educated man knows in the latter half of the last century his masterly illustration of the idea of development engendered greater fertility in the whole mental activity of mankind and especially in the biological branches of natural science. The hypothesis of man's descent from the animals gave the study of higher manifestations in animal life an enthralling interest. The answer to the question of what is the most useful way to carry out that study and of the study itself constituted problems of the post Darwin period.

Pavlov's investigations opened the way for the profound

study of problems connected with the evolution of the intellect In his endeavour to establish phylogenic relationship between man and the animal kingdom Darwin concentrated on their common anatomo physiological features Pavlov established real similarity in the physiology of human and animal brains but at the same time stressed their qualitative differences and propounded the idea of the second system of signals that is natural to man alone

In accordance with his own materialist conception Pavlov had for a long time combatted the dualist views on human nature that were typical for British scholars like Sherrington Americans like Lashley and Yerkes or Germans such as Koehler Being a quite odious person' to foreign and Russian idealists Pavlov always combatted their anti materialist views, their animalization of man He also objected to their anthropomorphization of higher nervous activity in animals i e, ascribing to them ideas or generalizations that man alone can possess on the basis of the second system of signals he objected to their acknowledgement that the higher nervous activity of animals is intellectual and not mere practical rationalism Such fallacies as these are typical among scholars of the type mentioned above who freely equate the behaviour of man with that of the animals Pavlov s theoretical and practical physiology is distinguished from theirs by being permeated with the spirit of dialectical militant materialism

Psychologists, biologists and anthropologists of the materialist school must hold Pavlov s principle of determinism in high esteem for it may be applied to explain the process of anthropogenesis as opposed to the many teleological concepts that are based on the unscientific proposition that the nature of the universe and man is unknowable and admit the intervention of supernatural forces As an example of the fallacious theories propounded by certain American scholars we shall cite the theory of telefinalism' in the evolution of the organic world proposed by Lecompte du Nouy of the Rockefeller Institute New York it is outlined in his book *L'homme et sa destinée* He maintains that the basis of evolution is supernatural preordination and that God created man by a miracle exactly as portrayed in the Bible Telefinalism is only one of the many variations of that dominant tendency of reactionary American biologists who in many books and articles defend the principle of Creation Through Evolution'

Pavlov s approach to the problem of the mutual relations between different reflexes and their changes took into consideration the dominant influence of the external environment on the organism

Studying the problem from the standpoint of general biology, the Darwinist position Pavlov showed that individual adaptation is common to the entire animal kingdom, that unconditioned reflexes and their combinations in the form of instinct constitute a species type of adaptation and that temporary connections—conditioned reflexes and associations—serve as an individual form of balancing the organism with its environment i e adaptation

In 1935 he wrote The type of behaviour in man and an animal is conditioned not only by congenital properties of the nervous system but also by those influences that have affected and are constantly affecting the organism in the period of its individual existence i e it depends on constant training or teaching in the broadest sense of those words This is because the most important property of the nervous system its plasticity functions constantly and simultaneously with the above mentioned properties

Pavlov s ideas and his practical achievements—a brilliant development of the scientific precepts of I M Sechenov, a great Russian scientist who laid the foundations of the materialist physiology of man and the animals—are still significant to modern Soviet physiology Concrete investigations reveal the truth of Pavlov s statements on the changing character of conditioned and unconditioned reflexes and on the close genetic relations between them

The basic idea of the transition of simple to complex reflexes was pronounced by Pavlov as early as 1922 in connection with his concept of the occlusive functions of the nervous system If this basic thesis of Pavlov s physiological theory be applied to that stage of simian development when the apes changed their arboreal for a terrestrial way of life, the anthropologist is enabled to find an explanation of the nerve mechanism that brought about a profound change in the performance of many reflex actions as our ancestors adapted themselves to new environmental conditions in Upper Tertiary times

The study of the higher nervous activity of monkeys was begun on Pavlov s instruction in his laboratory in 1923 by A G Ivanov Smolensky and D S Fursikov and was later continued by a number of investigators who worked with the higher apes as well as with the lower monkeys

Pavlov was greatly interested in the higher nervous activity of monkeys and tried to establish their qualitative peculiarities He compared the Primates with the other mammals and with man If we consider it once again if we say why the monkey has been more successful than other animals why it is closer to man it is because it has hands four hands even i e more

than you and me Thanks to this it is able to enter into very complicated relations with the objects that surround it This is why a mass of associations is built up by the monkey and not by other animals

In other words the considerable development of analytico synthetic processes in the cerebral cortex is typical for monkeys This is connected in particular, with the high level of evolutionary development of the monkey s analysers that enables it to make a more complicated analysis of the external world combined with the synthesis of certain elements and aspects of it Of particular importance are the various motor signalling nerves, the highly developed motor apparatus and kinaesthetics

As these motor associations must have their material substratum in the nervous system and in the brain ' continues Pavlov the cerebral hemispheres of the monkey brain have developed correspondingly more than those of other animals and have developed precisely in connection with the variety of motor functions We, in addition to a variety of hand movements have the complex system of speech movements

Pavlov s physiological theories enable us to treat the problem of the inception of labour activities in man s immediate ancestors on a new factual materialist basis and in the light of new theoretical concepts Pavlov came very close to the *labour theory of anthropogenesis propounded by Engels* This makes it possible to tackle the problem of the early stages of human thought Pavlov observed the chimpanzee Raphael build a pyramid of boxes and other wooden objects to reach a bait that had been hung high up overhead, and gave the following estimate of this action I say this is intelligence all this activity in which the ape tries first one thing and then another this is thought in action ' Further You are actually the eyewitnesses of our thought development you see all the obstacles in its way and all its methods There is intellectuality in this and Herr Koehler rejects it this he avers is the method of trial and error '

Many reactionary physiologists and psychologists interpret incorrectly the higher nervous activity of apes, animals that are so close to human beings by ascribing to them human psychic qualities Yerkes considers that apes are almost people Koehler finds that they have intellects of the human type *The qualitative differences between man and the apes there fore*, are obliterated Others on the contrary draw too sharp a line between man and the animals by ascribing to the former particles of the godhead i e the immortal soul

When Pavlov speaks of primitive thought he gives the term a purely physiological content with due account taken of

the qualitative differences that distinguish it from the human intellect He says for example that psychologists who try to get away from the truth, like Yerkes or Koehler make use of such empty conceptions as—the monkey went away, thinking itself at liberty as a man would, or 'the monkey decided the matter' Of course that is all nonsense a childish and unworthy solution of the problem All Raphael s behaviour was confined to analysis and association '

In minimizing the differences between man and the monkeys, idealist scholars are supporting the vitalist theory of the origin of man and combining it with the conception of a body and a soul that are independent, the latter dominating the former This provides the contradiction that is typical of such scientists, the religious science that is cultivated in capitalist countries According to the concepts of some reactionary biologists in the U S A the divine creation of the world is proved by its development The writings of such people affirm the truth of the Biblical myth of the creation of first people A similar distortion of the truth in the science of life and of the origin of man, especially in works on the brain and higher nervous activity is also to be found in the writings of some English idealist scientists

When Pavlov read the writings of an English reactionary scientist of this type, he wrote indignantly that the naturalist was prepared to admit intelligence in animals as many people did but he nevertheless distinguished those animals from man and denied the origin of man from animals and objected to our conception of ourselves as the continuation of the animal kingdom Concerning the same naturalist, Pavlov wrote I have long been astonished at the way in which man has managed to dig such a ditch between himself and the animal



Fig 77 Chimpanzee Raphael After E Vatsuro 1948

Pavlov s ideas have been elaborated with great profundity in the work of his pupils and followers Some basic work on the higher nervous activity of apes was carried

out on the same chimpanzee, Raphael and his female companion Rosa under the direct supervision of Pavlov himself (fig 77) in the laboratory at Pavlovo (formerly Koltushi) near Leningrad For a number of successive years the behaviour of the chimpanzees was studied L G Vatsuro with other workers at the laboratory of higher nervous activity made a large number of experiments (E G Vatsuro 1948, 1955) Pavlov spent a great deal of time at the cages in which Raphael and Rosa were kept The behaviour of the anthropoids and their higher nervous activity were of never ending interest to him

Experiments involving the removal of food from closed boxes by means of sticks having round, square triangular or other cross section to correspond with the holes in the lids of the boxes are of great value to us Raphael proved clever enough to employ the most varied methods to obtain fruit and berries hung high up out of reach he put a pole in position and climbed up it piled boxes one on top of another and also made use of other objects of different shapes No less interesting was his method of placing poles from one raft to another to get at his breakfast *

There were also some interesting experiments with fire an apple was placed in a dish on a table and lighted candles were placed round it Raphael could not get at the fruit without the risk of burning his hands and used various methods to put out the lights either blew them out or struck them with a hammer In other cases he doused the fire with water (fig 78) or took water in his mouth and squirted it on the flames

A very instructive experiment was that in which the ape showed its ability to fasten two sticks together to make a longer one Vatsuro s work led him to the conclusion that the chief factor in the behaviour of anthropoids is the kinaesthetic impulse i e priority of place must be given to motor sensory kinaesthetic perception and not to visual perception

Vatsuro opposed Koehler s theory that the monkeys are the slaves of the field of vision The Soviet investigator also rejected another Koehler theory that ascribes to the chimpanzee an intellect similar to that of man Koehler removes the boundary between man and monkey anthropomorphizes the ape and at the same time animalizes the man when he ascribes to the ape or the monkey the ability to consciously fabricate tools

In their use and even in their accidental combination of the simplest tools the monkeys behaviour only partially

* On Pavlov s instructions some films (copies lost) of about 3 000 metres long about Rosa and Raphael were shot Others including Experiments with a Chimpanzee on Rafts (5 parts) were also made



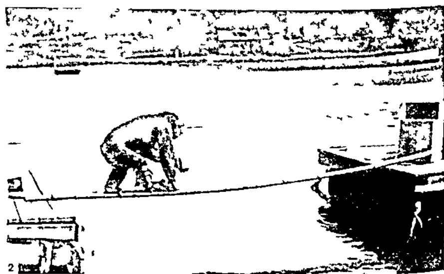


Fig 78 Experiments with chimpanzee Raphael
1—extinguishing fire 2—on rafts
After E Vatsuro 1948 (1) and G Roginsky 1948 (2)

resembles what we assume to be the *modus operandi* of our ancestors in those distant times when they lived in herds and began to use natural objects as their primitive tools

There can be no doubt however that the study of simian behaviour is an extremely valuable contribution towards explaining the process of anthropogenesis The similarity of some basic features of behaviour (higher nervous activity) and the





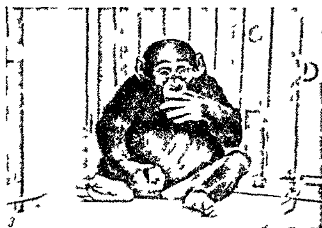


Fig 79 Experiment with chimpanzee Lada Light signal indicates that food has been placed in a box to which entry is effected by a door in the wall outside the cage
1—before experiment 2—signal has been switched on (round opening is uncovered) 3—food in ape's hands
After N Rokotova 1953

expression of emotions, indicate the general line of development followed by the brain and the sensory organs in the ancestors of man apes and monkeys

The observations and experiments carried out on monkeys at the Pavlov laboratories and at the Sukhumi Medico Biological Station by Pavlov s pupils and followers during the past quarter of a century confirm Darwin s theory of man s descent from the animal kingdom and on the basis of the new materialist physiology reveal the closer phylogenic relationship between man and the higher Primates the apes and monkeys

The higher nervous activity and behaviour of monkeys are conditioned by the historically developed relations of the organism to its environment that constitute the characteristic features of the species According to L G Voronin (1952, 1954) who used Pavlov s methods to carry out important research at Sukhumi and Koltushi monkeys possess very highly developed imitative ability well expressed orientational investigatory reflexes a means of signalling by sound and gesticulation reflexes and strong nervous processes of excitation and inhibition

The biological importance of the conditioned reflex activity of animals is also shown by the experiments made by L G Voronin and his assistants at the Pavlov Laboratory at Koltushi studying the comparative physiology of higher nervous activity in vertebrates (N A Rokotova 1953)

The sum of conditioned reflexes accumulated by the animal in the course of its life constitute its individually acquired experience the character and volume of which depends on the animals natural ability that has its roots in the specific qualities of its nervous system This experience furthermore is not without some influence on the nature of higher nervous activity in successive generations as a result of inherited features

Man has an abundance of conditioned reflexes due to his complicated social surroundings, his labour processes in production his constant association with others of his own kind and his very complex brain Typical of man is his highly developed psyche and behaviour both qualitatively different from those of the animals conditioned by the specific development of a second signalling system that is common to all animals According to Pavlov, in the course in addition to the first of man s evolution there has arisen in addition to the first signalling system of conditioned reflexes a second system consisting of oral and graphic symbols these can depict everything that people perceive directly from the outside world and from their own inner world

4 THE SECOND SIGNALLING SYSTEM—THE DISTINGUISHING FEATURE OF HUMAN THOUGHT

When Pavlov was reviewing more than half a century of extremely rich scientific work and pondering over those features that distinguish man from the animals he came to the conclusion that the qualitative differences are to be found first and foremost in the structure and functions of the brain, in higher nervous activity In his search for that quality that most sharply typifies man and helps form those specific features we have discussed above, he developed the concept of the second signalling system

Pavlov describes it thus In the developing animal kingdom at the phase of man's emergence, there occurred an extraordinary addition to the mechanism of nervous activity The first signalling system of reality is also possessed by man But the word constituted a second our special system of signalling reality and is the signal of the first signals The numerous irritations effected by the spoken word on the one hand led us away from reality and we must, therefore always remember this in order not to distort our relations to reality On the other hand, it was precisely labour and the word that is connected with it that made men of us concerning which of course there is no need to speak here There can be no doubt however that the basic laws that have been established for the first signalling system must also govern the second because it is a function of that same nerve tissue"

When Pavlov spoke of the laws governing the activity of the nerve cells and conductors in carrying out the functions of the first and second signalling systems in their relation to the spoken language, he was well aware that the two methods of communication are qualitatively of different value and this not only because the second developed on the basis of the first but because the spoken word articulate speech is one of the most amazing factors distinguishing man from the animal kingdom

In his writings Pavlov again and again stresses the difference *in principle that exists between the first and second system of* signals

Of course for man the word is just as much a real conditioned stimulus as all those others that are common to him and the animals but at the same time it embraces such a wide field that there are no other conditioned stimuli known to the animals that can compare with it either qualitatively or quantitatively The spoken word thanks to the entire preceding life of the adult man, is connected with all external and internal stimulations that reach the cerebral hemispheres it signals them all

it replaces them all and can, therefore, produce those actions those reactions of the organism that are conditioned by the stimuli

Pavlov's teachings enable us to get a more profound under standing of Engels assertion concerning the important role played by articulate speech side by side with work, in the life of man and of its effect on his organism The brain and the sensory organs were transformed under the combined action of work and speech they acquired new qualities and perfec tion in the progressive unification of vital processes in the human body

Brain specialists are able to give a fairly precise localization to speech functions especially by their study of the micro structure of the cerebral cortex The Institute of the Brain (Academy of Medical Sciences of the U S S R) has conducted detailed investigations of the frontal lobes (Y P Kononova) the inferior parietal region (Y G Shevchenko), the temporal region (S M Blinkov) the ontogenesis of the cortex (G I Po lyakov) the occipital region (I N Filimonov) and the thalamus (M M Kurepina) Another important study is that of the vas cular system of the cortex carried out by B N Klosovsky (1954) at the Institute of Pediatry (Academy of Medical Sciences of the U S S R)

The investigation of the sound producing apparatus the speech organs is of interest in addition to the study of the brain cortex and its close relation to speech functions During recent years a number of works have appeared both anatomical and anthropological on the larynx The work of V V Bunak (1951) who has studied the laryngeal structure in man and the apes in connection with the development of speech (see also the work of E N Khrisanfova 1956) is worthy of attention

The investigations listed above are important to the under standing of the evolution functions and structure of the human brain and of the development of speech and thought According to Pavlov, speech and man s thinking capacity are intimately connected In 1932 he wrote about that addition that must be accepted to obtain a general impression of higher nervous activ ity in man This addition concerns the speech functions that introduce a new principle into the activity of the cerebral hemi spheres If our senses and impressions of the surrounding world represent our first concrete signals of reality then speech especially primary kinaesthetic irritations that reach the brain from the organs of speech constitutes a second signalling system the signals of signals They are a digression from reality and allow generalization these features constitute our addi tional *specifically human higher thought process*

It would be difficult to overestimate the significance that this Pavlovian postulate has for the science of man and his mind

Soviet anthropologists must increase their planned investigation of the anatomical and physiological peculiarities of man as compared with the apes monkeys and other mammals that are most important in the study of evolution First and foremost this concerns the brain the afferent nerves the speech apparatus and the hands the anthropological study of which must concern the adaptation of the human body to erect locomotion work, and speech functions, as seen in man s ontogenic and phylogenic development

The great similarity of the anatomical and physiological features of the human and simian brain and sensory organs due to their close phylogenic relationship, permits us to seek noticeable similarity in their higher nervous activity despite the fact that it is here that the difference is particularly great because it has been conditioned by the specific path of development taken by human consciousness

In order to discover how man s specific labour activities could have been initiated we must turn in particular to its fountainhead in the palaeobiology of the Upper Tertiary anthropoids The ancestors of man were among these anthropoid apes and primordial forms of work activity must have developed there

Since man is very closely related to the apes it is there that one must seek suggestions of the primitive forms of human labour

Some conception of the way in which our ancestors went over to the use of tools may be had by studying the behaviour of apes under artificial experimental conditions The numerous observations and experiments conducted by Soviet scientists have shown that the apes when placed in a position in which they could not obtain food with their hands have proved capable of making adequate use of sticks and other objects to obtain it

In drawing a parallel between the type of behaviour exhibited by the apes and man in defining the similarity and differences between them, we must emphasize that the behaviour of modern man is primarily conditioned by the influences of his social surroundings It is essential to take into consideration the profound qualitative distinctiveness of human behaviour Attention must also be drawn to the radical difference between the behaviour of modern man and that of other animals since it is due to differences in the nature of their thought processes

The behaviour of the apes must not be judged as that of individuals. These animals live as a rule in herds, and their behaviour to a very considerable extent reflects the influence of the gregarious way of life, and this is important for the understanding of anthropogenesis. One cannot, of course, conceive of labour in the form that is characteristic of man alone, i.e. in the form of social activity, having been initiated by apes that did not live in herds.

A great part in the development of consciousness must be ascribed to social surroundings with their powerful influence on the processes of interaction between developing labour and developing brain and speech. To get an idea of how social habits developed among the earliest men, we must examine manifestations of the herd instinct among the Primates.

C H A P T E R T H R E E

THE HERD INSTINCT IN MONKEYS AND RUDIMENTARY FORMS OF LABOUR

1 THE HERD INSTINCT IN MONKEYS

The herd instinct is met with quite frequently among the higher Primates The lemurs and monkeys live mostly in groups The tree shrews (Tupaiidae) closely related to the lemurs (figs 80 82) usually live singly or in pairs Some of the lemurs form small groups of six to twelve (for example the Lemur catta L *(ring tailed)* and *Lemur macaco L (black lemur))* others, like the ruffed Lemur variegatus Kerr live in big troops a third group like the lorises and galagos live in pairs or in families while the dwarf lemurs (Chirogaleus E Geoffroy) pot tos (Perodicticus Bennett) and mouse lemurs (Microcebus E Geoffroy) live singly The tarsiers live mostly in pairs (see summary given by S Zuckerman, 1932)

Some of the American marmosets (Hapalidae) such as the tufted eared marmoset (Hapale illiger) and more particularly the common marmoset (Hapale jacchus L) live in small groups up to six individuals as do the maned tamarins or lion mar mosets (Leontocebus Wagner) others live in pairs or indi vidually

Of the Cebidae family (figs 83 85) the owl faced monkeys or durukuli (Aotus trivirgatus Humboldt), apparently live in very small groups or pairs in the same way as the titi monkeys (Cal licebus Thomas) sakis *(Pithecia Desmarest et Chiropotes Les* son) ouakaris (Cacajao Lesson) and woolly monkeys (Lagoth rix E Geoffroy)

A group of capuchin monkeys usually of 10 to 12 members (the males also live by themselves) sometimes join herds of squirrel or death s head monkeys (Saimiri Voigt) of 50 to 100 members They also attach themselves to herds of coatas or spider monkeys that number from 30 to 40 black faced (Ateles ater F Cuvier) and up to 100 red faced spider monkeys (Ateles paniscus E Geoffroy) Other types of spider monkeys live in smaller groups of from 10 to 20 members

The behaviour of the apes must not be judged as that of individuals. These animals live, as a rule, in herds, and their behaviour to a very considerable extent reflects the influence of the gregarious way of life, and this is important for the understanding of anthropogenesis. One cannot, of course, conceive of labour in the form that is characteristic of man alone, i.e. in the form of social activity, having been initiated by apes that did not live in herds.

A great part in the development of consciousness must be ascribed to social surroundings with their powerful influence on the processes of interaction between developing labour and developing brain and speech. To get an idea of how social habits developed among the earliest men, we must examine manifestations of the herd instinct among the Primates.

THE HERD INSTINCT IN MONKEYS AND RUDIMENTARY FORMS OF LABOUR

1 THE HERD INSTINCT IN MONKEYS

The herd instinct is met with quite frequently among the higher Primates The lemurs and monkeys live mostly in groups The tree shrews (Tupaidae), closely related to the lemurs (figs 80 82), usually live singly or in pairs Some of the lemurs form small groups of six to twelve (for example the Lemur catta L [ring tailed] and Lemur macaco L [black lemur]) others like the ruffed Lemur variegatus Kerr live in big troops a third group like the lorises and galagos live in pairs or in families while the dwarf lemurs (Chirogaleus E Geoffroy) pot tos (Perodicticus Bennett) and mouse lemurs (Microcebus E Geoffroy) live singly The tarsiers live mostly in pairs (see summary given by S Zuckerman 1932)

Some of the American marmosets (Hapalidae) such as the tufted eared marmoset (Hapale illiger) and more particularly the common marmoset (Hapale jacchus L) live in small groups up to six individuals as do the maned tamarins or lion mar mosets (Leontocebus Wagner) others live in pairs or indi vidually

Of the Cebidae family (figs 83 85) the owl faced monkeys or durukuli (Aotus trivirgatus Humboldt) apparently live in very small groups or pairs in the same way as the titi monkeys (Cal licebus Thomas) sakis (Pithecia Desmarest et Chiropotes Les son) ouakaris (Cacajao Lesson) and woolly monkeys (Lagoth rix E Geoffroy)

A group of capuchin monkeys usually of 10 to 12 members (the males also live by themselves) sometimes join herds of squirrel or death s head monkeys (Saimiri Voigt) of 50 to 100 members They also attach themselves to herds of coatas or spider monkeys that number from 30 to 40 black faced (Ateles ater F Cuvier) and up to 100 red faced spider monkeys (Ateles paniscus E Geoffroy) Other types of spider monkeys live in smaller groups of from 10 to 20 members





Fig 80 Tupaias
1—common tree shrew (Tupaia glis Diard) habitat India Indo China Malay Archipelago *2*—the pen tailed tree shrew (Ptilocercus lowii Gray) habitat Malacca Borneo Sumatra Banka
After H Osborn 1918 (*1*) and after W Gregory 19 9 (*2*)



Fig 81 Group of ring tailed lemurs (Lemur catta L) After H Klaatsch 1915



Fig 82 Herd of sifakas (Propithecus verreauxi G Grandidier) habitat South Madagascar After G Grandidier and G Petit



Fig 83 Owl faced monkey or durukuli (Aotus trivirgatus Humboldt) habitat Eastern Brazil
After A Brehm 1904

Very interesting observations of the herd instinct in red faced spider monkeys were made in 1932 33 by C P Carpenter (1935) in the Province of Cotto on the frontier between Panama and Costa Rica

In the primeval forests along the Rio de la Vaca there are large numbers of spider monkeys They live in herds of as many as 32 individuals During the day they search for food moving through the trees while the youngsters frolic At dusk the herd settles down for the night in a tree that is convenient for the purpose The monkeys wake up very early before dawn

The spider monkeys live almost exclusively on fruit and nuts and feed twice a day their chief meal is eaten in the morning approximately from dawn to 10 a m the second in the after noon In their search for food they wander about within the limits of a more or less definite forest area When moving along the branches the spider monkeys hold their long prehen sile tails over their backs but when they pass from branch to branch they also use them as a fifth organ for grasping



Fig 84 Squirrel monkeys (Saimiri sciureus L) habitat Brazil Guiana Archives of Moscow Museum of Anthropology



Fig 85 Scarlet faced or white ouakari (Cacajao rubicundus s calvus I Geoffroy) habitat Eastern Brazil Guiana After S Zuckerman 1933



Fig 86 Mantled howling monkey (Alouatta palliata Gray) adult female After C Carpenter 1934

and climbing Their method of locomotion is similar to the brachiation of the gibbons as they hold on to a branch by their hands (and tails) with the trunk in a vertical position

The herd of spider monkeys often breaks up into groups that live independently for a day or a week and then join up to form a herd again These smaller groups vary in composition Carpenter noted the following combinations 1) a female with one two or more youngsters 2) several females with their offspring 3) one male or several males with a much larger number of females and their offspring 4) males alone (up to 10 individuals of various ages from youngsters up to aged monkeys)

As they wander about the woods the groups keep in touch by vocal sounds calling to each other from time to time Occasionally they approach close enough to see each other

The females of the red spider monkey are apparently capable of reproduction throughout the year which explains in particular the presence of youngsters of all ages in the herd At the same time definite periods of sexual activity have

been noticed among them something in the nature of a heat period

For about a month after birth the young monkey clings to its mother's belly after which it is carried on her back with its tail grasping the root of its mother's and its hands and feet fastened in her fur The mothers frequently rid the coats of their offspring of parasites and thorns Less frequently the monkeys clean each other's coats

Play has been observed only amongst the youngsters Carpenter reported that young spider monkeys chase one another for hours and that their games consist of running, leaping from branch to branch or up and down in one place and hanging from branches by their tails and extremities they also play with twigs and other objects Very young animals also play with their own feet and tails During their play they catch one another and bite playfully Tussles and struggles even when the monkeys are hanging by their tails constitute an important feature of their play as many as four animals participating in such a game

Carpenter observed several battles between males Some males that had been killed by hunters had scars on their hands shoulders and heads and some of them had torn ears It seems however that serious battles between them are not frequent They may possibly occur on account of the females although there are generally more females than males in a herd of spider monkeys Altogether Carpenter studied 181 individuals of these 46 were males and 76 females (22 of the latter being mothers with offspring) 37 young animals and 22 infants still with their mothers

Some of the woolly monkeys live in groups up to 14 in number while others such as the brown woolly monkeys (Lagothrix infumata Spix) live in pairs According to E Bartlett (1871) several pairs may live in one tree Groups of them are sometimes mixed with other species of capuchin monkey Lastly the howling monkeys (Alouatta Lacepede) usually live in small herds in which there are normally more females than males *as is the case with the spider monkeys Other howling monkeys* live in pairs or in small groups of 5 or 6

Carpenter's observations (1934) of mantled howling monkeys (Alouatta palliata Gray) (fig 86) on the island of Barro Colorado (Central America) showed that they live in groups of 4 to 29 35 individuals the average herd being 17 or 18 animals The ratio of males to females was 27 72

Carpenter noted in particular that when a female is sexually active several males will copulate with her in turn without any

signs of jealousy No quarrelling or rivalry between males for the leadership of the group or in its defence from enemies was noted between the males of a single group or clan



Fig 87 Group of grey green monkeys (Cercopithecus griseoviridis Desmarest=C sabaeus L) in tropical jungle
After A Brehm 1904

Carpenter also reported that the howling monkeys make use of nine different vocal signals that are either expressions of emotions or signals warning of danger There were also several sounds whose significance could not be ascertained

The herd instinct is somewhat more strongly expressed in the lower catarrhine monkeys (S Zuckerman 1932) Firstly let us examine the Cercopithecine group of guenon monkeys The green vervet monkey (Cercopithecus pygerythrus F Cuvier) lives in groups from 12 to 100 members The grey green guenon the Grivet (C us griseoviridis Desmarest) forms groups from 5 to 30 animals The common green guenon (C us sabaeus L) lives in herds up to 50 strong All these species of monkey however may form large herds or may live in small family groups The same vervet green monkey is met with in some



Fig 88 Group of rhesus monkeys (Macacus rhesus Audebert=Macaca mulatta Zimmermann) Institute of Experimental Pathology Academy of Medical Sciences Sukhumi

places in large herds in others in small family groups, in pairs and by itself Apparently the family groups may unite to form a herd that is not always stable In each herd or family group there is a leader the biggest, strongest and most bad tempered male (fig 87)

Little is known about the mangabeys (Cercocebus E Geoffroy) who seem to live in small groups of 5 or 6, and are also found in pairs

The macaque herd is built up on the principle of each male retaining for himself as many females as possible Small groups sometimes unite to form a herd

The tailless macaque or Barbary ape (Macaca sylvana L Inuus ecaudatus E Geoffroy) lives in small family groups The rhesus macaque (M mulatta Zimmermann) lives in bigger herds (fig 88) The Formosan macaques (M cyclopis Swinhoe), the common or crab eating (M irus F Cuvier) and the lion tailed (M silenus L) live in herds of 12 to 20 or more animals The pigtailed macaque (M nemestrina L) is found in larger herds

The tufted Celebes baboon or black ape (Cynopithecus niger Desmarest) that is similar to the macaque monkeys lives in pairs or small family groups containing up to 8 individuals The baboons proper (Papio Muller) have a more highly expressed herd instinct than any other monkey (fig 89) Although some of them live in small groups, as a general rule they form big troops of dozens and even hundreds of animals The Ethiopian Anubis baboon (Papio doguera Pucheran) forms herds up to 100 or 200 animals and the mantled baboons (Papio hamadryas L) form herds of 300 or more, in the vicinity of Mount Kilimanjaro (Kenya) however these animals are found in small groups of 14 to 20 like the yellow baboons (Papio cynocephalus L) Somewhat larger than the last named are the herds of gelada apes (Theropithecus Is Geoffroy) living in South and Central Ethiopia (fig 90) Lastly, the gigantic South African baboon or chakma (fig 91) lives in huge herds of several hundred members

The basic herd unit of the baboons is the family group, this is noted not only by observation of their common gregarious habits When a herd of baboons is pursued it breaks up into separate family groups and these like the unpaired males flee independently Somewhere in a safe place amongst impregnable rocks the herd gathers again The family group may contain another male who submits to the leader but does not enter into sex relations with the females

Some valuable observations of the herd instinct in mantled baboons (figs 92 93) have been made by N Y Voitonis, Nina

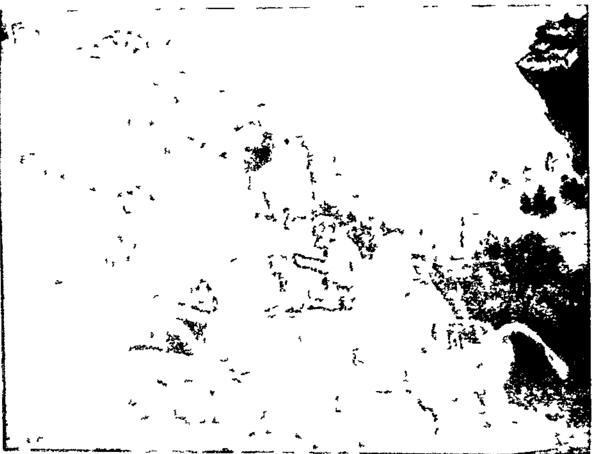


Fig 89 Herd of mantled baboons (Papio Hamadryas) amongst rocks Ethiopia
Fresco by V. Samoilenko-Mashkovtseva, Museum of Anthropology, Moscow State University



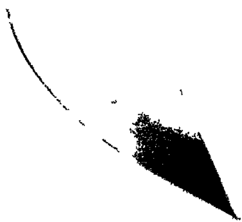




Fig 90 Gelada ape (Theropithecus gelada Ruppell) habitat Ethiopia
Photo by Sukhumi Medico Biological Station



Fig 91 Chakma baboon (Papio porcarius Brunnich) habitat South Africa After S Zuckerman 1933

Tikh and other scientists at the laboratory studying the development of higher nervous activity at the Sukhumi Medico Biological Station (Academy of Medical Sciences of the U S S R) The main conclusion drawn by Nina Tikh from her observations (1950) was *The most important moment achieved by the apes in the development of the herd instinct is that their herd relations while retaining their biological significance for the preservation of the species extend beyond the bounds of direct dependence on sexual food and defence impulses and become an independent necessity*

The following qualities are of importance to the monkeys highly developed nervous system receptors and muscular apparatus unusual rapidity and lability of perception a well developed memory and a great ability to acquire individual experience and of mimicry These are the features that determined the development in the immediate precursors of man of intricate and specially formed higher nervous activity the inception of social labour and later of speech

Semnopithecinae, lower catarrhine leaf monkeys live mostly



Fig 90 Gelada ape (Theropithecus gelada Ruppell) habitat Ethiopia
Photo by Sukhumi Medico Biological Station

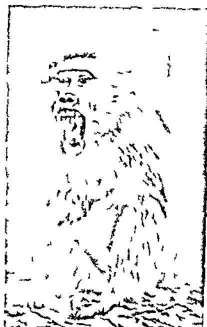


Fig 91 Chakma baboon (Papio porcarius Brunnich) habitat South Africa
After S Zuckerman 1933

Tikh and other scientists at the laboratory studying the development of higher nervous activity at the Sukhumi Medico Biological Station (Academy of Medical Sciences of the USSR) The main conclusion drawn by Nina Tikh from her observations (1950) was The most important moment achieved by the apes in the development of the herd instinct is that their *herd relations, while retaining their biological significance for the preservation of the species extend beyond the bounds of direct dependence on sexual, food and defence impulses and become an independent necessity*

The following qualities are of importance to the monkeys highly developed nervous system receptors and muscular apparatus unusual rapidity and lability of perception a well developed memory and a great ability to acquire individual experience and of mimicry These are the features that determined the development in the immediate precursors of man of intricate and specially formed higher nervous activity the inception of social labour and later of speech

Semnopithecinae lower catarrhine leaf monkeys live mostly



Fig 9 Mantled bal o s in op i a r cage Sukl u i Me lic Bi l gic l Stat o

in herds frequently of 6 to 12 members and never more than 30 Such species as the Barbian langur (Semnopithecus or Presbytis barbei Pocock) form bigger herds up to 50 members The entellus langur (S entellus Dufresne), the sacred monkey of the Hindus lives in herds of 100 or more The priests of one temple in Benares maintained about 200 of these monkeys Zuckerman (1932) reports that in several parts of India large herds of these monkeys are to be seen on the banks of the rivers, in the trees, in the vicinity of villages and on the roofs of village houses The langur herd consists of numerous family groups The proboscis monkey or kahau that is found only in Borneo (fig 94) has been seen in herds of about 40 the same applies to the African guerezas (Colobus Illiger)

From what has been said about the herd instinct in the lower monkeys we may draw the conclusion that only a small number of them live in pairs and that the majority live in small groups or in large herds of several dozen animals Lastly some of the arboreal monkeys such as the Semnopitheci and such terrestrial monkeys as the doguera hamadryas and chakma baboons form huge herds of which an important structural



Fig 93 Mantled baboons Females with young Sukhumi Medico Biological Station



Fig 94 Proboscis monkeys

1—proboscis monkey or kahau (Simia nasica F Cuvier=Nasalis larvatus Wurmb) young female habitat Borneo 2—snub nosed golden monkey (Rhinopithecus roxellanae Milne Edwards) habitat Tibet Western China
After A Brehm 1904 (1) and after F Cuvier and E Geoffroy 1815 (2)

element is the family unit consisting of a male and one or two or more females with their babies and young offspring The small herds are usually nothing more than family groups Male individuals of all species are found living alone when they have not yet acquired female partners

Of the apes some of the gibbons for example the hoolock gibbon (Hylobates hoolock Harlan) live in herds The others such as the white handed gibbon or lar (H lar L) live in small groups of not more than 20 Groups of lar gibbon males form separate bachelor clubs Complete data on the family life of gibbons are not available According to Ch B Kloss (1908) they live in pairs I G Sanderson and G Steinbacher (1957) have also recently subscribed to this opinion Zuckerman however concedes that one male may live with several females

The orangutans (Pongo Lacepede) are much less gregarious and are usually found in small family groups The male is even found living apart from the female and her young but the family apparently is an integral and permanent formation

The herd instinct is manifested by young orangutans who join company and travel for some time together, after which they divide up into pairs (Fig. 95). It is very difficult to observe the orangutan in its natural habitat, the tropical forest with a swampy floor. R. W. T. Shelford (1916) expressed the opinion that until people acquire the habit of tree climbing it will be impossible to discover whether the orangutans live in pairs or whether the male lives with several females (A. R. Wallace, 1872).

The greatest African ape, the gorilla (Gorilla Oken), usually lives in small groups (Fig. 96) of one or several families.

Family groups consisting of one male, one female and their young are met with, but usually the male is accompanied by several females (up to six).

On account of this, adult males are often found living alone. The gorilla herd varies from 1 to 20-30 and in rare cases as many as 40. The herds of mountain gorillas are larger than those of the coast gorillas (Carl Akeley, 1926).

Alliances of gorillas in big groups of 30 to 40 are of a temporary character. It is reported that family groups of mountain



Fig. 95. Orangutans
1—young male, 5 years; 2—young female. After I. T. Sanderson and G. Steinbacher, 1937 (1), and from Dr S. Voronov's monkey nursery at Menton, France (2)

apes (Gorilla gorilla beringei Matschie) after spending the day in search of food may gather together in the evening It will be remembered that the great anthropoid apes build nests in the trees in which to spend the night while other monkeys do not The gorillas however especially the big males frequently build their nests on the ground for one night only Nest building is an inherent complicated unconditioned reflex

Information on the life of the mountain gorillas at liberty is to be obtained primarily from a monograph by Harold C Bingham (1932) He spent two months making a special study of them in September and October 1929 in the game reserve of the Albert National Park to the north of Lake Kivu in the Belgian Congo (reserve founded in March 1922) The gorillas there live on the slopes of the extinct volcanoes Mikeno Karasimbi Visoki Sabinio Gehu and others up to 4 000 metres in height They live in the tropical growths that cover the lower slopes they are also found higher up the mountains where the soil is composed of the products of volcanic eruptions Bamboo is an important plant in these parts and its young shoots constitute one of the favourite foods of the gorillas

In the lower zone at a height of about 2,300 metres the gorillas build nests both on the ground and in the trees but higher up they spend the night on the ground choosing for their nests places that are protected from the cold winds and rains Bingham studied altogether 500 nests in one place he saw 38 nests of various sizes all at once 12 of them in the trees Two nests had been skilfully built on the tops of the bamboo in one case 10 and in another 12 trees had been used in building a nest the tops of them had been bent and their branches interlaced so that the foliage with the thinner twigs formed a nest The nests are usually built at a height of 3 to 18 metres

In the day time while eating or resting the gorillas make similar nests or resting places which Bingham named conditionally day time nests These ground nests the gorillas may also use as sleeping places at night The methods of building night nests vary greatly depending on the nature of the locality, the weather, the vegetation and the age of the animal concerned Sometimes the nests are built under a big tree or more rarely, under the shelter of an overhanging rock

In the high mountain areas the nests are frequently made by breaking young brittle trees and forming them into a framework on the bottom of which leaves from the bigger trees are placed In the lower zone many nests are built in trees in the forks of branches by breaking bending and interlacing the thinner branches The animal sits or stands in the middle of



Fig 96 Herd of mountain apes (*Gorilla gorilla beringei*)
Fresco by V Samoilenko Mashkovtseva Museum of Anthropology Moscow State University



Fig. [illegible] Herd of common chimpanzee (Pan troglodytes Blumenbach)
Fresco by V. Simonenko-Mishlovtseva. Museum of Anthropology, Moscow State University

the future nest and when it has built the framework lines it with leaves If the nest proves unstable the gorilla smashes it and builds a new one or goes to another place and builds a fresh nest there

During the day the gorillas move about the forest in search of food They may wander for several days or even several weeks and then return to their original starting place An area that abounds in food is frequently chosen for the day time and sometimes also for the night s rest In the course of their travels the gorillas cross streams

The gorilla eats succulent vegetable foods and has little need of water especially as water collects in the hollows of some big leaves after rain Among the plants and their parts used by the gorillas as food Bingham mentions the hearts of wild celery banana stalks wild parsnips various tree fruits juicy black cherries the juicy young stems of green lobelia and young bamboo shoots Animal food (insects the honey of wild bees birds' eggs and fledgelings) is only used by way of exception Apparently the gorillas very seldom climb trees for food

Bingham managed to make a number of interesting observa tions although they were unfortunately very brief He noted gorillas living alone in pairs in family groups of 5 or 6 in herds of 10 25 and even in herds of 30 or 40 individuals

It was very difficult to observe the gorillas and photograph them in the dense vegetation It was rarely possible even to get within 30 metres of the gorillas In some cases the gorillas noticed that they were being watched but remained indifferent to the presence of people who of course exercised care and kept hidden as far as possible

Bingham heard the gorillas produce various noises—grunts barking whining snorting and roaring The sounds they make by beating their breasts with their fists are of a special charac ter The leader of the herd is a big male, quite frequently with grey hair on his back and loins When they sensed people in their vicinity the males made various sounds in chorus expressing anxiety while the other members of the herd kept calm When they beat their breasts the males raised their elbows

In general gorillas are less mobile and playful than chim panzees When they are on the ground gorillas usually move on all fours but they sometimes take a few steps on their hind limbs beating their breasts as they go

Bingham describes the presence of leaders in herds of goril las In one instance a male with a grey coat realized that he was being watched and made every effort to slip quietly away

with the eight members of his group In another case wrote Bingham the leader of quite a large herd twenty two gorillas tried to approach the watchers unnoticed in an effort to ensure the security of his herd he did not attack the people but merely kept them under observation

The first successful photographs of gorillas in their natural habitat were made by Mrs Broughton in 1932 She observed the life of mountain gorillas in deep thickets trying to get as close as possible to them which at times was not without danger The gorillas were exceedingly wary One male seeing the people in the thicket tried to get behind and attack them from the rear With the aid of a telescopic lens Mrs Broughton succeeded in photographing young gorillas in a ground nest One female was startled by the click of the camera and climbed up a tree to find out where the noise came from, she was also photographed

Chimpanzees (Pan Oken) live in small herds that sometimes join forces The family like that of the gorillas is polygamous there being several females to each male as Garner noted in his observation of chimpanzees and other monkeys in the African thickets (1892)

Henry Nissen (1931) made some valuable observations of the life of chimpanzees at liberty in French Guinea he was working at Kindia near the Pastoria Laboratory of the Parisian Pasteur Institute where there is a railway connecting it with the port of Konakri He observed the life of various herds of chimpanzees (fig 97) in tropical thickets for 62 days in the dry season He describes the way in which these apes spend their day

The chimpanzees begin moving in their nests before day break They are awakened by hunger and start out through the forest in search of food By 10 or 11 o clock the chimpanzees are down on the ground again and rest in their nests in the shade of bushes or trees In general the chimpanzees avoid the direct rays of the sun, especially at midday

Games are played by the younger members and consist of chasing each other playful but furious struggles with howls and screams sometimes accompanied by a fearful noise when the chimpanzees hammer on the tree trunks with the palms of their hands and the soles of their feet In the course of a day the herds travels 7 10 km within their own area Towards evening they eat again They do not reject sour fruits or even those that to our taste are bitter

The chimpanzees have extremely keen sight They notice when they are being watched from a distance of almost a thousand yards hurry to hide running along the ground on all fours and with the aid of their arms moving through the tree

tops to reach the densest thickets In the evening before sun set, the chimpanzees make their nests, building at heights varying from 2 to 16 metres (average height—5 to 5½ m) The chimpanzees make separate nests for themselves Nissen says that chimpanzee nests are a typical element of the tropical landscape in those places where they live

One observer noted 11 nests in one tree The young were in nests together with the adults The nests were clean and free from excrement Judging by the undigested seeds and other com ponents of the excrement Nissen found that chimpanzees eat over 30 varieties of plant

The chimpanzee herd consists of 8 9 individuals (minimum 5 maximum 14) and is not a regular family group since there are in many cases at least two mature males Nissen believes that a male and female in the chimpanzee herd may not be even temporarily connected by a strictly limited marital alliance It is however extremely difficult to observe sexual and other re lations between chimpanzees in their natural habitat and he hesitates to draw definite conclusions

The development of the herd instinct in apes and monkeys in addition to such biological moments as the search for food and defence from enemies is also favoured by the circumstance that both the male and the female can reproduce throughout the year The menstrual or oestrous cycles are regular and the females of many species of catarrhine monkeys experience a discharge of mucous and blood Some of them develop big menstrual pads (sex skin) for example the various macaque monkeys, the mangabeys and baboons (P V Bochkarvov 1935 M F Nesturkh 1946 L V Alexeyeva 1949 L V Ale xeyeva and M F Nesturkh 1958) The cycles follow each other regularly every 30 to 35 days According to Zuckerman s data the average menstrual cycle in female chimpanzees is 36 days gorillas about 45 days orangutans 32 days lower catarrhine monkeys from 31 to 42 days In women the cycle varies from 27 to 29 days (data for Primates cf J Harms 1956)

Newborn monkeys are to be seen at all times of the year although some seasonal effect on the intensity of propagation *has been established for certain species the mantled baboons* for example It is interesting that the absence of seasonal sex cycles is also noted among tarsiers lorises and tupaias who ap pear to closely resemble the monkeys in this point the Mada gascar lemurs however like the majority of mammals have seasonal oestrous cycles

Information on the oestrous cycle in chimpanzees is given by Yerkes and Elder (1936) They made 158 observations of female chimpanzees and established the average length of the cycle

by Engels in his *The Origin of the Family, Private Property and the State* is of great value The animal family and primitive human society are incompatible things primitive man working his way up out of the animal stage either knew no family whatsoever or at the most knew a family that is non existent among animals *

The animal family was destroyed during the progressive development of the primeval horde In the social groups of primitive people various prohibitive barriers emerged and developed and after the original stage of promiscuity had been passed resulted in the system of group marriage that later became the human family

2 INCEPTUAL FORMS OF LABOUR

A study of the herd instinct in present day anthropoid apes shows that it is hardly possible that our ancestors of the Miocene Period lived in big bands It is possible that the horde became more consolidated when the apes took to terrestrial ways of life since this would have made it easier for them to cope with such difficulties in open country as the struggle against new enemies the numerous great cats and other carnivorous animals

Our ancestors had no special natural means of offence and defence, no sharp claws no prominent fangs to say nothing of horns and hoofs—none of the special organs that other mammals use to defend themselves against their enemies They could hardly have been swift runners (Nesturkh 1957)

From this it follows as Darwin stressed that our ancestors were relatively weak animals The development of the herd instinct was a favourable factor of no little importance that helped them in the struggle for existence The herd and social instincts played a tremendous part in the further development from ape to man the qualitatively specific process of the formation of the earliest and early men who eventually developed into men of the modern type

The scientifically founded idea propounded by Marx and Engels on the priority importance of the social instinct in the development of mankind also found expression in the works of Lenin who pointed to the significance of the internal structure of groups of pre men and primitive men In his *The State and Revolution* Lenin speaks of the primitive organisation of a stick wielding herd of monkeys or of primitive man, or of men united in clans ** Thus he marks the stages in the development of social

* K Marx and F Engels *Selected Works* Vol II Moscow 1962 p 196

** V I Lenin *The State and Revolution* See *Collected Works* Vol 25 pp 389 90

forms up to the transformation of the pre clan form of the primitive horde of hominids like the Neanderthalers into social groups of such fossil men as the Cro Magnon people and their descendants

In distant times in the Tertiary Period a progressive development of the anthropoid apes of Southern Asia took place when they were living in herds and had already gone over from arboreal to terrestrial ways of life The further development of the herd instinct and the perfection of biped gait went on at an ever increasing rate as our ancestors moved to more open territory Their fore limbs were relieved of their functions as organs of locomotion and so our ancestors were able to make use of natural objects—sticks and stones—as tools and weapons The process of transition to elementary forms of labour took place in many herds and not in one alone, some started earlier, others later The idea of labour activity begun independently in many herds of our ancestors is the logical conclusion to be drawn from Darwin s theory of anthropogenesis and from Engels' whole conception of the process (Gremyatsky 1934)

It is indeed highly improbable that primitive forms of labour could have been concentrated in one single herd The very idea that the use of tools could have originated in one herd and then spread to others is as improbable as the idea that one single pair of super talented ancestors taught mankind the manufacture and use of tools—a quite ridiculous idea that is nothing more than a variation on the Bible theme Furthermore it was still not real human labour

A completely new form of activity involving tools that like artificial organs increase the power of the natural organs was so much out of the ordinary for an animal that it could not have become deep rooted in a short time The first people however appeared in those herds in which the use of tools to acquire their food had become a typical feature The new method of food acquisition must have developed and taken firm root in a large number of herds before it became a vital necessity to the species It can scarcely be possible however that the use of tools developed in all the herds of our ancestors Some of the herds probably never reached the stage of labour activity and became extinct perhaps after they had for a long period coexisted with herds using tools in which primitive forms of labour had led to the appearance of the first people on Earth the ape men or Pithecanthropi (fig 98)

The transition to erect locomotion the liberation of the fore limbs from their function of supporting the body a highly developed brain and a social way of life—these were the most important prerequisites for the inception of labour activity



Fig 98 Pithecanthropus horde
Drawing by Y Samoilenko Mashkovtseva Moscow Museum of Anthropology

among man s ancestors At first of course the Higher Pliocene anthropoids made use of stones and sticks as tools and weapons the necessity of obtaining food and of defence against enemies being the stimuli Actions that made use of natural objects were of course at first instinctive and even when they became a regular feature of life they remained for a lengthy period semi instinctive

One can well imagine a small group of our ancestors moving from place to place in search of food From time to time different members of that group or horde pick up stones or sticks that are lying handy to dig up an edible root kill some small animal or drive off a wild beast After the transition to erect locomotion our ancestors far superior to all other apes in intelligence and adaptability could not have been content with the use of natural tools they began to make artificial tools Labour processes being biologically advantageous intensified the ecological adaptation of our ancestors assumed a mass character in the hordes and brought about the development of new social laws In this way the inception of labour the fabrication of tools and their use

by a group of their kind marked the beginning of a new era in the evolution of the animal kingdom, a being had appeared that differed qualitatively from all other animals—man had emerged

We may assume a series of transitional stages in the development of labour The earliest men first began to take form as socially working animals Engels in his analysis of the basic stages of anthropogenesis, speaks of people in the process of formation who as a result of a long period of development became ready made people when a new element emerged that was of paramount importance for the further history of mankind—a real human society

The hand erect locomotion labour with the aid at first of natural and later of artificial tools articulate speech, brain and consciousness the ability to abstract and draw conclusions all took shape in the course of an extremely lengthy period of development a period of about 900,000 years in which early men living in a society of their fellows, mutually influenced each other (Semyonov 1959)

There came a sharp increase in the rate of development of man s specific peculiarities during the formative period of a new element the primitive community that emerged as the above mentioned elements were perfected and the primitive human horde in which ready made men had emerged began to disintegrate

A specific feature of human society that distinguishes it from the ape herd is collective labour with the aid of fabricated tools that had begun in the period of transition from ape to man

Work activities must be regarded as a boundary line drawn between the fossil apes and the earliest men that were still in the formative stage the earliest men however, possessed the same physical structure that of the great biped apes as their brethren in other ancestral herds that had not at that time turned to the use of tools

In the first stages of man s development he possessed a strange combination of simian and human features Once again dialectical materialism helps us understand this combination of contradictory elements in the ancient hominids the first representatives of mankind may have been ape men in their physical constitution but in their social qualities they were already human beings although they were at the very lowest stage of development

It would be incorrect to regard anthropogenesis as a gradual process of evolution without a decisive turning point without a leap forward The process of formation that produced the hominids must not be regarded as the simple development of an ape into a man it must not be regarded as being merely the

quantitative augmentation of some features and the diminution of others

Such conceptions are anti-dialectic. They are typical of those who strive to minimize the differences between ape and man in order to simplify the concept of transition of the former into the latter. Darwin, too, made this mistake. He said in his *Origin of Species* that nature "can never take a leap".* Although Darwin realized that man is a being qualitatively different from all other animals, he did not appreciate the decisive role of labour and other social factors in anthropogenesis.

The correct conception is to be found in Engels' labour theory of anthropogenesis, in which spontaneous development plays an important part. Orthograde locomotion, the foot and the hand, the brain, labour, speech and the social instinct—all these elements of anthropogenesis are intertwined and exert mutual influences. They affect each other intimately and are interdependent and themselves effect changes as society and nature develop. In the course of the long and tortuous process of formation experienced by the hominids, the physical type of modern man emerged with a material and spiritual culture that is immeasurably richer than that of more ancient men, his ancestors and predecessors.

---

* Cf. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection*, London, 1950, Chapter VI, p. 167.

Part Three

PALAEANTHROPOLOGICAL DATA ON THE MAKING OF MAN

THE FIRST STAGE THE EARLIEST MEN (PITHECANTHROPI)

1 THE JAVA PITHECANTHROPUS

A new stage in the development of nature began with man s appearance early in the Quaternary Period * In the course of a million years man has developed into a powerful being

As compared with the whole preceding history of the evolu tion of the animal kingdom man has existed for an insignificant period But his achievements in that period and the extent of his influence on the animal and vegetable kingdoms are tremendous

Let us recall that as early as the Tertiary Period, at the time when the higher Primates the apes and monkeys were devel oping the particular line that subsequently led to man was also taking shape We may suppose that it branched off from the common trunk, together with the ancestors of the gorilla and the chimpanzee in the Miocene Epoch After this the ancestral group of anthropoids that was later to bring man into the world developed independently until it had produced the Australopi thecus The first men emerged at the beginning of the Quaternary Period within one of the species of great anthropoid apes of the Australopithecus type (Uryson 1964, 1965)

In the preceding section of man s genealogical tree that lasted throughout the Pliocene Epoch 11 000 000 years there are still some big gaps The gaps are augmented by the fact that the Miocene Epoch of some 8 000 000 years has produced very few

---

* *Since the emergence and development of man is very typical of the* Quaternary Period A P Pavlov suggested calling the system of Quaternary strata anthropogenic and also to give the period the same name Anthro pogen as being characterized by the presence and activity of man The period covered by the Anthropogen has been lengthened by the inclusion of the Villafranca Epoch (the last stage of the Pliocene) in part or wholly Considerable interest in this field attaches to the work of I K Ivanova (1965) on the geological antiquity of fossil hominids in her study the Quaternary Period is taken as being of two million years duration

fossil remains of our ancestors. The finds of the Ramapithecus belonging to the Lower Pliocene, and some others, e.g. the Oreopithecus have done much to fill in the gaps.

The discovery of the Pithecanthropus, combining simian and human physical features, was of outstanding scientific interest. In the eighties of the last century, Professor Eugene Dubois of Amsterdam University (1858-1940), at that time assistant professor of anatomy and military surgeon, saw service on the islands of the Malay Archipelago. He dreamed of finding the fossil remains of man's ancestors. He organized his search on the island of Java and in 1890 found the remains of two skulls belonging to ancient men of the modern type near the village of Wadjak. The crania are very big (1,550 and 1,650 c.c.) and they have pronounced supraorbital ridges.

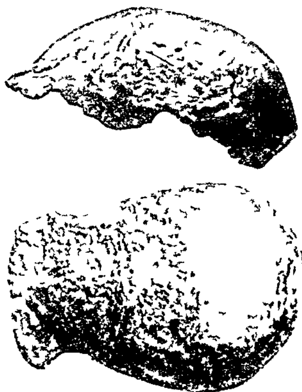


Fig. 39. Cranial vault of Pithecanthropus I (P. erectus Dubois) found in 1891

1—lateral and *2*—superior aspects. 1/3 natural size. After E. Dubois, 1894

At last in 1891 Dubois managed to find a cranial vault (fig 99) and a third upper right molar and in 1892 a femur (thigh bone) (fig 100) and a left upper second premolar belonging to some ape like crea ture In Dubois opinion all these remains belonged to one and the same individual The structural peculiarities of the cranial vault, the greatly sloping forehead the strongly expressed supraorbital torus and the rather large capacity of the cranium (900 c c) led him to conclude that the re mains belonged to a being intermediate between ape and man the missing link in man's genealogy which according to the prophecies of Darwin and Haeckel had to be sought in hot countries Dubois named his find Pithecanthropus erectus the erect biped ape man

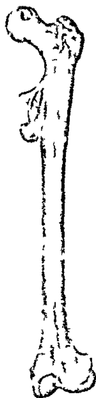


Fig 100
Femur (thigh bone) of Pithe canthropus
1/ natural size
After E Dubois 1894

The remains were discovered near the village of Trinil on the banks of the River Bengawan at a depth of about 15 metres in strata that Dubois defined as Lower Quaternary Later L J C van Es (1931) con firmed the geological age of the Pithe canthropus

After 1895 a lengthy search was made for other Pithecanthropus remains by Leonore Selenka and M Blanckenhorn but without success until 1898 when another Pithe canthropus tooth a left lower first incisor was found

While speaking of the fossil bones of mankind s oldest representatives unearthed on Java we must mention the fragment of a mandible that Dubois had the good fortune to discover at Kedung Brubus (Kedoeng Broboes)

The discovery of the Pithecanthropus remains aroused great interest and impassioned disputes among scientists the world over Many opposed the definition of the remains as those of an intermediate form Rudolf Virchow (1895) regarded the Pithe canthropus as a giant gibbon or some other big fossil ape In Virchow s opinion the Pithecanthropus was neither a new genus of hominid nor the long sought missing intermediate link between man and ape

Even before the Java finds Virchow had cast doubt on the Neanderthal skulls which he believed to belong to a modern

type pathological in character and deformed while still in the ground

P A Minakov (1923) made an attempt to discredit Dubois find ascribing the shape of the skull to considerable posthumous deformation To prove his point he demineralized a modern skull and then subjected it to pressure getting something like the Java skull in shape and dimensions In a letter sent to the Moscow Museum of Anthropology in reply to Minakov the Dutch scientist pointed out that neither the Pithecanthropus cranial vault nor the thousands of animal bone remains found in those same ancient strata had been either demineralized or deformed If a bone is softened and subjected to mechanical pressure it will of course become very pliable and change its shape

Such attempts to cast doubt on an intermediate link between ape and man are only made by those who do not accept the theory of man s descent from an ape because it undermines faith in the miraculous creation of man by God and thus undermines religion one of the strongest buttresses of idealist philosophy

In 1932 Dubois and his assistants searching through boxes of old material gathered by the 1900 expedition found four fragments of Pithecanthropus femurs and later, another fragment (from a sixth femur) After a study of these bones Dubois (1933) expressed the opinion that the Pithecanthropus probably led an arboreal life This opinion however, is refuted by the majority of scholars since the shape and size of the femur differs little from those of the femur of modern man

At the same time Dubois published a monograph in which he proved that femur V (one he had specially studied) differs from a human femur in the microstructure of the compact outer part of the bone N A Sinelnikov (1934 1937) a Soviet anthropologist who had made a study of the structure of a modern human femur (fig 101) found the statement that the Pithecanthropus femur had a special structure groundless and that Dubois by following the example of Virchow and later regarding the Pithecanthropus as a separate species of gibbon had been mistaken The Pithecanthropus is fairly representative of the earliest stage in the evolution of the hominids

The remarkable thing is that Sinelnikov s investigations and conclusions were fully confirmed by Dubois later work (1937) he made a study of the direction of the osteons structural elements in the hard outer casing (substantia compacta) of seven human femurs from Leyden burials dated between 1752 and 1875 and found that their distribution in all the bones was identical with that of the Pithecanthropus femur V Dubois therefore admitted that his earlier conclusion regarding the distribution of osteons in the Pithecanthropus bone and his classification of

the Pithecanthropus as a gibbon had been erroneous He had previously made use of published data on compacta structure in modern human thigh bones that proved to be wrong

While Dubois once spoke of the similarities between the Pithecanthropus and the great anthropoids the gibbons in particular Hans Weinert (1925) showed that it was more closely related to the modern African apes He established the fact that the sinuses in *the frontal bone of the skull (sinus frontales)* are found only in the Pithecanthropus man the gorilla and the majority of chimpanzee species

In the skulls of the gibbons orangutans and the lower monkey these sinuses do not as a rule form Once more the close relationship between man the gorilla and the chimpanzee was

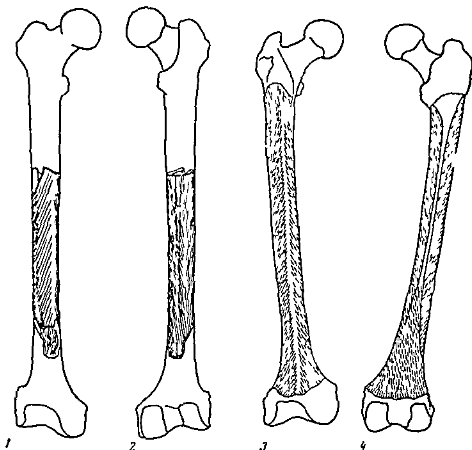


Fig 101 Direction of osteons in compact layer of femur
1 2—Pithecanthropus femur and *3* 4—modern human femur ventral and dorsal aspects
After N Sinelnikov 1937

confirmed it had first been postulated by Darwin and was later supported by Gustav Schwalbe (1923), specialist in comparative anatomy and by many biologists

In a special monograph Weinert (1932) made a detailed analysis of the features which the chimpanzee and other higher apes possess in common with man. He drew the conclusion that man descended from a form of fossil ape that must have resembled the chimpanzee. Man and the chimpanzee must have had a common ancestor in the Pliocene Epoch; the gorilla branched off from the common trunk in an earlier period. It is to be regretted that Weinert did not deal in greater detail with the points of similarity between man and the other great apes, especially the gorilla, whose foot and brain and some other organs have points of especial similarity with the human type.

Be that as it may, the Pithecanthropus is of great interest on account of the fact that the cranial vault, in addition to the frontal sinuses, has other points of similarity with that of the chimpanzee, for example, the strongly expressed supraorbital ridge and a narrowing of the skull behind the sinuses. The skull of the Pithecanthropus, however, is obviously much larger than that of the chimpanzee. The cranial capacity, too, is relatively greater—Pithecanthropus having 900 c c and the chimpanzee only 350-400 c c.

Ales Hrdlicka (1930) considers that the cranial vault of the Pithecanthropus belonged to an elderly female whose height was 165 cm. The cranial capacity of the Pithecanthropus is half way between that of man and the ape, which justifies its name of ape man. The structure of the femur shows that the Pithecanthropus walked upright.

The place of the Pithecanthropus among the hominids was confirmed by the find of another skull on September 13, 1937 by the Netherlands palaeontologist G H R von Koenigswald. Near the village of Sangiran, not far from the place where the first cranial vault was found, he discovered a Pithecanthropus skull and a fragment of a big mandible with teeth of the human type but of a much larger size (fig 102). The remains were discovered in the lower Trinil strata of volcanic tufa. Koenigswald received the skull broken into 30 fragments from which he succeeded in reconstructing it.

The skull of Pithecanthropus II was very similar to that of Pithecanthropus I, but was somewhat smaller in size. Unlike Pithecanthropus I it had both temporal bones intact; their structure is human in character and differs sharply from those of the gibbons. It is noteworthy, however, that on skull Pithecanthropus II the styloid process is poorly developed, as it is in most anthropoids (it is well developed in most Neanderthalers

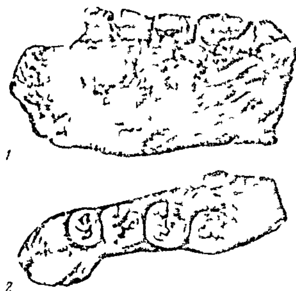


Fig 102 Mandible fragment Pithecanthropus II (found 193[illegible])
1—interior and 2—exterior aspect
⅔ natural size After F Weidenreich 1938

and in all modern men) The right half of the frontal bone the occiput and facial skeleton of Pithecanthopus II were not found

And so skull Pithecanthropus II is also very incomplete but it nevertheless enables us to draw fuller conclusions than Pithecanthropus I Probably the most astounding thing is the small capacity of the cranium which is only 750 c c This is a feature that really makes the Pithecanthropus an intermediate stage between man s immediate predecessors and the other hominids

The small capacity of the second cranium led Koenigswald to assume that the skull belonged to a female and that found by Dubois to a male The difference between the two cranial capacities is about 150 c c The bones of the second skull furthermore are somewhat thinner than those of the first

In any case the Pithecanthropus II skull having a cranium that is close in size to those of the great anthropoids is of great scientific interest and confirms the ape man nature of the Pithecanthropus

The new mandible fragment is probably of equal importance in establishing the real nature of the Java ape man Four teeth three molars and the second premolar the latter resembling those of an anthropoid have been preserved on it Judging by the shallow socket for the canine its crown could not have been as big as

those of the anthropoids The third molar was bigger than the second the second bigger than the first the third molar (wisdom) tooth of all other hominids and of modern man in particular is usually reduced to a greater or lesser degree The mandible has no chin and is very powerful These morphological peculiarities make it possible to say with certainty that the Pithecanthropus is an ape man

In 1938 Koenigswald found a skull fragment (III) belonging to a young individual at the same place—it was a parietal bone with part of the occiput In 1939, Koenigswald managed to find the parietal occipital part of the cranium belonging to a male Pithecanthropus and a fragment of a maxillary with a diastema between the canine and incisor teeth Together with the mandible found in 1937 these parts enabled Weidenreich (1940) to reconstruct a male Pithecanthropus skull (IV) with a cranial capacity of 950 1 000 c c (fig 103)

Still earlier in 1936 the skull of a young individual of about six years of age was found at the eastern end of Java at Mojokerto near the town of Surabaya (Soerabaja) The length of the skull is 133 mm and the cranial capacity nearly 650 c c Dubois believed it to be the skull of a young Javanthropus but



Fig 103 Skull of Pithecanthropus IV reconstructed from fragments found in 1937 and 1939 1/3 natural size After F Weidenreich 1940

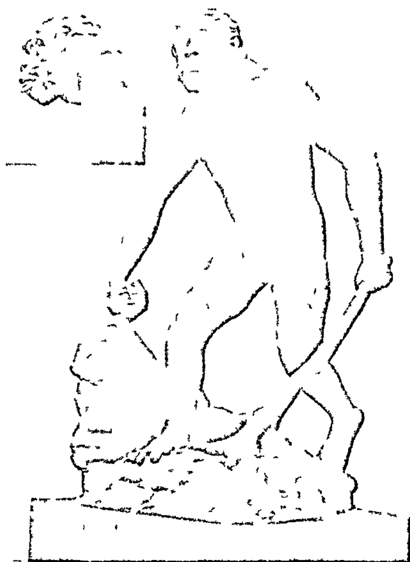


Fig 104 Pithecanthropus Reconstructed by V Vatagin
Museum of Anthropology Moscow State University

in more recent times it had been regarded as belonging to a young Pithecanthropus

One of Virchow's chief reasons for assuming that the Pithecanthropus is an ape and not a man was the absence of any kind of tools in its vicinity It will be remembered however that Dubois finds were made in a secondary deposit and had been carried there by a stream In general it would require a vivid imagination

EARLIEST MEN

EARLY MEN (NEANDERTHAL MAN)

FOSSIL MEN OF MODERN TYPES

1 Boskop

5 Grimaldi

7 Dnepropetrovsk

8 Kostenki

9 Mount Altai

TYPES SHOWING TRANSITION TO THE MODERN TYPE

to believe that the Pithecanthropus' stone tools could also have been carried there by the water and deposited in the vicinity of the skeleton. *The question of whether the Pithecanthropus could* use tools and even make them was one that had to be solved in principle.

Until quite recently the question was left open. The rather well developed brain of the Pithecanthropus gave supporters of the Darwin theory every reason to believe it most likely that it did use tools. This belief was confirmed indirectly by Koenigswald in 1934. In the same area as that in which the skull fragments Pithecanthropus II, III and IV were found he had the good luck to come across several very crude stone tools, one of them resembling a celt.

There can therefore now be very little doubt concerning the human nature of the Java Pithecanthropus (fig. 104). There are some scholars who believe that even the predecessors of the Pithecanthropi used and tried to make tools.

It seems that scientists have long since noticed pieces of flint and other rocks that lie together in clusters of several or of large numbers. In appearance they closely resemble the simplest stone tools. The majority of these stones are of medium size.

Such tools have been found in French Tertiary and Quaternary deposits by A. Rutot. They have been found by other scientists in various parts of Europe. Most of them show signs of having been trimmed on one edge, the other side of the stone being convenient for handling. Stone tools of this kind have become known as eoliths.

A number of scientists, however, have shown that stones that look like eoliths can be obtained naturally, for example by the action of water in tempestuous streams. It does not, of course, follow from this that all eoliths were produced by nature, although it is more than likely that those of the Tertiary Period were made by natural forces and not by man.

Is it not possible that natural objects were used as tools by Upper Pliocene terrestrial anthropoids such as the Australopitheci? It is quite possible that they used natural tools, but hardly likely that they fabricated them. At least there is no proof of the latter (see Raymond Dart's book on this subject). One of the oldest stones which scientists are quite certain is a tool belonged to the Chinese ape-man, the Sinanthropus.

2. THE SINANTHROPUS

The existence of the Pithecanthropus was fully confirmed by finds made in China, where the discovery of the Chinese primitive man, Sinanthropus, was one of the greatest importance to an

thropology The Peking man or Sinanthropus, like the Pithecanthropus lived in the first half of the Quaternary somewhere about the middle of the period and shortly before the beginning of the ice age It had a number of important features in common with the Pithecanthropus

The village of Choukoutien is situated some 54 km to the south west of Peking (fig 105) In the caves of a hill where mining operations were going on, the fossil remains of ancient animals and men were discovered In 1927 Dr Birger Bohlin found the molar tooth of a child The peculiarities of its shape and structure led the British anatomist Davidson Black to define it as belonging to a hitherto unknown genus of fossil hominids Black gave the name of Sinanthropus pekinensis (the China or Peking man) to this genus

The find created a stir in the scientific world Bohlin Pei Wen chung and other scientists from the Chinese Cenozoological Laboratory that studies the animals of the Cenozoic Era launched an energetic search for Sinanthropus remains their exploration of the Kotzetang cave was crowned with success—many human bones and teeth were found

A comparison with the Pithecanthropus remains showed that there were great similarities

Many traces of the Sinanthropus culture were discovered in the form of stone tools and the remains of fires In addition there were many broken and charred animal bones Everything points to the Sinanthropi as having been early men of primitive physical structure who were able to make crude stone tools, hunt animals and use fire they lived collectively

The Sinanthropi finds consist almost entirely of incomplete skulls mandibles teeth clavicles and femurs At first two cranial vaults were found then fragments of lower jaws many teeth and then later several cranial vaults and other bone fragments (Franz Weidenreich 1937) Today the remains of about 50 individuals are known

The first cranial vault found at a depth of 23 metres side by side with the skull of a rhinoceros, is that of a boy (fig 106) This fragment was found by Pei Wen chung in 1929 A year later in 1930 Pei found a second Sinanthropus cranial vault apparently that of a woman 30 35 years old Pei was awarded the gold medal of the Geological Society of China for his discovery The gold medal was also awarded to Davidson Black for the first description of the skulls On the Sinanthropus II skull the temporal bones had been preserved with part of the styloid process, poorly developed and part of the nasal bones Othenio Abel expressed the opinion that the Sinanthropus had a wide flat nose The brain case has a capacity of 1 025 c c

The shape and small size of the Sinanthropus skull are very similar to those of the Pithecanthropus but the vault of the Sinanthropus skull is somewhat higher and the supraorbital ridge is a little thicker These peculiarities show that the Sinanthropus was nearer to the next stage of human development i e close to the Neanderthalers

The endocranial cast made from Sinanthropus I enabled Black to compute the capacity of the cranium at 900 c c The shape of the cast revealed obviously primitive features such as the weakly developed frontal lobes A certain asymmetry makes it possible to assume that the Sinanthropus was right handed

The parietal region of the cerebral hemispheres was high like that of the later hominids it differs from the Pithecanthropus brain in which this area was low On the basis of this Dubois regards the Sinanthropus as belonging to the Neanderthal type which in his opinion is confirmed by some peculiarities of their culture Hrdlicka (1933) agreed with Dubois The Sinanthropus morphological peculiarities taken together however are closer to the Pithecanthropus It would be more correct to regard both these types as earliest or primitive men

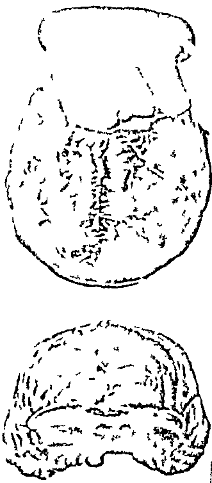


Fig 106 Skull of Sinanthropus I found 1929—superior and frontal aspects 1/3 natural size After H Weinert 1932

An important find was that of an incomplete mandible belonging to an adult Sinanthropus with incisors a broken canine and molar teeth The mandible of a Sinanthropus child was also unearthed Later nine mandibles belonging to individuals of various ages and both sexes were discovered (fig 107) Weidenreich de







taurodontism among hominids is a fairly primitive peculiarity

Another primitive feature of the Sinanthropus is the presence of diastemas in the deciduous dental system These gaps are found either between the canine and the neighbouring incisor (upper) or the premolar (lower) In general the shape of the Sinanthropus teeth is much more primitive than that of the Neanderthalers, the latter bearing much more resemblance to the teeth of modern man These typical structural peculiarities of the teeth as well as a number of others place the Sinanthropus among the earliest men'

Weidenreich was of the opinion that the Australopithecus is closer to the Sinanthropus than any other fossil anthropoid As far as the Dryopithecus is concerned Weidenreich was mistaken in believing that the human line branched off from the common stem of fossil anthropoids prior to the development of the Dryopitheci with their powerful canines and premolars with cutting edges

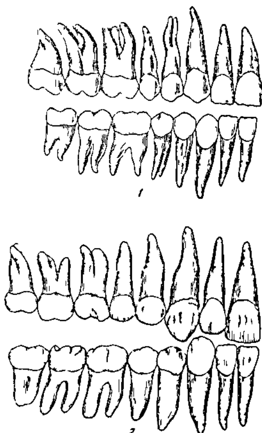


Fig 108 Dentition of hominids
1—modern man 2—Sinanthropus Approx natural size
After F Weidenreich 193

Of great importance in Weidenreich s work was his establishment of the fact that the lower premolars of the Sinanthropus in the shape of their roots (divided into two and even three parts) and their crowns are very similar to the premolars of the anthropoids This is a point that gives fresh support to the theory that man and the apes have a common origin

Apart from the skull bones very scanty fragments of other parts of the Sinanthropus skeleton have been found a clavicle and a semilunar wrist bone At first when only skull remains

had been found a French scientist the abbé H Breuil (1931) expressed the opinion that the cultural traces found together with Sinanthropus remains must belong to some other real people who hunted the Sinanthropi and brought back only heads or skulls to their caves as trophies of the chase Weidenreich was of the opinion that the Sinanthropi hunted each other and were the first cannibals

Boule objected to Weidenreich s opinion and supported that of Breuil He was of the opinion that real men hunted the Sinanthropi and that it was their stone tool industry that had been preserved in the caves at Choukoutien Why then have not the bone remains of these real' people been found in the caves? As there are none of them Breuil s hypothesis is groundless Weidenreich, too can scarcely be right the remains of animal and vegetable (nuts) food show that the Sinanthropus was omnivorous







Fig 109 Sinanthropus skulls found 1936

1—male from LI 2—female from LII 3—male from LIII Approx 1/3 natural size After F Weidenreich 1937

The 1936 excavations provided more valuable material in the shape of four new Sinanthropus skulls In the same Kotzetang cave in section L some fragments of a skull were found that, although small in size had apparently belonged to an adult The cranial capacity was 850 c c and Weidenreich was of the opinion that it was even smaller than skull Pithecanthropus I

In accordance with his working hypothesis that the big skulls mandibles and teeth of the Sinanthropus belong to males and the smaller ones to females Weidenreich believed this skull to be that of a woman He thought it probable that the Pithecanthropus skull found in Java in 1891 also belonged to a

female this had been said before by Dubois and later confirmed by Hrdlička

Far more important was the find of three well preserved but incomplete skulls of adult Sinanthropi (fig 109) They were discovered at the same place in the autumn of 1936 (two are male and one female) Some parts of a facial skeleton found with them include zygomatic and nasal bones and parts of a maxillary bone Skull LI belonged to a male and had a cranial capacity of about 1 200 c c skull LII *is that of a female and has a cranial capacity* of 1 050 c c LIII is a male skull with a capacity of about 1 100 c c The basal bones of all three skulls are missing Skull LIII is the best preserved and has an occiput with the posterior edge of the foramen magnum In their general appearance all three adult skulls from section L are similar to skull I from section E which belonged to a boy 8 9 years old but they have more strongly expressed supraorbital ridges and LI has a noticeable sagittal crest and surface roughness for the attachment of muscles to the temporal bones

A comparison of the dimensions and peculiarities of the three L skulls and skull EI with Pithecanthropus and Neanderthal skulls gave Weidenreich the idea that the Sinanthropus occupies the lowest place relative to all other hominids in respect of those specific features that determine its position in the evolutionary scale although skull LI has features that place it among the variations of the Neanderthal group it is not only the biggest it is also the highest

Weidenreich believed that the Sinanthropus showed greatest similarity with the Neanderthaler found in Java the so called Java man (Javanthropus) whose skull structure is very primitive at the same time Sinanthropus bears some likeness to Pithecanthropus This is borne out by the similarity between cranial casts made from skulls of the Java man and the Sinanthropus The more primitive form of the Sinanthropus brain is revealed by the presence of a beak like process (rostrum) growing inferiorly from the anterior part of the frontal lobe that is reminiscent of the brain structure of the chimpanzee and gorilla This distinguishes the Sinanthropus from the Neanderthalers

In general if we may judge by the latest skull finds the Sinanthropus (fig 110) and the Pithecanthropus very closely approximated each other Weidenreich regarded the main difference between them as being in the shape and degree of development of the supraorbital ridge and the frontal sinuses He noted that they were developed weakly in the Sinanthropus and strongly in the Pithecanthropus which is a reason to consider the Sinanthropus as the more primitive In the opinion of

had been found a French scientist the abbé H Breuil (1931) expressed the opinion that the cultural traces found together with Sinanthropus remains must belong to some other, real people who hunted the Sinanthropi and brought back only heads or skulls to their caves as trophies of the chase Weidenreich was of the opinion that the Sinanthropi hunted each other and were the first cannibals

Boule objected to Weidenreich s opinion and supported that of Breuil He was of the opinion that real men hunted the Sinanthropi and that it was their stone tool industry that had been preserved in the caves at Choukoutien Why, then have not the bone remains of these real people been found in the caves? As there are none of them Breuil s hypothesis is groundless Weidenreich too can scarcely be right the remains of animal and vegetable (nuts) food show that the Sinanthropus was omnivorous



Fig 109 Sinanthropus skulls found 1936

1—male from LI *2*—female from LII *3*—male from LIII Approx 1/3 natural size After F Weidenreich 1937

The 1936 excavations provided more valuable material in the shape of four new Sinanthropus skulls In the same Kotzetang cave in section L some fragments of a skull were found that although small in size had apparently belonged to an adult The cranial capacity was 850 c c and Weidenreich was of the opinion that it was even smaller than skull Pithecanthropus I

In accordance with his working hypothesis that the big skulls mandibles and teeth of the Sinanthropus belong to males and the smaller ones to females Weidenreich believed this skull to be that of a woman He thought it probable that the Pithecanthropus skull found in Java in 1891 also belonged to a

female this had been said before by Dubois and later confirmed by Hrdlicka

Far more important was the find of three well preserved but incomplete skulls of adult Sinanthropi (fig 109) They were discovered at the same place in the autumn of 1936 (two are male and one female) Some parts of a facial skeleton found with them include zygomatic and nasal bones and parts of a maxillary bone Skull LI belonged to a male and had a cranial capacity of about 1 200 c c skull L II is that of a female and has a cranial capacity of 1 050 c c L III is a male skull with a capacity of about 1 100 c c The basal bones of all three skulls are missing Skull L III is the best preserved and has an occiput with the posterior edge of the foramen magnum In their general appearance all three adult skulls from section L are similar to skull I from section E which belonged to a boy 8 9 years old but they have more strongly expressed supraorbital ridges and LI has a noticeable sagittal crest and surface roughness for the attachment of muscles to the temporal bones

A comparison of the dimensions and peculiarities of the three L skulls and skull EI with Pithecanthropus and Neanderthal skulls gave Weidenreich the idea that the Sinanthropus occupies the lowest place relative to all other hominids in respect of those specific features that determine its position in the evolutionary scale although skull LI has features that place it among the variations of the Neanderthal group it is not only the biggest it is also the highest

Weidenreich believed that the Sinanthropus showed greatest similarity with the Neanderthaler found in Java the so called Java man (Javanthropus) whose skull structure is very primitive at the same time Sinanthropus bears some likeness to Pithecanthropus This is borne out by the similarity between cranial casts made from skulls of the Java man and the Sinanthropus The more primitive form of the Sinanthropus brain is revealed by the presence of a beak like process (rostrum) growing inferiorly from the anterior part of the frontal lobe that is reminiscent of the brain structure of the chimpanzee and gorilla This distinguishes the Sinanthropus from the Neanderthalers

In general if we may judge by the latest skull finds the Sinanthropus (fig 110) and the Pithecanthropus very closely approximated each other Weidenreich regarded the main difference between them as being in the shape and degree of development of the supraorbital ridge and the frontal sinuses He noted that they were developed weakly in the Sinanthropus and strongly in the Pithecanthropus which is a reason to consider the Sinanthropus as the more primitive In the opinion of

V. V. Bunak (1959) the structure of the skull at the Archanthropus stage was closer to that of the Sinanthropus than to that of the Pithecanthropus. In any case it is clear that these earliest forms were the first stage in the evolution of the later hominids. The significance of the Sinanthropus fossils for our understanding of the first stage in man's development is very great (fig. 111).

The find of two femurs and one clavicle (all incomplete) that belonged to three different Sinanthropus individuals is of the greatest scientific importance. The bones were discovered by Pei Wen-chung among the material collected during the excavation of section E of the Kotzetang cave in 1936-37. They bear great similarity to the bones of later hominids, including modern man. Judging by the structure of the femurs the Sinanthropus had a fairly erect gait and his upper extremities did not touch the ground.

When Weidenreich described the three bones in 1938 he said that the process of evolution had gone much farther and was much more clearly expressed in the development of the extremities than in the skull, especially the dental system. The clavicle was almost 31 cm long and the femur 40 cm. Weidenreich estimated the height of the female Sinanthropus at 152 cm and the male at 163 cm.

One of the femurs was charred. This circumstance and the fact that the bones were scattered gave Weidenreich grounds to repeat

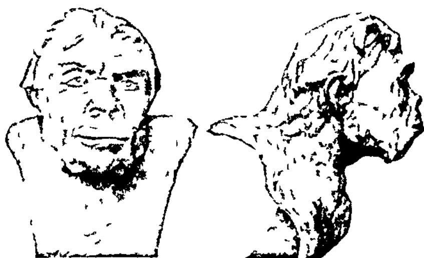


Fig. 110. Sinanthropus.
Reconstructed by M. Gerasimov. Museum of Anthropology, Moscow State University.

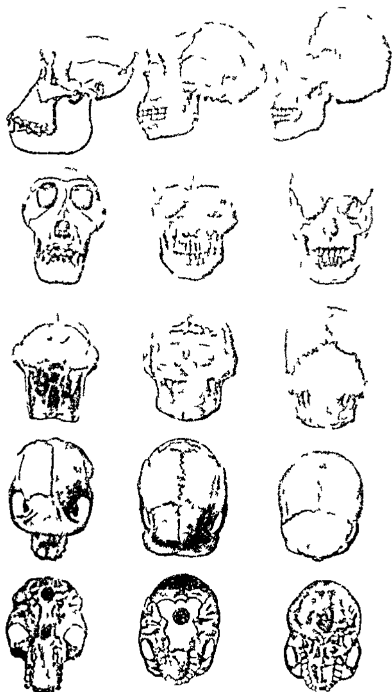


Fig. 111. Comparison of skulls. *I*—female gorilla; *II*—Sinanthropus I (female, reconstructed by F. Weidenreich); *III*—modern man: lateral, frontal, superior and basal aspects. 1 natural size.
(After F. Weidenreich, 1943)

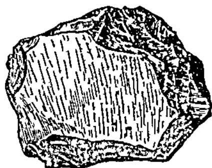




Fig 112 Sinanthropus stone implements (front view)
1—knife shaped rectangular tool (cutting edge at top) 2—implement of a complex scraper type 3—tool resembling a convex scraper
1/3 1/ and 1/ natural size After D Black P Teilhard de Chardin C Young and Pei Wen chung 1933

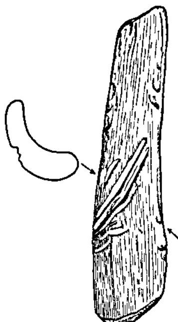


Fig 113 Bone bearing marks made by stone cutting tool found in Kotzetang cave with Sinanthropus stone implements (left—cross section showing cuts) After D Black 1933

his highly improbable assumption that the Sinanthropi were cannibals

In the same strata of the cave in which the Sinanthropus bones were found many traces of its culture were also discovered The Sinanthropi apparently got material for their stone tools from the opposite slope of the stream and from its bed and also from more distant places

In the cave there was also a large number of stones that had been brought there but had not been worked on there were also pieces of quartz and quartzite This abundant material is sufficient to show that the implements were fabricated in the cave The work was done collectively One stone was used to chip others

In the majority of cases the tools are small in size The biggest of them is only 15 cm long Those found were triangular rectangular and of other shapes although it is difficult to classify them or determine their exact use (fig 112) The workmanship is

crude, the Sinanthropi obviously found it difficult to cope with such a task. As Black said in one of his papers, natural material was the master of the Sinanthropi rather than they of it. Some scholars are of the opinion that the crude tools of the ancient man belong to one of the earliest stages in the development of Early Palaeolithic techniques and resemble the Acheulian tools from Clacton in East Anglia (P. P. Yefimenko, 1953). Other scholars, A. P. Okladnikov, for example, believe they more closely approximate the Early Mousterian technique.

In addition to the stone tools, many bone fragments were found which some scholars are inclined to regard as bone tools. This was a very unexpected conclusion since the fabrication of bone tools had hitherto been known only for much later epochs beginning with the Mousterian. It is, however, permissible to assume that the Sinanthropi used bone tools (fig. 113). The numerous bones, many of them charred, belong to 70 different species of mammals and prove that the Sinanthropi hunted collectively, the objects of the chase being various animals including the antelope and the deer. As they broke the long bones and the skulls in order to eat their contents, the Sinanthropi must have seen the possibility of using bone fragments and sharp antlers as implements.

Everybody knows how easy it is to prick or cut oneself on a sharp bone. The Sinanthropi probably made use of bones both as tools and as weapons, for example, in quarrels among themselves, when a bone happened to be handier than a stone. The antlers of young deer could serve them as weapons, the attached part of the skull, in Breuil's opinion, being used as the hilt. The mandibles or antlers of deer and antelopes could have served as clubs and hammers. Some of the bones and antlers of these animals are split and there are signs that they had been treated by heat at the places split. Breuil also believed that the bowl-shaped parts of the skull could have served the Sinanthropi as drinking vessels, the edges of some of them have been made smooth and they appear to have been polished by long usage.

Probably the most remarkable fact is the Sinanthropi's regular use of fire. Ashes and small cinders and occasionally charred twigs among them have been found in considerable numbers. In one place the layer of ash with such remains in it was seven metres thick. In this layer stones and bones that had been subjected to fire were found.

The Sinanthropi apparently occupied that cave for several centuries. Many generations of these earliest people lived out their primitive lives there, lives that were full of difficulty, danger and disease. The cave sheltered them in bad weather and protected them from wild animals; they went out in search of material for

their tools and fabricated them collectively in the cave, they went out hunting, brought the meat to their cave (fig 114) and roasted it over the fire

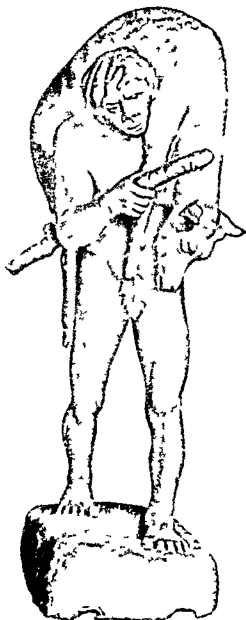


Fig 114 Sinanthropus returning from hunt
Reconstructed by Lei Wen chung 1954

The treatment by fire of meat and other animal products, as well as certain plants used by the earliest people as food undoubtedly made them more digestible The new properties of the food were certain to bring about changes in the organism that were in many cases, favourable In view of the fact that meat formed a substantial part of the Sinanthropus diet the significance of its digestibility is one that cannot be denied *A meat diet* contains in an almost ready state the most essential substances required by the organism for its metabolism It shortened the time required not only for digestion but also for the other vegetative bodily processes corresponding to those of plant life and thus gained further time material, and desire for the active manifestation of animal life in the proper sense of the term *

1 Engels *Dialectics of Nature* Moscow 1954 p 233

Changes in diet were reflected in the structure of various organs of the human body. The small intestine became somewhat shorter. The masticatory apparatus became weaker and shorter and together with it the facial region of the skull; the dentition also underwent changes. Together with and correlated to these latter changes was a thinning of the walls of the cranium and a reduction of the external relief of the skull (W. D. Wallis, 1931), i.e. processes that were intimately connected with the progressive development and increase in size of the brain. It may be assumed that the influence of the new diet, with its greater concentration of complicated organic chemical compounds, also had a beneficial effect on the brain and, as Engels noted, in the most significant manner. Engels was of the opinion that our ancestors, the fossil men in the making, could not have become 'complete men' without a meat diet, the acquisition and distribution of which facilitated the development of the social instinct.

It is probable that the Pithecanthropi had not learned the use of fire but the Sinanthropi had mastered the use of that great natural force.

Engels regarded the use of fire as being of the greatest importance to the development of man. He said: "On the threshold of human history stands the discovery that mechanical motion can be transformed into heat: the production of fire by friction; at the close of the development so far gone through stands the discovery that heat can be transformed into mechanical motion: the steam engine. And in spite of the gigantic liberating revolution in the social world which the steam engine is carrying through—and which is not yet half completed—it is beyond all doubt that the generation of fire by friction has had an even greater effect on the liberation of mankind."*

The invention of fire making by friction was probably preceded by other methods of obtaining and using fire, e.g. by igniting dry twigs from hot lava left from volcanic eruptions, the retention of burning branches after forest and steppe fires, and the maintenance of fire by feeding it with various inflammable materials. After forest fires the earliest men must have found the charred bodies of animals, the edible parts of which they used as food. Some of the useful properties of roast meat may have served as one of the moments stimulating the development of the artificial use of fire.

Undoubtedly, primitive methods of using and obtaining fire must have been practised over a very lengthy period; their beginnings are hidden in the depths of the still little known life

* Frederick Engels, *Anti-Duhring. Herr Eugen Duhring's Revolution in Science*, Moscow, 1962, pp. 157-58.

of ancient men It is also possible that man first made a close acquaintance with fire through the sparks that flew off when tools were being fashioned (Porshnev 1955)

The Sinanthropi probably not only knew the use of fire but also how to obtain it It is possible that they made use of one of the simplest methods of obtaining fire by scraping, sawing or drilling* (P I Boriskovsky 1950)

Most likely different groups of our ancestors did not develop at the same rate even today various peoples stand at different cultural levels due to different rates of development In any case people who had invented tools and learned to use fire and who had discovered the usefulness of these things in the struggle for existence would not later forget them but would perfect the use of them All this leads us to the idea that we may regard the group of Sinanthropi that lived in the Choukoutien cave in preglacial times as being one of the tiny centres of primitive man Further excavations of the site are very necessary

3 THE HEIDELBERG MAN

As we have already said the Pithecanthropus and Sinanthropus lived at the beginning of the Quaternary Period before the onset of the cold i e in preglacial times These primitive men lived in hordes that were to a great extent isolated from each other in contiguous regions of South and South East Asia They had contemporaries in Europe and Africa even in those ancient times the Chellean and Acheulian folk A find made in Western Europe the Mauer mandible is extremely old as far as geological age is concerned some scholars are of the opinion that it is of the same geological age as the Sinanthropus finds There are other scholars who believe that the geological strata of Europe and Asia can scarcely be compared chronologically and that it is even possible that the Heidelberg man lived somewhat earlier than the Sinanthropus the Peking man (P P Yefimenko 1953)

Nevertheless it is most probable that the Peking man (whose culture was in general higher than that of the little known makers of the Chellean tools the contemporaries of the Heidelberg man) lived earlier than the Mindel Riss interglacial period that lasted tens of thousands of years

---

* Scraping was the process in which a hard piece of wood was rubbed along another piece in the length sawing was rubbing across the grain both under pressure The third method drilling was very widespread a thick stick was twisted between the palms in a hole in another piece of wood or was rotated by means of a thong pressure from above being exerted

The Mauer mandible found at a place of that name near Heidelberg, Germany (1907) and shortly afterwards described by Otto Schoetensack (1908) is ascribed to that epoch. Schoetensack kept watch on a stratum of ancient sand that was being quarried at that place for almost twenty years. He was constantly calling the attention of workers there to the necessity of preserving the fossil bones of animals that turned up from time to time and to the possibility of finding the fossil bones of ancient man.

The massive human mandible was discovered at a depth of nearly 24 metres. Its structure is a mixture of human and simian features (figs. 115 and 116). The mandible has huge dimensions and extremely wide rami; there is no chin ridge. It is therefore very primitive and to a great degree even bears comparison with the mandibles of the Pithecanthropus and Sinanthropus. But the teeth are quite human and in their development are far in advance of the teeth of the earliest men; from this point of view, therefore, the Mauer or Heidelberg fossil man is somewhat nearer to the Neanderthalers who lived at a later geological date.

Many investigators place the Heidelberg man among the earliest humans. Three mandibles of primitive men were found at Ternifine (Algeria) together with tools of the Chellean

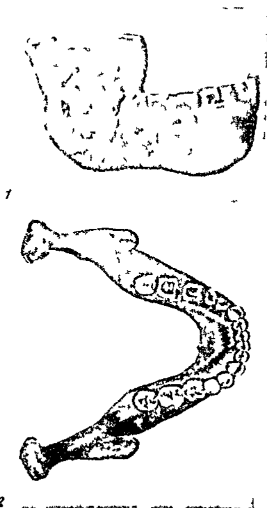


Fig. 115. Lower jaw of Heidelberg man—*Homo (Palaeanthropus) heidelbergensis* Schoetensack—found in sand quarries at Mauer near Heidelberg, 1907.
1—lateral and *2*—superior aspects. 3/4 natural size. After O. Abel, 1931

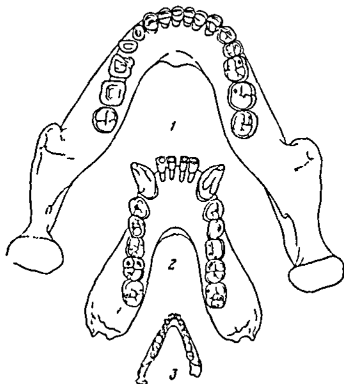


Fig. 116. Lower jaws
1—Heidelberg man; 2—Dryopithecus (Dr. fontani Lartet); 3—Parapithecus (P. fraasi Schlosser). 1/2 natural size. After W. Gregory, 192-

type, they were given the name of Atlanthropi (Arambourg 1954; Uryson 1957, 1961, 1965).

To sum up, as far as can be judged, the Pithecanthropus and the Sinanthropus are the earliest fossil men. They represent the earliest stage in the making of man, the initial and extremely long stage of the transition from a simian to a human being. In Engels' words, these were men in the making, transitional types that were the predecessors of the Neanderthalers, i.e., representatives of the second stage of the transition from ape to man.

The finds of bone remains and traces of the culture of the earliest men are of tremendous significance for the development of anthropogenesis theories. They confirm Darwin's theory of the descent of man from the highly developed fossil anthropoid apes and Engels' theory of the decisive role played by labour in the transition from ape to man.

C H A P T E R T W O

THE SECOND STAGE EARLY MEN (PALAEANTHROPI)

1 THE ICE AGE

The earliest remains of man known to us those of the Pithecanthropi and Sinanthropi were found in geological strata dating back to the first half of the Quaternary Period The period lasted about a million years and may be divided into three epochs of unequal length and character—the preglacial glacial and postglacial or recent epochs (fig 117) The first two constitute the geological Pleistocene Epoch and the third corresponds to the Holocene in a terminology that is analogous to that also used for the Tertiary Period of the Cenozoic Era The advance and retreat of an ice sheet over huge areas of Europe Asia and North America is typical of the Quaternary Period

P P Lazarev (1929) is of the opinion that the advance of the cold front was due to certain changes in the distribution of the land and water masses in the polar basin of the Northern Hemisphere changes that disrupted the flow of the cold and warm currents At the end of the Tertiary and in the Early Quaternary periods parts of the future continent of Europe were isolated from warm ocean currents and the polar area obtained no warm water from the equatorial currents writes Lazarev

G Simpson (1930) on the contrary believes that the spread of the ice in the Pleistocene was due to intensified solar radiation and the evaporation of water from the oceans This view however has not been generally accepted The increased humidity of the atmosphere and some lowering of the temperature would probably have been sufficient for masses of ice to accumulate in the north similar to that still remaining in Greenland where it is gradually melting at the edges

The ice sheet spread southward especially in Europe and covered not only the Scandinavian Peninsula and the British Isles but also parts of what are now Germany France and Poland as well as a considerable part of the European territory

1

2



Fig 117 Landscapes of Pleistocene epochs
1—preglacial 2—glacial 3—early postglacial Moscow Museum of Anthropology

of the Soviet Union reaching in the south and south east the vicinity of the modern cities of Dniepropetrovsk Tula and Penza

If we add to this the areas that were iced over in Asia and North America the territory covered by the ice sheet in places hundreds of metres thick amounted to approximately 8 000 000 square kilometres

The deposits of sand clay boulders and loess left after all the glacial and interglacial epochs today cover a considerable area This can be seen for example in the European part of the Soviet Union It is by these deposits and by the corresponding stratification of the other parts of Europe that the main features of Quaternary geological history have been established the history of the period in which mankind took shape beginning with the Pithecanthropus and Sinanthropus

The frequent changes of climate the alternate advance and retreat of masses of ice had an enormous influence on the development of the animal and vegetable kingdoms in places adjacent to the ice especially as there was a simultaneous fall or rise of

some regions in that part of the world and in contiguous areas of other continents This may have resulted in the migration of some animals from Asia and Africa to Europe and vice versa Early man must have taken part in the migration since his life was closely connected with the availability of edible plants and game

Many scholars are of the opinion that there were four ice ages 1) Gunz 2) Mindel 3) Riss and 4) Würm They were given these names by Albrecht Penck from the places in the Swiss Alps where he made a detailed study of those epochs In his opinion each epoch lasted 25 000 years Three warmer interglacial epochs lasted 175 000, 200 000 and 100 000 years respectively

To compute the length of the Quaternary Period, Penck proposed the time that has elapsed since the Würm epoch to the present day i e 25 000 years, as the unit of time If this figure is doubled as Soviet geologists propose all other figures will also be doubled their absolute value being established by the use of all the data obtained from the study of the Quaternary Period in Western Furope and the European part of the U S S R The interglacial epochs are called Günz Mindel, Mindel Riss and Riss Wurm respectively

In recent years the theory of polyglacialism an ice age divided into a number of epochs has been shaken to the foundations by the works of Soviet geologists and palaeontologists The work of V I Gromov (1948) is of great interest in this connection He considers that the theory of polyglacialism is based mainly on the data provided by lithology with the aid of which attempts have been made to settle the question for example of whether or not boulders and other geological features belong to formations of glacial origin furthermore he says the data used to compute changes in the snow line of earlier epochs are purely geomorphological the calculations proceeding from the presence of a series of river terraces with moraine deposits at various heights

Data obtained from flora and fauna and from the fossil remains of man continues Gromov have either not been used at all as proof of the alternation of glacial and interglacial epochs or have not been made full use of In his opinion there is no basis either in palaeontology or archaeology for the theory of a number of ice epochs in the Quaternary Period alternating with interglacial epochs that enjoyed a milder climate than today s and had a much higher snow line

On the basis of a study of the fauna of the Soviet Union as far as 60° north latitude mainly in the European part of the country Gromov (1948) distinguishes three phases in the Quaternary

Period 1) the preglacial (Mindel and Mindel Riss) 2) the glacial (Riss, the Riss Wurm interstage and Wurm) and 3) the postglacial phases It was only in the second half of the Quaternary Period that cold hardy fauna of the arctic type developed and became typical for a lengthy span of time Fauna before the phase had been more varied and shows three changes of genetically connected fauna groups none of which however contained any arctic animals

There came a radical change in the type of fauna immediately before the Mindelian phase the subtropical animals disappeared altogether and were replaced by a new fauna for which the Elasmotherium, southern elephant and Etruscan rhinoceros were typical, it is here that Gromov draws the boundary line between the Tertiary and Quaternary periods The radical change in fauna says Gromov was due to a sharp deterioration in climatic conditions In Pre Mindelian and Mindelian times the climate first became markedly continental then cold and lastly came the icing of Eurasia (Gromov later changed his opinion and moved the boundary between the Tertiary and the Quaternary to an earlier point on the time scale)

Next came the sudden change to a warm climate in the early postglacial epoch following the Wurm stage that brought with it relevant changes in other natural conditions and effected a sharp turning point in the history of the fauna—the rapid extinction of arctic species and the gradual extinction or impoverishment of fauna due to the disappearance of such animals as the horse the camel and the glutton

The worst conditions for many species of animals were undoubtedly those of the greatest ice phase at the Riss stage At this time many species became extinct some migrated and still others underwent an evolutionary adaptation Animals typical of the epoch were the ancient elephant (Elephas trogontherii) the long horned bison and the giant reindeer

In Gromov's opinion the Riss epoch was a critical one in the development of the animal and vegetable kingdoms in the relevant areas of Eurasia an epoch in which ancient man also had a hard time The epoch of maximum glaciation included the Mousterian cultural epoch i e the epoch of the Neanderthalers and in its latter half of the Cro Magnon folk

Thus Gromov considers that a study of the remains of animals and tools should correlate the Neanderthalers with the first half and the later epochs of maximum glaciation and the Cro Magnon folk with the latter half, so that the Aurignacian comes within the second half of the epoch of maximum glaciation and Solutrean and Magdalenian in the Riss Wurm and Wurm stages

The late Palaeolithic folk hunted the mammoth and the reindeer these animals and the woolly rhinoceros being typical representatives of the fauna of that epoch, they also hunted horses

The Neanderthal and Heidelberg men lived, according to Gromov s scheme in the Mousterian, Chellean and Acheulian epochs while the Sinanthropi lived in the pre Chellean epoch that which corresponds to the Gunz Mindel—the epoch of transition from the Tertiary to the Quaternary Period Lastly, Gromov relegates the Pithecanthropi to a still earlier epoch at the end of the Pliocene which corresponds to the Gunz epoch in the former terminology

In general of the million years of the Quaternary Period the first 500 000 are taken up by the preglacial epoch the beginning of the glaciation and the first half of the epoch of greatest glaciation The first phase of cultural development the Early Palaeolithic with its low level of stone tool techniques, is covered by this epoch (P P Yefimenko 1953)

This is the period of amorphous tools that had no definite shape and cannot be classified in clear types The types of stone celts scrapers and spearheads found among the artifacts of the Middle Palaeolithic camping grounds (this epoch lasted 300 000 400 000 years) fall into fairly well defined types The Late Palaeolithic Epoch with its rich assortment of new types of stone tools belongs to the last 100 000 150 000 years of the Quaternary Period (S N Zamyatnin see symposium *The Origin of Man* 1951)

The makers of the amorphous tools were the earliest men the Middle Palaeolithic tools were made by the Neanderthalers and in the Late Palaeolithic more complicated tools in a richer assortment that included cutting tools and bone artifacts were made by the Cro Magnon people

During the series of cold spells or ice ages the animal and vegetable kingdoms and with them man, retreated before the advancing ice to the south south west and south east In the interglacial periods man again spread over the ice free territory that first acquired a plant population followed by animals

The manner of man s existence changed under the influence of a constant struggle for subsistence in abruptly changing natural conditions Men made their tools and hunted collectively at first they hunted small mammals but later they hunted big animals like the elephant and gradually became dangerous rivals to them Sharp stones and clubs in the hands of primitive man often more than made up for his deficiencies in natural means of attack

The Neanderthal stage in the development of hominids is *representative by* numerous finds of bone remains discovered in various parts of Europe, Asia and Africa. The Neanderthalers lived mostly in the middle epoch of the Old Stone Age, the Middle Palaeolithic. This was the first half of the phase of maximum *glaciation which corresponds to the Riss epoch. This distant time* is also known as the Mousterian Epoch.

Many Western scholars equate the Mousterian Epoch with Riss-Würm or even Würm. But the entire Middle Palaeolithic, *as we have already said, occupied several hundred thousand* years. It is divided in greater detail by the character of instrument fabrication. Bone tools appeared only at the end of the Mousterian Epoch. Stone tools typical of the Neanderthalers were found *together with the skeleton of a young man* in the lower grotto at Le Moustier, France, in 1908 (fig. 118) and in other places.

The first skull of an adult Neanderthaler was found in 1848 in a stone quarry at Gibraltar (Spain). It was an incomplete female skull with a weakly developed supraorbital ridge (fig. 119) and its cranial capacity was only 1 080 c.c. At the same place in 1926



Fig. 118. Skull of young Neanderthaler (Homo neanderthalensis King) from lower grotto at Le Moustier. 1/3 natural size. After A. Hrdlička, 1930.



1



2

Fig 119 Skull of Neanderthal woman from Gibraltar
1—profile and *2*—three quarter views (from a cast) $^3/_8$ natural
size After A Hrdlička 1930 (*1*) and Th Mollison 1932 ( )



Fig 120 Skull of Neanderthal man
1—lateral and *2*—interior aspects *3*—cranial cast
1/3 natural size After H Schaaffhausen 1858

stone tools and the skull of a five year old Neanderthal child were found

In the Feldhofer Grotto near Dusseldorf at the mouth of the River Dussel (in the Neanderthal Valley Germany) the cranial vault and parts of the skeleton of a Neanderthaler were discovered (fig 120) The cranial capacity of this specimen was rather big for primitive men of that type—about 1 400 c c —but the forehead had a very considerable slope and there was a very

pronounced continuous supraorbital ridge like that of the chimpanzee

A very considerable discussion arose around the skull from Neanderthal. The German scholar Rudolf Virchow was of the opinion that the skull belonged to modern man but had acquired that form through some pathological process. He also believed that the pressure of the earth strata had later had some effect on the shape of the skull.

Darwin did not attach great importance to the Neanderthal skull and only remarked on its antiquity and great size. This find was for a long time an isolated one like the Gibraltar skull. Only at a much later date were more and more skulls and bones of a similar type found together with similar crude stone tools.

The remains of the skeleton of a male Neanderthaler 50-55 years of age taken from the lowest stratum of the Bouffia cave near the village of La Chapelle-aux-Saints (France) in 1908 was of considerable importance.

This skull (fig. 121) had all the specific features that are peculiar to the majority of Neanderthalers:

1) a powerful supraorbital ridge and sloping forehead;
2) an occipital region that seems to have been squeezed in the superior-inferior direction;
3) the squama of the temporal bone has a horizontal edge;
4) the styloid process is somewhat blunted;
5) flat cheek bones sloping posteriorly;
6) the maxillary has no canine fossae that are typical of modern man;
7) a powerful mandible without a chin ridge (mental protuberance).

The cranial capacity of that skull was very great, about 1,600 c.c., which is much greater than the average for a Neanderthal skull.

The size of the Neanderthaler's brain, therefore, was not less than that of modern man (fig. 122). The frontal lobes, however, were small and the brain, in general, had a number of points of resemblance with that of the apes.

The Neanderthaler had a skull of the long type, partly on account of the strongly developed supraorbital ridge. The vault of the skull was very low. Some of the Neanderthaler skulls are closer to the modern type, for example, the skull from Ehringsdorf (Germany, 1914).

The numerous finds of Neanderthaler [illegible] enable us to get a general picture [illegible] type th[illegible] modern man. He was not tall, avera[illegible] 160 cm [illegible] of the upper extremities as compa[illegible] lower [illegible] less than that of a modern Eur[illegible]



Fig 121 Skull of old Neanderthal man from La *Chapelle aux Saints* $1/3$ natural size After M Boule 1952

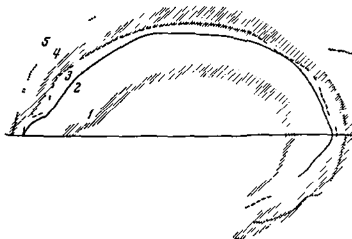


Fig 122 Comparison of skull contours
1—chimpanzee 2—Pithecanthropus *3*—Sinanthropus 4—Neanderthaler *5*—modern man (Cro Magnon man from Combe Capelle)
After H Weinert 1936

The structure of the long bones of the Neanderthaler s lower extremities shows that the knee joints were not fully straightened Their gait must have been clumsy which is confirmed by some other physical peculiarities The curvature of the spine is much more poorly expressed than in modern man (fig 123)

In recent years many Neanderthal remains have been found in Asia and Africa (fig 124) as well as in Europe, these finds have shown a still greater number of variations in the Palaeoanthropus type and have given greater strength to the genetic nexus between them and Neoanthropus—*Homo sapiens* (Roginsky 1965)

In 1921 in a cave at Broken Hill Northern Rhodesia (now Zambia) the skull sacrum part of the left innominate bone the

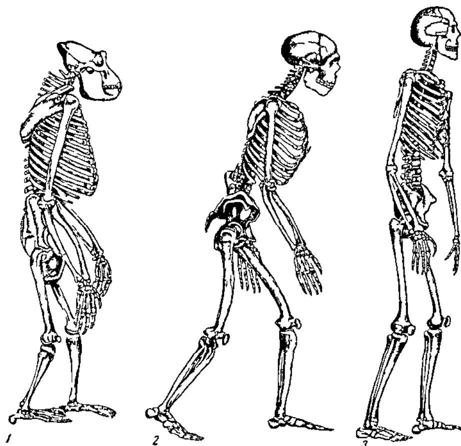


Fig 123 Skeletons
1—gorilla 2—Neanderthaler *3*—modern man
After H Raven 1951 (*1*) H Weinert 1936 (*2*) and M Gremyatsky 1945 (*3*)

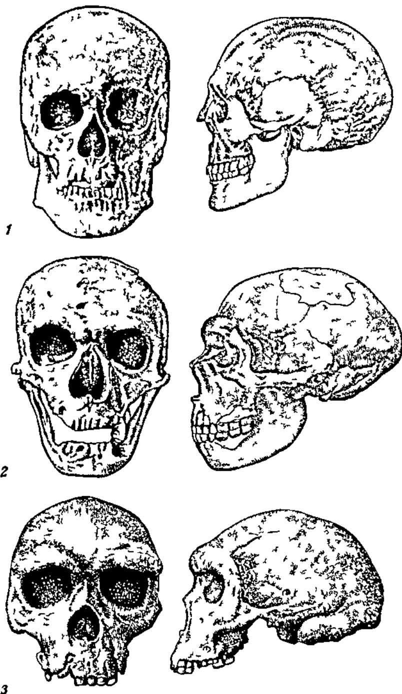


Fig 124 Hominid skulls
1—modern man 2—Neanderthaler from La Chapelle aux Saints
3—Rhodesian Neanderthaler from Broken Hill Full face and profile
$^2/_9$ natural size (Profile 2 after J MacGregor)

The structure of the long bones of the Neanderthaler s lower extremities shows that the knee joints were not fully straightened Their gait must have been clumsy which is confirmed by some other physical peculiarities The curvature of the spine is much more poorly expressed than in modern man (fig 123)

In recent years many Neanderthal remains have been found in Asia and Africa (fig 124) as well as in Europe, these finds have shown a still greater number of variations in the Palaeoanthropus type and have given greater strength to the genetic nexus between them and Neoanthropus—*Homo sapiens* (Roginsky 1965)

In 1921 in a cave at Broken Hill Northern Rhodesia (now Zambia) the skull sacrum part of the left innominate bone the

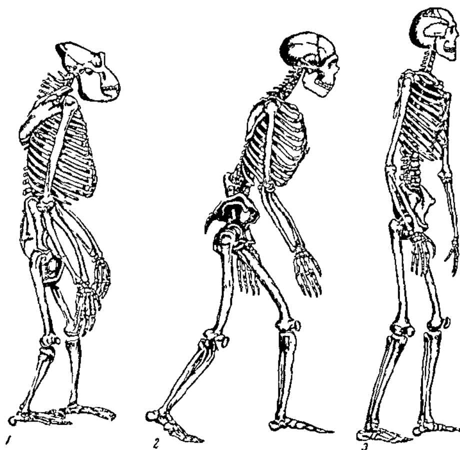
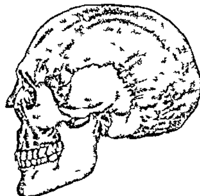
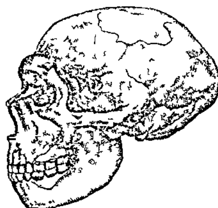


Fig 123 Skeletons
1—gorilla *2*—Neanderthaler *3*—modern man
After H Raven 1951 (*1*) H Weinert 1930 (*2*) and M Gremyatsky 1945 (*3*)



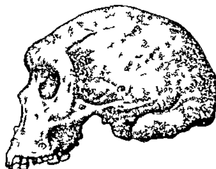






2





3

Fig 124 Hominid skulls
1—modern man 2—Neanderthaler from La Chapelle aux Saints
3—Rhodesian Neanderthaler from Broken Hill Full face and profile
$^{2}/_{9}$ natural size (Profile 2 after J MacGregor)

femur and tibia of the left lower extremity of ancient man were found together with a large quantity of animal bones mostly those of small mammals This was a very important find although its geological age has not been established Nor has it been proved that the skull and skeletal bones belong to one individual

The skull of the Rhodesian man (Woodward 1921) has an extremely powerful supraorbital ridge with developed lateral processes a sharply sloping forehead and a low bony longitudinal ridge on the frontal bone, there is a transverse ridge on the occipital bone the foramen magnum is nearer the centre of the base of the skull than in most Neanderthalers and resembles its position in modern man (fig 124) The lower jaw was not found but it was probably bigger than that of the Heidelberg man

The cranial capacity was 1 325 c c Some scholars thought that the cranial cast of the Rhodesian man resembled that of the Pithecanthropus (O Abel 1931)

The Rhodesian man represents a form that combines very ancient features (the long skull, longitudinal ridge on the frontal bone very high supraorbital ridge, sharply sloping forehead) with those that are more progressive—the more forward position of the foramen magnum the shape of the teeth that are close to those of modern man and the height (about 180 cm) In general the Rhodesian man is a primitive form and his place in the Neanderthal group is today still not clear the same may be said of his significance for the evolution of later hominids

Some authors consider the Rhodesian man to be an ancestral type of the Negroid race but there is no sound foundation for this assumption It would be more correct to consider him one of the ancient African representatives of the Neanderthal stage of man s evolution that had already developed some features of transition to the type of structure typical of modern man If we assume that the skull belongs to one individual and the skeletal bones to another its antiquity becomes clearer Some scholars are even of the opinion that the Rhodesian skull is so crude and massive that it must belong to an anthropoid of the gorilla type (M M Gerasimov 1955) Much farther to the north near Lake Niarisa (or Eyassi) to the south east of Lake Victoria, the fragments of three Neanderthal skulls were found in 1932

The best preserved skull was reconstructed by Weinert who found that it had many primitive features a powerful supra orbital and a high occipital ridges the skull was widest in the region of the styloid processes, the foramen magnum was inclined posteriorly, as in the anthropoids The capacity of the cranium was not large, only about 1 200 c c

Hans Weinert calls this type an ape man and the Niarasa man Africanthropus Other anthropologists consider that the reconstruction of the skull is inaccurate It would be difficult to make an accurate reconstruction on account of the fragmentary nature of the finds Many anthropologists believe the Africanthropus to belong either to the Neanderthalers or to a type that is intermediate between the ape man and the earliest man

The wide distribution of Neanderthal types throughout the Old World is exemplified by finds in Asia The find of Neanderthaler remains on Java was of great importance in explaining the evolution of man in South East Asia In 1922 the Dutch geologist Ten Haar was prospecting on the River Solo about 30 km from Trinil the place where the Pithecanthropus was found He discovered the bones of many fossil animals—deer swine hippopotami, buffalos rhinoceroses crocodiles and stegodonts In the same place he found fragments of the skulls of five ancient people (fig 125) W F F Oppenooith later took part in the excavations and made the first description of the skulls Among them was the well preserved frontal bone of a child's skull (1937)

The skulls are very long One of them is 221 mm long i e much longer than the average in modern man the walls of the cranium are very thick and its capacity is about 1 000 c c This skull is called Ngandong I after the village near which it was found Oppenoorth suggested that the owners of the skulls be called Javanthropi as they were found on Java



Fig 125 Skull of Neanderthaler (Javanthropus) from Ngandong
1/3 natural size After W Oppenoorth 1937

femur and tibia of the left lower extremity of ancient man were found together with a large quantity of animal bones mostly those of small mammals This was a very important find although its geological age has not been established Nor has it been proved that the skull and skeletal bones belong to one individual

The skull of the Rhodesian man (Woodward, 1921) has an extremely powerful supraorbital ridge with developed lateral processes a sharply sloping forehead and a low bony longitudinal ridge on the frontal bone, there is a transverse ridge on the occipital bone the foramen magnum is nearer the centre of the base of the skull than in most Neanderthalers and resembles its position in modern man (fig 124) The lower jaw was not found, but it was probably bigger than that of the Heidelberg man

The cranial capacity was 1 325 c c Some scholars thought that the cranial cast of the Rhodesian man resembled that of the Pithecanthropus (O Abel, 1931)

The Rhodesian man represents a form that combines very ancient features (the long skull, longitudinal ridge on the frontal bone very high supraorbital ridge sharply sloping forehead) with those that are more progressive—the more forward position of the foramen magnum the shape of the teeth that are close to those of modern man and the height (about 180 cm) In general the Rhodesian man is a primitive form and his place in the Neanderthal group is today still not clear the same may be said of his significance for the evolution of later hominids

Some authors consider the Rhodesian man to be an ancestral type of the Negroid race but there is no sound foundation for this assumption It would be more correct to consider him one of the ancient African representatives of the Neanderthal stage of man s evolution that had already developed some features of transition to the type of structure typical of modern man If we assume that the skull belongs to one individual and the skeletal bones to another, its antiquity becomes clearer Some scholars are even of the opinion that the Rhodesian skull is so crude and massive that it must belong to an anthropoid of the gorilla type (M M Gerasimov 1955) Much farther to the north, near Lake Niarasa (or Eyassi), to the south east of Lake Victoria the fragments of three Neanderthal skulls were found in 1932

The best preserved skull was reconstructed by Weinert who found that it had many primitive features a powerful supra orbital and a high occipital ridges the skull was widest in the region of the styloid processes the foramen magnum was inclined posteriorly, as in the anthropoids The capacity of the cranium was not large, only about 1 200 c c

Hans Weinert calls this type an ape man and the Njarasa man Africanthropus Other anthropologists consider that the reconstruction of the skull is inaccurate It would be difficult to make an accurate reconstruction on account of the fragmentary nature of the finds Many anthropologists believe the Africanthropus to belong either to the Neanderthalers or to a type that is intermediate between the ape man and the earliest man

The wide distribution of Neanderthal types throughout the Old World is exemplified by finds in Asia The find of Neanderthaler remains on Java was of great importance in explaining the evolution of man in South East Asia In 1922 the Dutch geologist Ten Haar was prospecting on the River Solo about 30 km from Trinil, the place where the Pithecanthropus was found He discovered the bones of many fossil animals—deer swine hippopotami buffalos rhinoceroses, crocodiles and stegodonts In the same place he found fragments of the skulls of five ancient people (fig 125) W F F Oppenoorth later took part in the excavations and made the first description of the skulls Among them was the well preserved frontal bone of a child s skull (1937)

The skulls are very long One of them is 221 mm long i e much longer than the average in modern man the walls of the cranium are very thick and its capacity is about 1 000 c c This skull is called Ngandong I after the village near which it was found Oppenoorth suggested that the owners of the skulls be called Javanthropi as they were found on Java



Fig 125 Skull of Neanderthaler (Javanthropus) from Ngandong
1/3 natural size After W Oppenoorth 1937

Oppenoorth said that skull I is somewhat similar to the Rhodesian skull The frontal region has a sharp slope but the vault is about 2 cm higher than that of the Pithecanthropus The transverse occipital ridge is well developed The powerful supraorbital ridge is typical and its extremely strongly developed ends are similar to those on the Rhodesian skull

There are many features that approximate the Javanese Neanderthaler to the European specimens The cranial capacity, however is considerably smaller although skull I belongs to an old individual

The Java man resembles the Pithecanthropus in having a long frontal bone and an elevation in the vicinity of the bregma the junction of the coronal and sagittal sutures He resembles modern man in having a well expressed styloid process and very deep glenoid fossae to take the condyles of the lower jaw

The Java skulls are of great antiquity Oppenoorth and Keith say that the Java man lived somewhat later than the Pithecanthropus whose age they give as Late Pliocene Osborn however, seems to be nearer the mark when he computes the age of the Java man at 150 000 years and says that he lived in the third interglacial (Riss Würm) epoch

On the basis of his study of the skulls Oppenoorth draws the following picture of the evolution of early man the Java man was the ancestor of the Rhodesian man and the Australians the Sinanthropi produced the Heidelberg man and through him the European Neanderthalers

Oppenoorth s assumption is not convincing because the forms he mentions are territorially so far apart—the Rhodesian and Java men and the Heidelberg man and the Sinanthropi

The Sinanthropi could not have migrated as far as Europe It would be safer to assume that in some region closer to Europe somewhere near the borders of Asia and Africa there developed simultaneously with the Sinanthropi groups of early men that were similar to them and from which the later forms developed, for example the Heidelberg man the European Neanderthalers the Palestine Neanderthalers and the Rhodesian man

Weinert, like Oppenoorth, believes that the Java man of Ngandong was the direct descendant of the Pithecanthropus and the ancestor of the Australians This opinion cannot hold water because the Australians arrived on their continent in relatively recent times, some tens of thousands of years ago, and came from South East Asia In Soviet anthropology since Y Y Roginsky s researches (1949) the polycentrism hypothesis has been opposed by that of monocentrism as applied to the problem of the origin of the modern type of man monocentrism is based on the close genetic approximation of the physical structure of



Fig 126 Zautolosh sai Gorge near Teshik Tash grotto
After A Okladnikov 1949

different groups of modern people especially their skulls We shall deal with these hypotheses at a greater length in a later chapter

3 NEANDERTHALERS ON USSR TERRITORY

In the summer of 1938, when archaeologist A P Okladnikov was conducting excavations in the Teshik Tash grotto near Baisun in South Uzbekistan (fig 126) he discovered stone tools

belonging to the Mousterian Epoch and the incomplete skeleton of an 8 or 9 year old child (figs 127 130) In the same place he found the remains of big fires and numerous bones and horns of the *tel e* mountain goat that the Teshik Tash Neanderthalers apparently hunted (A P Okladnikov 1940) Okladnikov sent the fossil bones of the child to the Moscow Institute of Anthropology where they were studied The skull was reconstructed from a hundred and fifty fragments (fig 131) This difficult job was done by M M Gerasimov archaeologist and sculptor, who also produced the full reconstruction of the child shown in the photograph (fig 132)

The first full study of the skull was made by G F Debets (1940) The cranial capacity is very great—1 490 c c If this Neanderthaler boy had reached maturity his brain would have been at least as big as that of the skull from La Chapelle aux Saints (1 600 c c) A description of the Teshik Tash boy s cranial cast (V V Bunak 1951) shows some signs of progression, a transition to a type of brain similar to that of modern man (fig 133) On the forehead there are signs of a continuous but undeveloped supraorbital ridge



Fig 127 Skull of Neanderthal child and the horns of a mountain goat on floor of Teshik Tash grotto at the beginning of the excavation After A Okladnikov 1949



Fig 128 Skull of Neanderthal child *in situ* on raised ground of camping site bones of skeleton in foreground After A Okladnikov 1949

There is no chin ridge All these features are typically Neanderthal but the teeth of the Teshik Tash boy have small cavities i e, they are of the cynodontic type like those of the majority of modern people (M A Gremyatsky 1948)

The find of the Teshik Tash boy is of great scientific importance It bears witness to the fact that the Neanderthaler lived

about 100 000 years ago in the interior of the Asian continent in an environment that differed little from that of today This area was little affected by the glaciation that made such tremendous changes in the North Asian area Some scholars abroad Hans Weinert for example give primary importance to the influence of the ice ages in the development of modern man from the Neanderthal type The Teshik Tash find however, contradicts this opinion which apart from that is groundless because it is contradictory to the fundamental thesis of the decisive role played by social labour in anthropogenesis

At an earlier date the fossil bones of a very ancient man were discovered in the Crimea In 1924 in a grotto at Kiik Koba 25 kilometres east of Simferopol the remains of a Neanderthal type of man were found by G A Bonch Osmolovsky (1940 1941 1954) they consisted of the bones of a foot shin and hand of an adult (figs 134 135) and the incomplete skeleton of an infant In various strata of the cave floor thousands of stone tools were found that according to Bonch Osmolovsky, belong to the amorphous and Late Acheulian stages of Early Palaeolithic culture Bone tools were also discovered one shaped like an anvil for



Fig 129 Skull of Neanderthal child *in situ* in Teshik Tash grotto earth has been removed
After A Okladnikov 1949

Fig. 130. Lower jaw from Neanderthal child's skull in Teshik Tash grotto (*in situ*—during excavation). After A. Okladnikov, 1949

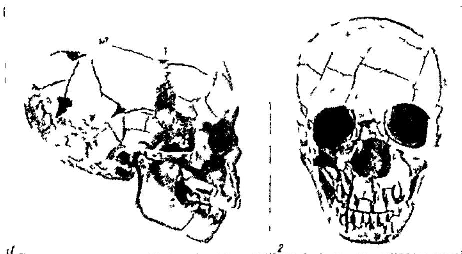


Fig. 131. Skull of Neanderthal child from Teshik Tash grotto, reconstructed by M. Gerasimov. 2/7 natural size. After M. Gremyatsky, 1949

Fig 132 Neanderthal child from Teshik Tash grotto—reconstructed by M Gerasimov
After M Gerasimov 1949



Fig 133 Cranial casts
1—Neanderthal child from Teshik Tash grotto 2—8 year old modern child
$^2/_7$ natural size After V Bunak 1954

example The discovery and description of the Kiik Koba finds made a substantial contribution to the palaeanthropology of the Soviet Union

The bones of the extremities of the Kiik Koba man are of great interest Bonch Osmolovsky assumes from the fossil skeleton of

the extremities that the Kiik Koba man's hand (fig 136) and foot were not so highly developed as those of modern man Both he and V V Bunak consider that the structure of the Kiik Koba extremities refutes the assumption that the ancestral form of man was an arboreal animal They support their contention with a number of facts, among them the similarity of the Kiik Koba hand and that of the human foetus

G A Bonch Osmolovsky's contention, however is not sufficiently well grounded

The determination of the geological age of the lower and upper strata of the grotto and their artifacts as Chellean and Acheulian is objected to by some archaeologists and palaeontologists (O N Bader, 1940) As far as the refutation of the arboreal stage in the evolution of our simian ancestors by Bonch Osmolovsky (and V V Bunak 1954) is concerned there are too many proofs of the stage established by Darwin for it to be refuted by insufficient facts

Suffice it here to recall the oblique head (caput obliquum) of the muscle abducting man's great toe It is also typical for all monkeys and distinguishes them from other mammals This is convincing evidence of the fact that among our ancestors there

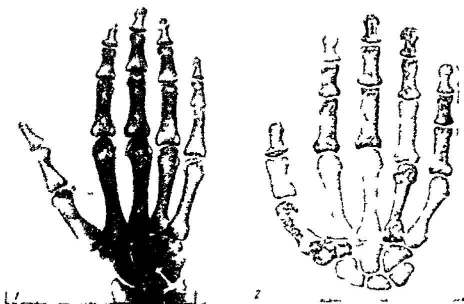


Fig 134 Right hand skeleton of hominids
1—Kiik Koba man (reconstruction) 2—modern man dorsal aspect
$^1/_3$ natural size After G Bonch Osmolovsky 1941





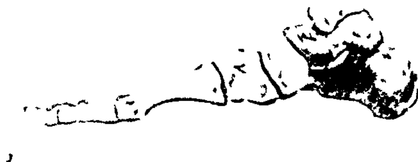


Fig. 13. [illegible]
[illegible] Kiik-Koba man; 3 — modern man [illegible]
[illegible] natural size ([illegible] reconstructed by [illegible] Bunak [illegible])

must have been arboreal forms with an anatomical structure similar to that of the monkeys. Many other facts to support this theory could be given. It is, however, possible that erect locomotion began to develop among man's ancestors in connection with cruralism much earlier than has hitherto been supposed.

4 THE PALESTINE NEANDERTHALERS

The Palestine Neanderthalers belong to the group of fossil hominids whose anatomical structure places them among the types showing transition to modern man Between 1931 and 1936 near the towns of Haifa and Athlith the skeletal remains of almost twenty Neanderthalers the skeleton of a child among them were found in the es Skhul and et Tabun caves on the slopes of Mount Carmel

Several skeletons were found in the es Skhul cave indicating what was apparently a collective burial The majority of the skeletons were found in 1932 by the American scientist Theodore McCown who demonstrated some of his finds at the World Congress of Archaeologists held in London that same year

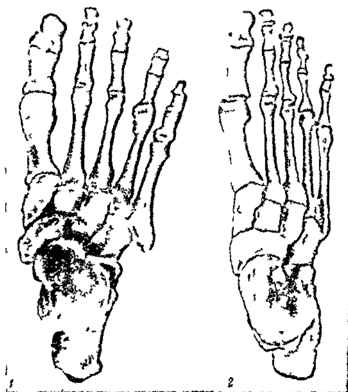
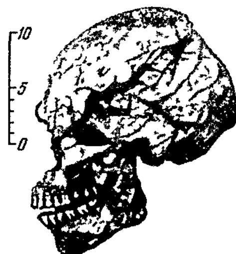
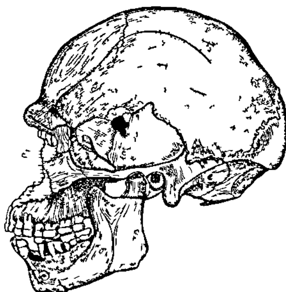


Fig 136 Assembled skeleton of right foot of hominids

1—Kiik Koba man 2—modern man dorsal aspect 1/3 natural size After V Bunak 1954



1



2

Fig 137 Neanderthal skull
1—skull from cave Skhul V on Mount Carmel 2—its reconstruction
About 1/5 and 1/3 natural size
After Th McCown and A Keith 1939

The tremendous interest aroused by these finds was fully justified by their quantity It was, furthermore shown by later investigations that the Palestine skeletons showed some features that throw light on the transition from the Neanderthal to the modern type (Roginsky 1965 Korobkov 1963)

The specific features of the Palestine folk are clearly seen in the skeletons of adults from the es Skhul cave They were tall and their thigh bones were, as a rule straight The skull (fig 137) had a strongly expressed supraorbital ridge which McCown even called ' umbrella shaped The mandible is heavy powerful and wide

Contrary to the mandibles of typical Neanderthalers however some of them have a small chin ridge which brings the Palestine man closer to modern man Such an approximation to modern man is justified furthermore by a higher and rounder cranial vault and more highly developed parietal and frontal regions than are common among Neanderthalers The teeth however resemble the Neanderthal type Nevertheless the molars have a small cavity so that they are not of the taurodont type with the exception of some similarity in the roots The skull seems to have had a very powerful musculature attached to it There is a transverse occipital ridge to which the cervical muscles were attached

The majority of the skeletons including that of the child were found with the knees drawn up to the body Stone tools found with them showed that these people were at the Mousterian stage of cultural development

McCown collaborating with Keith gave a very detailed description of the skeletons individual bones and skulls in a special monograph (1939) The archaeological aspect of the find was described by Dorothy Garrod and D A E Bate (1937)

The skeletal remains that mostly interest us were taken mainly from the small es Skhul cave although some of them were found in the bigger et Tabun cave They were discovered and excavated by Dorothy Garrod who headed the expedition

In the es Skhul cave in breccia as hard as stone, were found the almost complete skeleton of a child apparently a girl of about $4^1/_2$ years part of four skeletons, two male of 30 35 and 50 years, one female 35 50 years and a child most likely a boy 8 10 years fragments of the skull teeth and separate bones of an adult male, a female 30 40 years and a child probably a boy 5 $5^1/_2$ years and 16 separate bones (figs 138 139)

From the ground of the et Tabun cave were removed an almost complete skeleton of a female about 30 years of age an almost complete mandible of a male 30 35 years with the teeth in their sockets three series of bones (among them the diaphysis

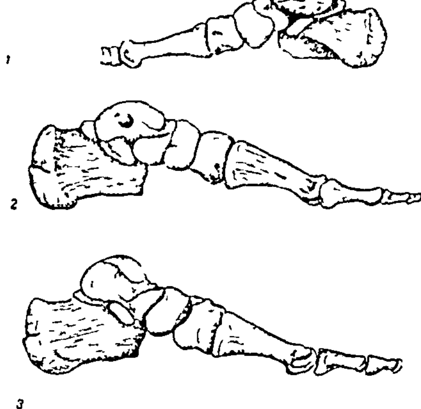


Fig 138 Skeleton of Neanderthal foot
1—Tabun I 2—Skhul IV 3—modern man
1/3 natural size After Th McCown and A Keith 1939

of the right femur) and teeth (among them the first and second lower molars) all were taken from the upper stratum of the Chellean Epoch

The two caves therefore contained the remains of 23 individuals of different ages and sexes The skulls were well preserved on three skeletons from the es Skhul cave and on the female skeleton from the et Tabun cave (fig 140) The removal of the remains from the rock their consolidation with special binding materials the building of each skeleton from its component parts comparison with other fossil bones the measurement description analysis and comparison of the bones with each other and with other Neanderthal finds and with the bones of modern man—all this work was done with great thoroughness and provides a very clear picture of this important discovery

A rather special place among the finds is held by the female skeleton from the et Tabun cave as its skull has very obvious

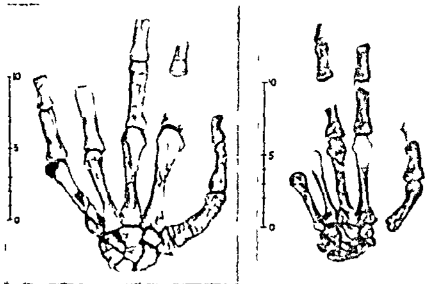


Fig 139 Skeleton of Neanderthal left hand
1—Tabun I *2*—Skhul V dorsal aspect
$^3/_7$ natural size After Th McCown and A Keith 1939

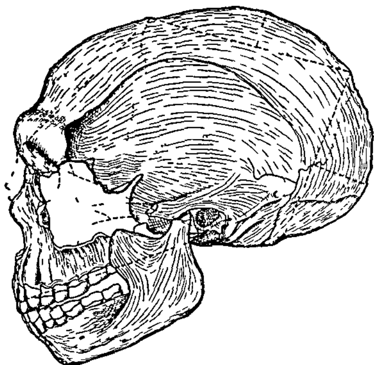


Fig 140 Woman's skull from Tabun cave (reconstruction)
$^2/_5$ natural size After Th McCown and A Keith 1939



Fig 141 Neanderthal skull fragment from Mughareth el Zuttiye north east bank of Lake Gennisareth Galilee About $^1/_2$ natural size After Th Mollison 1932

Neanderthal features and is in general, similar to the female skull Gibraltar I (found in 1848) In 1925, in the cave of el Zuttiye, Galilee about 85 km to the north west of Mount Carmel the fragment of a human skull (fig 141) was found which McCown and Keith believe belongs to the same race of Palestine men

The skeletal remains from the es Skhul cave, in their shape and structure constitute a mixture of Neanderthal and Cro Magnon features never found elsewhere before or since

The two types however both es Skhul and et Tabun belong to practically the same phase of the Levalloiso Mousterian cultural epoch (the fauna that accompanies them is in general similar, although the bones of oxen predominated at es Skhul and the bones of gazelles at et Tabun) We may assume that the Palestinians discovered in the Mount Carmel caves represent a single group with strongly pronounced individual mutations possibly conditioned by the mixed character of the cave dwellers

The authors of the above mentioned monograph in their characterization of the es Skhul Palestinians found that the *frontal region of the skull the teeth and the vertebral column* show Neanderthal peculiarities while the length of the trunk and the nature of the *extremities give them a resemblance* to Cro Magnon types The height of the men in two cases proved to be 170 and 178 cm The women are much shorter than the men and belong to the short or medium type Cro Magnon women are closer to medium height than short The vertebral column shows some Neanderthal features and the lower extremities are long The head is big The cranial capacity of the *three adult male skulls varies between 1 518 and 1 587 c c* The female skull from the es Skhul cave has a capacity of 1 300 1 350 c c and that from the et Tabun cave has 1 270 c c i e in general the same capacities as those of the Cro Magnon women's skulls

The es Skhul skulls are very long dolichocephalic types with an index well below 75 while that from et Tabun is of medium length mesocephalic with an index of 77 The majority of Cro Magnon skulls are dolichocephalic The es Skhul skulls have vaults of average height and in this respect occupy an intermediate place (for the new reconstruction of skull Skhul V see Snow's paper 1953)

The casts of the cranial cavities show that the brain is very similar to the Cro Magnon type in shape and in its general dimensions although the pattern of gyri and sulci is somewhat simpler

The forehead is moderately convex the orbits are wide but not high (in the majority of Cro Magnon skulls they are very low) There is a supraorbital bony ridge with noticeable divisions into medial and lateral parts This division was complete in the Cro Magnon people

The majority of the Palestine skulls from es Skhul have a facial region that does not greatly protrude the face being orthognathous and of average length like that of the Cro Magnon types The es Skhul V skull however is very definitely prognathous The canine fossae on the maxillary are absent the superior edge of the zygomatic bone is thickened and the nasal region varies both in the extent to which it protrudes and in the width of the nasal foramen

Now let us look at the mandible It varies both in size and massiveness large and small jawbones were found the smaller being the more massive while the large are much thinner The rami are very wide like those of the Neanderthalers and some of the Cro Magnon types The angle of the mandible is weakly developed in some, as in the Cro Magnon skulls but in others it is strongly developed The chin ridge is either absent or slightly developed but in the Cro Magnon skulls it is moderately or well developed Lastly the teeth of the Palestine skulls are moderately big or as big as those of the Neanderthalers (the Cro Magnon types are moderately big) The pattern on the grinding surfaces of the molars has more primitive features than those of the Cro Magnon types

McCown and Keith found as a result of their analysis of the chief points of comparison that the inhabitants of the es Skhul cave possess only three significant features in common with the Neanderthalers the supraorbital ridge the flattened cheek bones and the pattern of the teeth There are 8 points of similarity with the Cro Magnon type and 12 points of an intermediate character To these the authors of the monograph added 86 features of lesser significance with the result that out of a

total of 113, only 16 features were common to the Palestine type and the Neanderthalers, 32 allied them to the Cro Magnon man (and even to the Neanthropus) 48 were of an intermediate character 13 were undefined and 4 showed points of specialization

From these details we see that there was a deviation, and a very substantial one at that in the direction of the modern type of man Nevertheless McCown and Keith who regard the supraorbital ridge and other specific structural features of the skull, teeth and skeleton as being of the greatest importance, place the Palestine remains in the Neanderthal group as a special link between them and people of a modern type

McCown and Keith, however regard this link as being phylogenic in character and assume that the Neanderthalers and modern man are descendants of a common ancestor the Pithecanthropus It is our opinion that the Palestine folk are undoubtedly a stage in the development from the Neanderthal type to the Cro Magnon type (in the broadest sense of that conception)

A significant anatomical feature that distinguishes the Neanderthal type is the absence of a chin ridge And precisely in the Palestine types we see the transition from the chinless skull to that with a chin this mixture of the anatomical features of modern man with those of the Neanderthaler makes it necessary to consider them a transitional type Since the features typical of modern man predominate some scholars have expressed the opinion that the Palestine folk were the first real men the oldest representatives of *Homo sapiens*

In any case the Palestine discovery is one of the most outstanding events in the sphere of anthropogenesis during the past few decades It is as important as the discovery of the Neanderthal type in Java or even the discovery of the Peking man, the Sinanthropus It is also noteworthy that the intermediate type was discovered in Palestine at the juncture of three continents Europe Asia and Africa and that the fossil remains have features of resemblance not only with the Neanderthalers, but also with the Cro Magnon folk of Europe

The American anthropologist R Solecki (1955 1961) made *some important finds of the fossil remains of early man bearing* some transitional features he made his discovery in the Shanidar cave in the Zagros Mountains of Iraqi Kurdistan Two very interesting male skulls I and II have been restored by T Stewart (fig 142) They display a mixture (Korobov 1963) of Neanderthal features (a clearly defined supraorbital torus) and features of modern man (strongly developed styloid processes and an elementary chin ridge) there are also some peculiarities of the facial region (the lacrimal bones are absent)

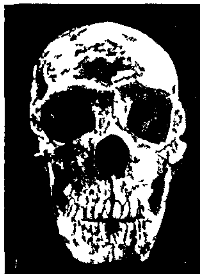




Fig 142 Skull Shanidar I
1—approx $^{2}/$ natural size 2—$^{1}/_{3}$ natural size After R Stewart 1959

The discovery of the fossil remains of Neanderthalers and other forms similar to them over such an extensive territory of the Old World gives us every reason to suppose that the Nean derthal types were the ancestors of modern man It would be difficult to imagine that such a numerous population of Nean derthalers could have become absolutely extinct and have left no trace since their hordes could have fought successfully for their existence under conditions of increasing cold could have hunted animals kept fires burning and have lived in stable primitive groups

The Neanderthal physical types (figs 142 143) were such that could, in the majority of cases have been the predecessors and ancestors of modern man It would indeed be difficult to con ceive any other way in which the modern type could have had its origin One would have to assume that man first originated say in a small district in Asia and from there spread rapidly over the whole territory of the Old World that however in volves the theory of primitive man s migration that nobody now supports

Later works are now more and more supporting the hy pothesis first postulated by the progressive American anthropol ogist Ales Hrdlicka in 1927 that the Cro Magnon developed from the Neanderthal man

The hypothesis is supported by some other finds that have been made since that time in Europe and Asia In 1933 for

example a female Neanderthal skull with small cranial capacity and a heavy supraorbital ridge was found at Steinheim, near Stuttgart, in Germany The foramen magnum is almost in the same position as that of modern man The upper margin of the temporal squama is not horizontal like those of most Neanderthalers, ape men and apes, but is rounded like that of modern man

M A Gremyatsky (1948) proposed the classification of Neanderthal remains into two generalized types—those that were ancestral to modern man and those that showed specialized, European' characteristics More recent ideas on the necessity for a classification of this extensive and variegated group of the immediate ancestors of *Homo sapiens* have been based on this conception but include other Neanderthal remains that bear clear evidence of the descent of the modern type of man from the primitive type (V P Yakimov 1949)

The morphological peculiarities of fossil representatives of mankind indicate that the modern physical type passed through three stages in the course of its formation It is our opinion that the Hominidae family contains only one genus, Homo represented by three subgenera that constitute three stages in man s development (M F Nesturkh 1941 see however, article by G F Debets, 1948)

The first subgenus is the Pithecanthropus it includes two well expressed and well represented species of primitive man They are



Fig 143 Neanderthaler full face and profile
Reconstructed by M Gerasimov 1948

1) the Java or Trinil ape man Homo (Pithecanthropus) erectus

2) the Peking ape man or Sinanthropus Homo (Pithecanthropus) pekinensis

The second subgenus is that of Palaeanthropus or early man grouped around the Neanderthal type To this subgenus belong for example the West European Neanderthalers Rhodesian man, the Palestine Neanderthalers the ancient Java man al together several species or subspecies

The third subgenus is that of the new man Neanthropus that includes fossil types of modern man such as the Cro Magnon type, and the living types All these belong to one species—Homo (Neanthropus) sapiens

5 PRIMITIVE MAN S WAY OF LIFE

Many Neanderthalers lived in caves that protected them from cold during the ice age The bones of the cave bear lions and hyenas have often been found together with the fossil remains of Neanderthalers This shows that primitive man had to contest with wild animals for a dwelling The remains of other animals the mammoth and rhinoceros among them show the extent of the chase hunting became especially intensive in the Mousterian Period Earlier hordes of people had lived chiefly by gathering fruits and roots and trapping small animals

The Mousterian folk hunted not only in open country but also in the forests giving chase mainly to animals of medium size They often hunted the bigger animals collectively killed young defenceless, very old or sick animals that had fallen into pits and swamps and also ate carrion

When the Neanderthalers had killed an animal they used stone tools to remove the skin take the meat off the bones break the long bones to obtain the nutritious bone marrow and crack the skull to get the brains for food The meat was either eaten raw or roasted over a fire It is most likely that the Neanderthalers used the skins of animals to cover their bodies and to sleep on (P P Yefimenko, 1933 H F Osborn 1924)

The hunting economy of the Mousterian Epoch involved considerable technical and organisational progress There was a further division of labour and the most experienced hunters became the leading members of the primitive human horde Although the European Neanderthalers were quite well adapted to life even in the harsh conditions of the Mousterian Epoch it seems likely that disease and the strenuous struggle for existence made them short lived

The life of primitive man was in general one of danger

disease and privation An estimate of this distant period when man was taking shape we find in Lenin s words That primitive man obtained all he required as a free gift of Nature is a silly fable Our age was not preceded by a Golden Age, and primitive man was absolutely crushed by the burden of existence by the difficulties of the struggle against Nature "*

Neanderthalers made better stone tools in greater variety than those of the preceding epochs (fig 144) The implements of the pre Chellean cultures were much simpler than the chisel shaped celts, or hand cutters of the Late Chellean folk

The Chellean celts were made by breaking a piece off a block of native flint in such a way that one end would be sharp and serve as the cutting or striking edge while the other blunt end would serve as a handle that could be grasped in the clenched fist (fig 145) Other types of tool are also known to have existed in the Chellean Epoch

The Acheulian culture employed more symmetrical implements the whole surface of which was treated by chipping this was a completely new technique In this epoch tools made from pieces of flint broken from the native rock are also found but they are really typical of the later Mousterian Palaeolithic culture

Most typical of the Mousterian Epoch are stone scrapers and spearheads made from splinters and not from the stone block

The tool making technique of the Mousterian Epoch was judging by European archaeological discoveries, very different from that of the Acheulian

The shape and size of ancient implements frequently enable us to judge their uses with fair accuracy Tools are often found together with animal bones that have been cracked in the length or broken across and near them remains of a fire and of human bones The tools used by primitive people and other evidence of their activities enable us to draw some very important conclusions about the life they led and about the level of their social and economic development

Marx says Relics of bygone instruments of labour possess the same importance for the investigation of extinct economic forms of society as do fossil bones for the determination of extinct species of animals It is not the articles made but how they are made and by what instruments that enables us to distinguish different economic epochs **

Not only men but also women [illegible] ly took part in the social labour of the primitive horde [illegible] in which they participated was appar[illegible] ifferent [illegible] anatomical and

* Lenin The Ag[illegible] n an [illegible] f Marx See *Collected Works* Vol [illegible]

** K Marx *Capital* [illegible] p

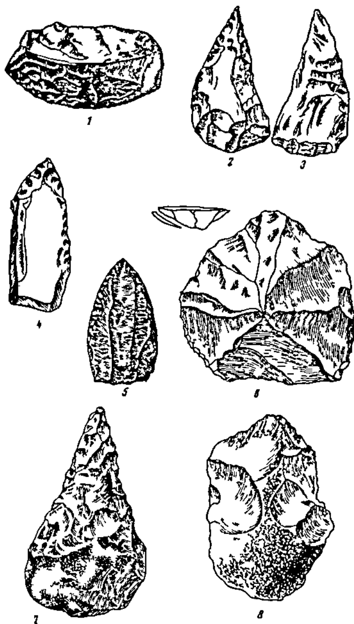


Fig 144 Stone implements of Middle Palaeolithic

1—Mousterian scraper France *2 3 4*—two stone celts from Kiik Koba grotto Crimea *5*—Mousterian celt France *6*—Mousterian disc shaped quartzite nucleus from camping site on River Derkul Donets Basin above—method of splitting layers from nucleus *7*—flint striking tool Acheulian type England *8*—*Chellean striking tool of an early type Belgium* Dimensions of implements *1*—70 mm *2 3 4*—natural size *5*—74 mm *6 7*—$^1/_3$ natural size *8*—about $^1/_?$ natural size

After H Mortillet 1910 (*1 5*) and P Yefimenko 1953 (*2 3 4 6 7 8*)



Fig 145 Neanderthaler
Reconstructed by N Sinelnikov and M Nesturkh
drawn by S Obolensky 1941

physiological specifics of the woman obviously prevented her from taking part with the same ease as the man in the hunting of big animals on account of the lengthy and rapid chase It was also more difficult for a woman to throw stones and struggle with a wild beast

It was not only the chase but other features of the life of primitive people that necessitated the division of labour between men and women This agrees completely with the following postulate of Marx Within a family and after further development within a tribe *there springs up naturally a division of labour* caused by differences of sex and age a division that is consequently based on a purely physiological foundation which *division enlarges its materials by the expansion of the community* by the increase of population and more especially, by the conflicts between different tribes and the subjugation of one tribe by another *

As collective activity and social relations became more complicated even in the primitive Neanderthal horde they had a progressive influence on the development of the brain and of a new method of communication to replace the inarticulate sounds that were typical of the first hominids or ape men This new mode of communication was articulate speech that probably began to take form among the Neanderthalers (if not among the Sinanthropi) but reached full development only in Cro Magnon times

Many scholars regard the Cro Magnon stage of human development as being the one in which early fantastic conceptions of natural forces and later of social forces had their inception such for example as were connected with hunting witchcraft or magic and which became embryonic religions Frederick Engels said of the birth of religion "All religion, however is nothing but the fantastic reflection in men s minds of those external forces which control their daily life a reflection in which the terrestrial forces assume the form of supernatural forces In the beginnings of history it was the forces of nature which were first so reflected, and which in the course of further evolution underwent the most manifold and varied personifications among the various peoples But it is not long before, side by side with the forces of nature social forces begin to be active **

The finds of Neanderthal burials in caves led a number of scholars to speak of the cult burials of these folk but they have been severely criticized (see articles by A P Okladnikov and P I Boriskovsky, 1956 and M S Plisetsky, 1957)

* K Marx *Capital* Vol I Moscow 1965 p 351

** F Engels *Anti Duhring Herr Eugen Duhring s Revolution in Science* Moscow 1962 p 433

Modern man s brain is one of the most important results of the development of hominids as social beings fabricating instruments of labour In human society from its very earliest stages those mental abilities of the individual that proved of benefit in his own life and in that of society began to occupy a more and more prominent place

Not only the process of tool making but also the use of tools was significant in determining man s evolutionary path Labour articulate speech and collective hunting all helped the survival of individuals with the most highly developed brain

The brain of the Pithecanthropus was already one and a half times the size of that of the gorilla and its relative weight must have been three or four times greater In the course of 500,000 years the brain of the ape men developed into the Neanderthal brain which in size and weight more closely approximates that of modern man (fig 146)

The Neanderthal brain however, had a much more primitive structure than that of modern man as may be judged from the poorly developed frontal lobes

Labour had a progressive influence on the development of the brain The great stimulus of labour still did not exist in the ape herds of our ancestors It made its appearance in the hordes of ape men and under the influence of social labour activities the brain began its intensive development and increased in size

The average cranial capacity of the Java Pithecanthropi was about 900 c c the Peking man (Sinanthropus) had an average capacity of 1 050 c c while that of the Neanderthal cranium was 1 300 1 400 c c i e the cranial capacity was almost the same as that of modern man It follows from this that in the course of about two thirds of the Quaternary Period the volume of the brain increased by 400 c c which is equal to an increase in size that among the ancestors of the hominids, must have taken a considerably longer period—from the time of the peak of Dryopithecus development up to the appearance of the first men

The rate of cerebral development from the Pithecanthropus to the Neanderthaler must have been very intensive both absolutely and relatively although there was comparatively little change in primitive techniques and primitive forms of human society in those same hundreds of thousands of years

The newness and the powerful influence of labour on the human organism however produced such rates of cerebral development as had never before occurred and never could have occurred in any other animal Our Miocene ancestors the Dryo

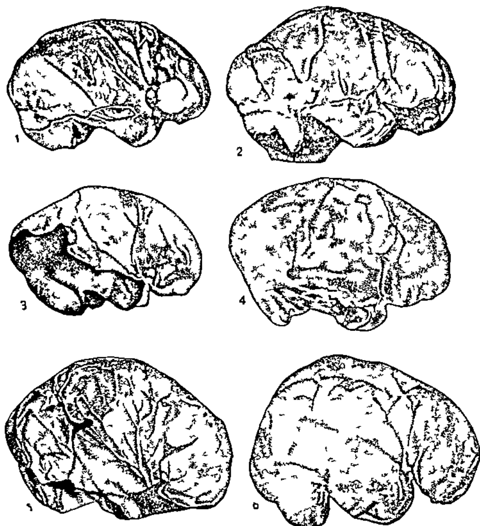


Fig 146 Cranial casts
1—Pithecanthropus 2—Sinanthropus 3—Neanderthaler from Broken Hill and 4—from La Chapelle aux Saints 5—fossil man from Pred most 6—modern man 1/ 1/4 natural size After F Tilney 1928 (1 3 4 5 6) and E Dubois 1933 (2)

pitheci had a brain capacity of something like 400 500 c c that of the Pithecanthropus was almost twice the size but retained many primitive features while that of modern man has increased to almost three times the size and both the shape of the brain and the intricacy of its structure have changed very considerably

The high level of development and the large size of the

human brain make it difficult for people who are idealists in philosophy or who are of a religious turn of mind to accept as correct the scientific explanation of anthropogenesis as a natural process It is however the completely new factor of labour in the company of his fellows something to which the apes had not accustomed themselves together with the making and use of tools to acquire food that was absolutely essential and to defend themselves against their enemies that gave rise to the intensive creative functions of the brain and to tremendous and unique progress in the process of selection (Nesturkh, 1962)

Throughout the Quaternary Period there was a progressive evolution of the absolute dimensions shape and structure of the hominid brain which went on parallel to a reduction of some of its regions Definite information of the changes in the shape and structure of the hominid brain have been obtained by a study of cranial casts made from fossil skulls

On the inner walls of the skulls of fossil man there are clearly defined traces of the blood vessels that once spread over the surface of the brain but the convolutions or gyri are weakly impressed on the bone It is not always possible even to distinguish the divisions of the brain with any degree of accuracy The same difficulties are experienced in studying the cranial casts of modern man All this makes it difficult at times impossible to study such tiny but important regions of the brain as the motor speech and lower parietal regions that are so important to evolution

Man s brain is enclosed in envelopes (meninges) that overlay the walls of the cranium more intimately in the child than in the adult so that the surface of the child s brain is better imprinted on the bone Tilly Edinger (1929) showed that a cast taken from the cranial cavity of man the apes elephant whale or other animal with a big brain covered with convolutions produces an almost smooth surface Edinger says that if anybody wants to study a brain from a cranial cast as a palaeoneurologist has to, he is just groping in the dark

In this respect Edinger agrees with J Symington (1915) who considers that

1) the cranial cast taken from a human skull does not allow the investigator to judge the simplicity or intricacy of the relief of the brain

2) the casts taken from Neanderthal skulls from La Chapelle aux Saints do not permit even of an approximate judgement concerning the relative development of the sensory and associative zones of the cortex

3) the various conclusions drawn by Boule Anthony Elliot Smith and others in respect of the primitive and simian features

of the brains of some prehistoric men that resulted from a study of cranial casts are extremely speculative and fallacious

Nevertheless these casts as Edinger agrees do allow us to draw certain conclusions regarding the shape and the chief features of the brain, such for example as the degree of development of the frontal and occipital regions E Dubois (1924) in his description of the cranial cast of the Pithecanthropus stresses the point that there are important if not direct indications on the cast of the typical peculiarities of the primitive shape of the human brain The Pithecanthropus brain judging by the cast, had very narrow frontal lobes with highly developed inferior frontal convolutions Dubois regards this as a possible indication of speech development

According to Dubois description the flattening of the Pithecanthropus brain in the parietal region is very typical It is similar to other hominid brains in one respect—the widest part is at three fifths of the distance from the margin of the frontal region In general says Dubois the Pithecanthropus brain is rather like an enlarged copy of the anthropoid brain There are some peculiarities in which it approximates the brain of the gibbon the position of the superior precentral convolution and other features says Dubois are evidence of this

Cranial casts from the following skulls are usually employed to determine the Neanderthal type Neanderthal La Chapelle aux Saints Gibraltar La Quina Edinger gives the following characteristic of the Neanderthal brain (with reservations) the structural type is that of the human brain but with clearly expressed simian features It is long and low narrower in front and wider at the back the elevation in the parietal region is lower than that of modern man but higher than that of the apes The smaller number of gyri and their distribution to some extent resemble those of the ape brain This is borne out by the angle of deviation of the medulla oblongata and the narrowing beak shaped fore part of the frontal lobe (rostrum) and the more developed occipital lobes that contain the visual regions The vermiform part of the cerebellum is relatively more developed than in modern man and is a more primitive feature

Greater reliance says Edinger is to be placed on the basic dimensions of the fossil hominid brains (table 5)

Table 5 also shows that some of the Neanderthalers had relatively big heads and a big brain

It would be possible (although not always) to obtain quite accurate figures to characterize the cranial capacity of other hominids Of all the primitive and early men in the making the Neanderthaler from La Chapelle aux Saints apparently had the greatest cranial capacity (1 600 c c) and Pithecanthropus II the

DIMENSIONS OF THE SKULL AND CRANIAL CAST OF HOMINIDS (AFTER TILLY EDINGER 1929)

Hominids	Length (cm)	Width (cm)
Skull		
Modern Man (Bavarians, extent of variation given)	14.3–22.5	10.1–17.3
La Chapelle aux Saints	20.8	15.6
La Quina	20.3	13.8
Neanderthal	19.9	14.7
Cranial Cast		
La Chapelle aux Saints	18.5	[illegible]
La Quina	17.75	13.1
Neanderthal	17.5	13.8

smallest (750 c.c.). The extent of the variations in cranial capacity was comparatively small among Neanderthalers—500 c.c. as compared with 900 c.c. in modern man. It must also not be forgotten that the minimum and maximum, the extent of the variation, depends on the number of individuals studied. The length of the cranial cast taken from the skull of a modern man is about 166 mm and the width about 134 mm (V. V. Bunak, 1953).

Developed asymmetry is typical of the skulls of fossil hominids. Usually the left cerebral hemisphere is more strongly developed which may indicate the preferential use of the right hand. Right- and left-handedness is a characteristic feature of man that distinguishes him from the mammals. Considerable asymmetry of the upper extremities could only have appeared among our ancestors after the development of erect locomotion and the inception of labour activities.

Some asymmetry in the size of the hemispheres was also noted among the Pithecanthropi. According to Elliot Smith (1931) the Pithecanthropus must have been left-handed. Frederic Tilney (1928) on the contrary points to the fact that the left frontal lobe is the more highly developed in the Pithecanthropus brain and assumes that it indicates right-handedness. In general the greater development of the left cerebral hemisphere can be detected from the skull, there being a more noticeable depression on the inner surface of the left occipital bone. Some asymmetry is also noticeable in the cranial cast of the Sinanthropus.

The brain of the Neanderthaler is clearly asymmetric in the

same way as that of modern man In the cranial cast taken from the La Chapelle skull the left hemisphere is 7 mm shorter 7 mm wider and is higher than the right hemisphere and its parieto temporal region protrudes to a greater extent To this must be added the fact that the dimensions of the right clavicle are greater than those of the left

On the cranial cast of the Gibraltar skull the occipital lobe of the left hemisphere protrudes to a noticeably greater extent than the right On the La Quina cast the left hemisphere is longer but the right is better developed Lastly the right hemisphere of the Neanderthal cast is bigger than the left

From these descriptions it can be seen that right handed individuals were met with among primitive and early men they seem to be as frequent if not more frequent than left handed individuals The shape and method of making stone tools as well as the cliff drawings of ancient man also provide evidence of the preferential use of the right or left hand According to R Kobler (1932) men were at first left handed later in connection with the use of more intricate types of weapons (for example in combination with such weapons of defence as the shield) the right hand came to be used preferentially Kobler refers to the fact that the majority of the ancient stone tools show traces of their having been made with the left hand Edinger however reports that two thirds of the flint tools made by primitive man in the Upper Palaeolithic were the work of right handed people and that the same applies to paintings in the caves Cranial casts of fossil men of the modern type and of their descendants are similar in all important features

It seems therefore that one can agree with D J Cunningham (1902) who wrote before the cranial casts of fossil men were known that right handedness was a specific feature of man at a very early stage of his development probably even before his ability to make use of articulate speech He noted that the left cerebral hemispheres of the majority of modern people are more higly developed than the right

And so in the course of the long path of development from monkey to man in the course of the last few million years the brain of our ancestors the Miocene and then the Pliocene anthropoids grew larger and changed its shape while in the Pleistocene there was a specially intensive development among the fossil hominids that led to the high level of development we find in modern man

The evolution of the human brain becomes more comprehensible through the application of Darwin s theory of the development of the organic world and Engels theory of the role played by labour in the process of man s becoming The brain had

torical period were any longer in this primeval state Although this period may have lasted for many thousands of years we have no direct evidence of its existence but once we admit the descent of man from the animal kingdom the acceptance of this transitional stage is inevitable *

Some scholars date the inception of speech to a very distant epoch as far back as the Lower or Middle Paleolithic It is possible that the Sinanthropus already possessed some rudimentary forms of speech The first stage of real speech development must have been at the time of the Neanderthalers

Black considers that the Sinanthropus was capable of articulate speech It may be assumed that the Java Pithecanthropi were not speaking people like most animals they possessed a number of inarticulate sounds that indicated some inner state and which also acted as signals connected with labour processes and which were more varied than those used by the chimpanzee It is probable that the primitive men also used non affective comparatively soft vocal sounds the vital noises that according to V V Bunak (1951 1966) had a special significance for the development of speech

The American scientists Robert Yerkes and Blanche Learned (1925) made a special study of the sounds emitted by chimpanzees They came to the conclusion that the chimpanzees make use of about thirty sounds each of which has a special meaning as a signal that indicates some inner state or attitude towards environmental phenomena It is also possible that there are not so many of these sounds perhaps only twenty or twenty five

Little is known of the sounds emitted by the gorilla Usually the roar of the male attacking an enemy is described One scientist was able to observe a male mountain gorilla on a tree trunk *with two females he heard them exchange soft peaceful* sounds

The orangutan uses very few sounds they are silent animals and emit grunts, roars and yelps only under special stress to express such emotions as fear, anger or pain The loud noises produced by gibbons can be heard for many kilometres

All the efforts made by Robert Yerkes to teach his chimpanzees *to speak ended in failure although he used various teaching* methods Yerkes also proposed to use methods with his chimpanzees similar to those employed by pedagogues to teach deaf and dumb children to speak If such methods could have any success at all, it would only be through their application to baby

---

Frederick Engels *The Origin of the Family Private Property and the State* See K Marx and F Engels *Selected Works* Vol II Moscow 1962 pp 185 86

chimpanzees since the ontogenic development of the chimpanzee brain is completed earlier than in man

It must be remembered that the chief reason for the difficulty in teaching apes even a few words is the rudimentary state of their speech organs. Another thing that must be borne in mind is the considerable difference in the structure of the vocal organs of the apes and man (see article by Bunak mentioned above 1951)

Ludwig Edinger (1911) noting the high development of the chimpanzee cerebral cortex admits the possibility of a patient trainer teaching a few words to an ape but it would remain at an immeasurable distance from man since the basis for clear understanding the relevant regions of the brain, are not developed

Many scientists believe that an anatomical requirement for the development of speech in man is the chin ridge a feature found only in men of the modern type The Neanderthalers as a rule did not have it nor did the ape men or any of the modern or fossil apes (with the exception of the webbed gibbon the Siamang)

The inception of speech however should not be connected with the presence of a chin ridge since the pronunciation of articulate sounds requires primarily the precise correlated work of the whole speech apparatus including the sensory and mnemonic zones of the brain that are situated in the phylogenically new regions of the parietal and temporal lobes

According to L Bolk (1926) man s chin developed mainly on account of the reduction of the limbus alveolaris that part of the mandible that carries the teeth The lower part the body of the jaw was subjected to a lesser process of reduction thus producing a chin ridge

The protruding lower part of the elephant s mandible is something of an analogy in another mammal the elephant s dental system underwent a still greater reduction so that it now consists entirely of four molars and two upper incisors the tusks that is six teeth

Speech functions could have had only a secondary effect on the basic process of chin formation (M A Gremyatsky, 1922) More significant in the development of man's speech abilities were the transformation of the mandible which changed its shape from the elongated to the horseshoe form the increased size of the oral cavity in which the tongue moves and the freer movement of the lower jaw in new directions due to the reduction of the canine teeth

Most important in the development of articulate speech are the anatomical and physiological peculiarities of the frontal divisions of the cerebral cortex (parallel to the development of the parietal and temporal regions) Attempts have been made to

establish the degree of development shown by this most important part of the brain on the cranial casts of fossil skulls It is unfortunately difficult to draw any conclusion concerning the use of articulate speech from the cranial cast even when it is compared with those of modern man (Edinger 1929) It is furthermore exceedingly difficult even if the brain itself is studied The cranial cast only shows the shape of the brain in its mantles or meninges that form such a complete covering that they hide the convolutions and sulci of the brain and show a picture of only the biggest blood vessels A new attempt to study the cranial casts of fossil hominids has been made on a large amount of material in the Brain Laboratory of the Moscow Institute of Anthropology (Kochetkova 1966)

Articulate speech is not a congenital factor This has been proved in particular by the rare cases in which children have grown up in complete isolation or among animals far from human society as a rule they have not been able to speak when found

Of all the ties and mutual relations of an individual and group character that existed among the primitive hominids of greatest importance for the inception of speech were those that developed through labour During the hunting of animals by the entire horde and during the subsequent division of the meat among the members of the community during the joint fabrication of implements during all their activities throughout the working day a day that was taken up entirely by the struggle for existence the primitive people experienced a need for sound communication that would regulate and correlate their activities In this way various sounds and auxiliary to them gestures and grimaces became a vital necessity that showed in a readily comprehensible manner the need for certain acts or actions that had to be agreed upon between members of the horde The sounds of the voice were of special importance in the dark Then again when our ancestors gathered around the fire in their caves there were further opportunities to develop speech habits The use of fire and the invention of methods of obtaining it must necessarily have greatly stimulated the development of articulate speech as early as Neanderthal times

Engels evolved the Marxist explanation of how articulate speech developed He came to the conclusion that speech as a means of communication between people began as vocal sounds accompanied or preceding labour processes and other joint actions undertaken by primitive man The mastery over nature which begins with the development of the hand with labour wrote Engels widened man s horizon at every new advance He was continually discovering new hitherto unknown prop

erties of natural objects On the other hand the development of labour necessarily helped to bring the members of society closer together by multiplying cases of mutual support joint activity and by making clear the advantage of this joint activity to each individual In short men in the making arrived at the point where *they had something to say* to one another The need led to the creation of its organ by modulation the un developed larynx of the ape was slowly but surely transformed for ever more developed modulation and the organs of the mouth gradually learned to pronounce one articulate letter after another *

The high development of the brain coupled with erect locomo tion and the use of the hand were important prerequisites to the emergence of speech but no less important was the effect of speech on the brain With regard to this Engels wrote

First labour after it and then with it articulate speech—these were the two most essential stimuli under the influence of which the brain of the ape gradually changed into that of man **

Speech was a phenomenon of great advantage it was useful to society and therefore its development inevitably continued

Engels cites examples from animal life in support of his theory of the development of speech through labour The human voice may have meaning for wild animals only as a danger signal but the sounds of human speech become to a certain extent com prehensible to domestic animals to dogs for example no matter in what language man may speak but always, of course within the conceptual limits of the animal brain

Words pronounced by man become signals for definite actions on the part of domestic animals actions that either the man or the animals themselves must perform Animals capable of the rapid and stable development of conditioned reflexes (i e ani mals that can be trained) prove when tamed or domesticated better able to understand when obedience to the signal meets with approval and disobedience meets with punishment

The sounds of articulate speech that at first most likely served as signals for actions gradually came to indicate objects and phenomena the number of sound signals increased and greater importance was attached to their force tone overtones intona tion and sequence And as sound language or speech developed the apparatus producing the sounds also underwent certain changes The sound analysers in man were perfected although they are not always so delicately attuned to the reception of

* F Engels *The Dialectics of Nature* Moscow 1954 p 231
** *Ibid* p 233

the finer differences of the frequency and timbre of speech sounds as those of some other mammals But man is immeasurably superior in his comprehension of their inner content *especially when he is dealing with some combination of sounds* in this respect his sound analyser is highly specialized and enables him to distinguish a far greater number of sounds and their meanings than any animal can The peripheral region of man s sound analyser like that of some apes underwent a process of reduction as can be seen in the almost complete immobility and the rudimentary nature of the muscles of the human ear

The cortical region of the human sound analyser according to S M Blinkov s researches (1955) differs qualitatively and structurally from the relevant region even in the anthropoids this is also true of the entire temporal lobe It is not only the temporal, frontal and parietal lobes of the cerebral cortex that are involved in speech functions but the cortex as a whole

Man alone is able to think in words the second system of signals to use Pavlov s terminology is an important basis for the development of consciousness The second system of signals is intimately bound up with the first system that covers conditioned reflexes of the usual type and unites the conscious specifically human conditioned reflex to the spoken word that indicates actions objects and the relationships between them concepts etc Pavlov s thesis on the second system of signals is one of the greatest achievements of Soviet science It enables us to extend Engels' concept of the origin of speech in the course of work processes This is a problem on which many Russian thinkers have focussed attention We find some interesting ideas on the inception of speech in A M Gorky s writing

We know that the abilities that distinguish man from the animals developed and still continue to develop in the course of labour processes the ability to use articulate speech also grew on that soil' At first he says verbal forms and measuring words (heavy far) developed and then names for the implements of labour In Gorky s opinion there were no meaningless words in rudimentary speech Gorky speaks of the close organic connection between human speech the human mind and man s various labour activities Human reason flamed up during work on the *reorganization of crudely organized matter and is itself* nothing more than delicately organized energy energy that is constantly becoming still more delicately organized and which has been extracted from that matter in the course of work on it and with it by the investigation and assimilation of its forces and properties

It seems likely that articulate speech promoted the progressive development of man as early as the Neanderthal stage the

intensive growth of speech at that period probably facilitated the conversion of early man into the higher type the Cro Magnon man The later Neanderthalers with their ability to make fire with the inception of the custom of burying their dead in caves and grottos that had served as dwellings with their methods of working bone were at a higher stage of development than their predecessors the early Neanderthalers

Articulate speech developed and grew more complicated among fossil men of the modern type i e the new, complete or reasoning people who went through the subsequent stages of the history of material culture the stages of social and economic development at a constantly increasing rate (Voino 1964)

As can be seen from the above brief outline modern man is the result of a long process of evolution which in the first and most lengthy division of man s phylogenic history was a component part of the common evolution of the animal kingdom and was subject to its biological laws

But the emergence of the first people with their labour social habits and speech was a leap forward a break in the chain of evolution By means of an abrupt change a sudden, decisive turn in the course of evolution there began a new stage in the development of living matter in the form of emergent man This was the beginning of a completely new process of the formation of man Men in the making were not animals as B I Porshnev assumes (1955) when he regards only representatives of the species *Homo sapiens* as people

The labour of the most primitive and early man who made his own tools differs qualitatively and in principle from the labour of beavers ants bees or birds building their nests Only natural biological factors operate in the evolution of animals

The conversion of the ape into man took place under the influence of a whole group of social and biological factors this formative process qualitatively different from the evolution of the animal kingdom can only be understood from the standpoint of Engels' dialectical materialist concept of the decisive role of labour

The dialectical materialist concept of the making of man his brain speech and thought serves as a sound basis in Soviet anthropology for profound research into anthropogenesis, for the struggle against every kind of idealist hypothesis in this branch of the science of man and also in the study of races and the exposure of racism on the basis of anthropological data

CHAPTER THREE

MODERN MAN (NEANTHROPUS)

1 UPPER PALAEOLITHIC MAN

The beings that created the Late or Upper Palaeolithic cultures had a physical structure different from that of the Neanderthal men No Neanderthal fossil bones have been found together with Upper Palaeolithic stone implements The skulls of the Cro Magnon and other fossil men of the modern type had a straight forehead supraorbital arches (in place of the ridge) and a chin or mental protuberance all of which are features possessed by the skulls of men with a high level of physical development (Bunak 1965) A much higher cultural level also distinguishes the Cro Magnon from the Neanderthal men (Hockmann 1965) With the aid of new techniques their tools were made with much greater skill some of them were of bone or horn (fig 147) They also fitted handles to some tools which marked a big and important step forward

The Upper Palaeolithic is divided into three epochs—Aurignacian Solutrian and Magdalenian They are equated with the second half of the period of maximum glaciation the end of the glacial epoch and to a considerable extent with the postglacial epoch towards the end of which comes the next great cultural division the New Stone Age or Neolithic

The Upper Palaeolithic began when it was still extremely cold in the second half of the period of maximum glaciation The fauna included the reindeer mammoth woolly rhinoceros and the wild horse (fig 148) The number of squatting places in caves grottos and under overhanging cliffs was much greater in the Aurignac than in the Mousterian phase Later as it grew warmer people made their encampments in the open (fig 149) It was in this warmer epoch that they began their intensive hunting of the wild horse (fig 150) the extent of horse hunting may be judged from the fact that the bone remains of about 100 000 horses were found at a squatting place at Solutre (France) The Cro Magnon folk also hunted the aurochs (fig 151)

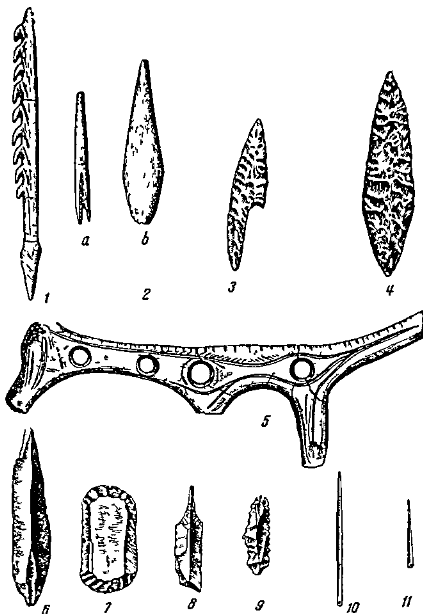


Fig 147 Stone and bone implements from Upper Palaeolithic
1—horn harpoon 2—bone spearheads 3 4—flint spearheads 5—tool for straightening spearhafts 6—cutter (knife) 7—scraper 8—drill 9—needle sharpener 10 11—bone needles (Reduced)



Fig. 148. Mammoth hunt
Fresco by V. Zvyagintsev. Museum of Anthropology, Moscow State University

Camping grounds in the open predominate in the Solutre Epoch Laurel leaf spearheads and bone articles are typical of the implements of that epoch

In the Magdalenian Epoch the cold returned to some extent—this time corresponds to the Wurm glacial epoch The Cro Magnon folk were again driven more frequently to their caves They had to dispute the ownership of these caves with the wild animals that were their rivals in the quest for a dwelling Reindeer hunting is distinctive of the Magdalenian Epoch when the art and technique of tool making underwent a radical change Typical of the new epoch were the tiny stone tools (microliths) and many artifacts of bone and horn

The most important find of Cro Magnon fossil bones was made in the Cro Magnon cave on the River Vezere near Les Eyzies Departement Dordogne France in 1868 The cave contained five skeletons from which it may be judged that they were a tall race of people up to 180 cm (6 feet) in height The cranial capacity of the skull is very great one of them being 1 590 c c The face is very broad the supraorbital arches are rather prominent but there is a depression between them (glabella) as in modern skulls in other words there is no thick supraorbital ridge or torus that is so strongly expressed in Neanderthal types Traces of the Cro Magnon culture were also discovered in the cave—these included bone harpoons in addition to the Upper Palaeolithic stone implements

In 1909 the skeleton of a modern type man was found under an overhanging cliff at Combe Capelle near Monferran (Dordogne France) The skeleton lay absolutely untouched in the very lowest Aurignacian cultural stratum A large number of flint tools and drilled shells were found with it The bones of the skeleton had been calcified by the white lime contained in the water dripping from the roof above it and were excellently preserved The skeleton is of great antiquity judging by the implements found with it the Combe Capelle man lived in the Early Aurignacian Epoch His height was only a little over 160 cm The long axis of the skull was very long (index 65 7) The German anthropologist Hermann Klaatsch, gave it the name of Aurignacian man Some scholars are of the opinion that the Aurignacian man could well be called a Cro Magnon man like other representatives of the modern type such as those taken from the Cavillon grotto in France (fig 152)

In 1936 on the territory of the U S S R the remains of Cro Magnon types were found in the Mursak Koba grotto on the left bank of the River Chornaya near the village of Gorgun (Balaklava District, Crimea) The find consisted of the skeletons of a man and a woman buried together (S N Bibikov 1940



Fig 143 Cro Magnon folk making tools
After A Forestier 1931

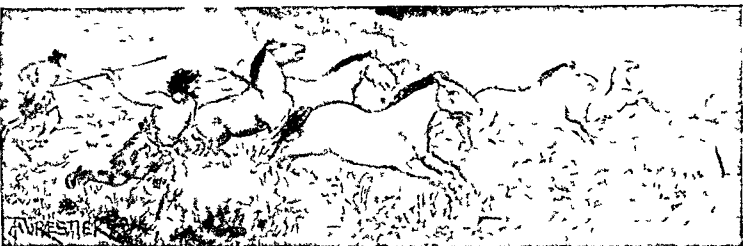


Fig. 150. Magdalenian hunters chasing wild horses. Archives of Museum of Anthropology, Moscow State University



Fig. 151. Early men of the Magdalenian epoch hunt aurochs by driving the herd to a cliff edge. Vicinity of Amvrosiyevka, 2 km from Krynka (tributary of the Mius), Donets Basin.

Reconstructed by



Fig 152 Cro-Magnon burial in Cavillon grotto Menton France After J McCardy 1924

V V Zhirov 1940) The male skeleton (partially destroyed) had a length of 180 cm the female skeleton was well preserved and had a length of 160 cm the skeletons belong to the Mesolithic Epoch

S N Bibikov and S A Trusova who discovered them had previously *discovered an undamaged male skeleton of the same* epoch under the Fatma Koba cliff in a gully leading into the River Chornaya The length of this skeleton was 168 cm The prominent facial region and some other features indicated a Negroid admixture (M M Gerasimov, 1955)

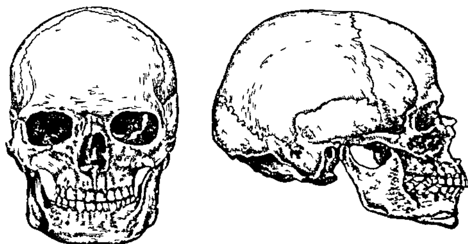


Fig 153 Skull Kostenki XIV from Upper Palaeolithic burial camping ground Markina Gora near village of Kostenki 45 km south of Voronezh Restored by M Gerasimov
1/4 natural size After G Debets 1955



Fig 154 Cro Magnon skeletons youth (right) and woman both with some Negroid features (Skulls somewhat artificially reconstructed) From La Grotte des Enfants Menton France After R Verneau 1906

Finds of this type give rise to the idea of the common origin of the black and white races. A fairly recent discovery made by Soviet scientists tends to support this view. When archaeologist A. N. Rogachov was excavating in the village of Kostenki on the banks of the Don, some 15 kilometres south of Voronezh, he discovered a burial dating back to the beginning of the Upper Palaeolithic at the squatting place Kostenki XIV, a place known as Markina Gora.

The complete skeleton of a young man about 25 years of age was found lying on its side. The study of the skull (fig. 153) drew the attention of anthropologist G. F. Debets to the very wide nasal orifice and the prognathous jaws. Since these are features typical of Negroid skulls, Debets considered that the skeleton was evidence of the penetration of southern types to the north, possibly from the area of Asia Minor.

On the other hand, this skull with its mixture of Negroid and Europeoid features resembles the skull from the Grimaldi grotto and supports the idea of the phylogenic relation of the black and white races and, consequently, the thesis of the unity of mankind that emerges from the materialist conception of anthropogenesis.

A. N. Rogachov and P. I. Boriskovsky also discovered other skeletons of fossil men at Kostenki (G. F. Debets, 1955; A. P. Yakimov, 1957).

In addition to the skeletons from Cro-Magnon and Combe Capelle, other types of man closely related to them have been discovered. The Grimaldi folk, for example, lived in Europe at the very beginning of the Upper Palaeolithic; remains of these people were found in La Grotte des Enfants near Menton on the borders of France and Italy. The skeletons found there belonged to a youth of 16-17 years and a woman 30-40 years of age; they were people of small stature (157 and 155 cm.) and possessed certain Negroid features (fig. 154).

The Grimaldi type is a possible indication that Negroid elements penetrated from Africa into Europe. In those times people of different races could migrate from Africa to Europe and back. So far the Grimaldi skeletons are the only find of their kind and the penetration of Negroid elements from Africa into Europe was probably of a limited nature (Vlček, 1965). The development of the Negroid race in that epoch is shown by the male skeleton found at Asselar, a post in the Sahara Desert 400 km. to the north-east of Timbuktu (Timbuctoo) and 20 km. to the southeast of el Mabrouk (fig. 155).

In the Solutrean Epoch in Europe there lived the Brunn race. The cranial vault of one representative of this race was found in 1871 near the town of Brux and the skeleton of another in

1891 near Brunn (Brno) both in Czechoslovakia This race of people had extremely long skulls one of them has an index of 68 2 with strongly developed supraorbital arches This added to other features approximates the Brünn type to the Neander thal But the cranial vault is higher than that of the Neanderthal type and there is a chin which in general makes the Brunn skull closer to that of the modern type of man like the skulls of the Grimaldi folk or the Aurignacian skull from Combe Capelle

Some anthropologists regard the remains of fourteen skeletons found at Předmost Czechoslovakia, beginning with 1880 as belonging to the Brunn race According to data cited by J Ma tiegka (1935) the skulls of this series have a big cranial capac ity skull III (male)—1 608 c c skull IV (female)—1 518 c c skull IX (male youth)—1 555 c c skull X (young female)—1 452 c c Characteristic features are—strongly developed supra orbital arches and a sloping forehead (fig 156) Matiegka was of the opinion that the skulls from a morphological viewpoint

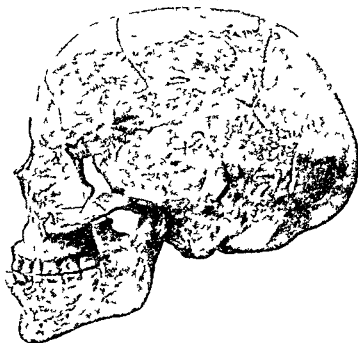


Fig 155 Skull from Asselar Sahara North Africa
About 1/4 natural size After H Weinert 1939

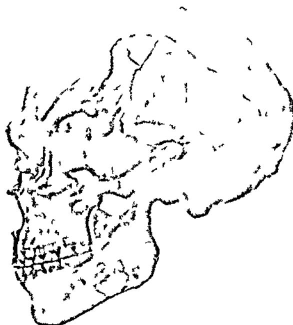


Fig 156 Skull of modern type fossil man from Predmost Czechoslovakia Skull III (male) About 1/3 natural size After J Matiegka 1935

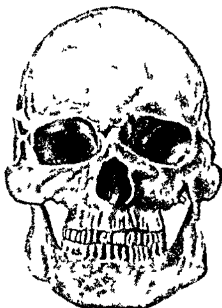
come between the Early Quaternary types of man and modern man

Neanderthal features are found in a number of other types besides the Cro Magnon types from Brünn although they are not always so pronounced The Oberkassel skeletons discovered near Bonn (Germany) in 1914 possess some of these features The skeletons are those of a woman of about 20 and a man of 40 50 years of age They are Cro Magnon type with heavy supra orbital arches and the face is very wide between the cheek bones (figs 157 158)

The Cro Magnon skulls found in several other places all retain certain Neanderthal features

A special place is occupied by the cranial vaults with features of an intermediate type found on the territory of the U S S R — the Podkumok Skhodnya Khvalynsk Severskaya and Kebelyai types

The first of these was found during excavation work on the River Podkumok near Pyatigorsk in 1918 It was described by M A Gremyatsky in 1922 His study of the skull showed that



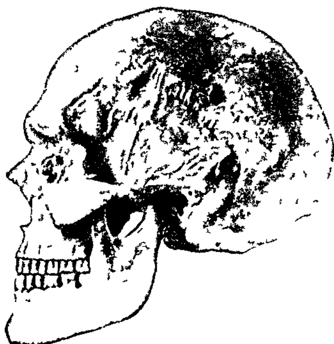


Fig. 157. Male skull from Oberkassel, Western Germany. About $\frac{1}{3}$ natural size. After H. Osborn, 1924 (*1*) and after E. Werth, 1929 (*2*)

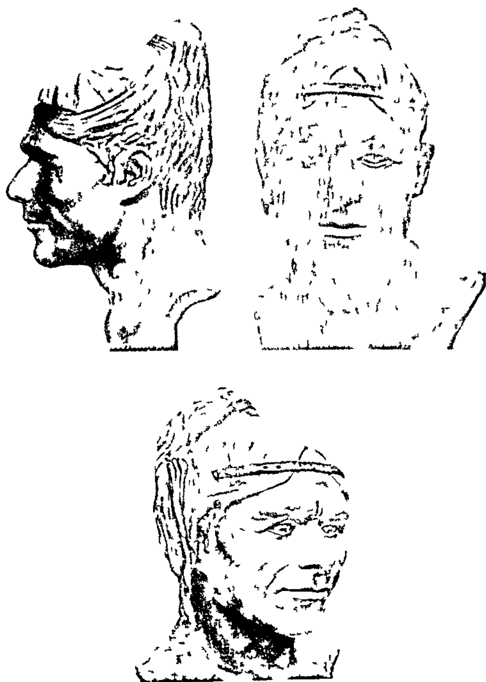


Fig 158 Fossil man from Oberkassel Western Germany
Reconstructed by M Gerasimov
Moscow Museum of Anthropology

the pronounced supraorbital bony processes the posteriorly lower supraorbital ridge, the sloping forehead and other features were of a Neanderthaloid character Some scholars regard the Pod kumok skull, on account of the sum total of its morphological features as belonging to a man of the modern type the same is apparently true of the Skhodnya and Khvalynsk cranial vaults (O N Bader 1936 1940 M A Gremyatsky, 1948)

In 1936, on the banks of the River Skhodnya near Moscow a cranial vault was discovered that apparently belonged to a man of the modern type but which had certain Neanderthal features O N Bader (1936) described the find *in situ* and made a brief description of it He speaks of some points of similarity with the Podkumok skull and regards the Skhodnya skull as being one of the transitional forms between the Neanderthal and modern types

The third cranial vault was found as long ago as 1927 near the town of Khvalynsk on the island of Khoroshensky (O N Ba der, 1940), but to the present day has not been described in detail The discovery made by A V Bodyansky of fragments of frontal bones near Dniepropetrovsk (N N Karlov 1949) has been described by T S Konduktorova (1952) *

W Gudelis and S Povilonis (1952) have reported the find in Lithuania of an incomplete cranial vault with transitional features In 1950 near the village of Kebelyai Klaipeda Region a human frontal bone with small pieces of the temporal bones attached was taken from a gravel quarry The supraorbital arches are strongly expressed the forehead is sloping and nar row these and some other features are regarded by the above mentioned authors as being analogous to features of the Skhod nya vault While noting the Neanderthal features they neverthe less regard this individual (male, 30 35 years) as belonging to a modern type of man The cranial vault is not of very great antiquity according to the geological chronology of Lithuania the cranial vault belongs to the littoral period (3 000 4 000 years B C) which corresponds to the Mesolithic or the beginning of the Neolithic Another interesting find was that of a child s skull at Staroselye Crimea (*Sovietskaya Etnografia* 1954 No 1)

Skulls with these transitional features are occasionally found among collections of modern skulls This is evidence of the descent of Cro Magnon types and of modern man in general from the Neanderthal type The Cro Magnon type has not com pletely disappeared in some places it is clearly expressed even today for example in the physical features of the people of certain parts of France

---

* All these specimens are in the Moscow Institute of Anthropology

Many scholars have raised various objections to the opinion that the Neanderthal type was the starting point of modern man The difference in the structure of the teeth for example has been pointed out, this is expressed in particular in the big dental cavity of the Neanderthal molars extending almost to the end of the long and short roots As we have already mentioned, this type of tooth is known as taurodontal to distinguish it from the cynodontal tooth of modern man with its long roots and small cavity (Keith 1933) The taurodontal form, however is occasionally found among modern people in some human groups it occurs in as many as 20 30 per cent of individuals

The extent to which the Neanderthal type spread all over the Old World shows the great viability of this species of hominid and of its successful adaptation to varied geographical conditions including the difficulties that were placed in its way by the ice age

Just as man learned to consume everything edible wrote Engels, 'he learned also to live in any climate He spread over the whole of the habitable world being the only animal that had the power to do so on its own account The other animals that have become accustomed to all climates—domestic animals and vermin—did not become so independently but only in the wake of man And the transition from the uniformly hot climate of the original home of man to colder regions where the year was divided into summer and winter created new requirements shelter and clothing as protection against cold and damp new spheres for labour and hence new forms of activity which further separated man from the animal *

Adaptation to the various climatic changes during the Quaternary Period was one of the reasons for man's intensive evolution the development of production and of the physical organization of man himself By the beginning of the Upper Palaeolithic the industry and physical type of the Neanderthaler had been transformed into the industry and physical type of the Cro Magnon man

Did this process of transformation proceed at the same rate and with the same ease everywhere? Were there races of Neanderthalers that became the separate prototypes of the Europeoid Mongoloid and Negro Australoid racial divisions of modern mankind? These are urgent questions that have been raised during the past few decades by anthropologists in the Soviet Union and abroad F Weidenreich for example propounded a typical polycentrist hypothesis which postulated four centres for the making of modern man the original homes of the

* F Engels *The Dialectics of Nature* Moscow 1954 p 237

Europeans Mongolians Negroes and Australians four areas in which the chief races took shape From this is drawn the conclusion that there is no relationship between the races

Another viewpoint elaborated in the form of a monocentrist hypothesis has been propounded by the Soviet anthropologist Y Y Roginsky He showed that the races of today have a complex of skull characteristics (he studied a series of skulls from each race) indicating that in their physical structure they more closely approximate each other than Weidenreich s hypothesis allows for The documentary data possessed by Soviet anthropology taken in conjunction with Engels' labour theory of anthropogenesis are sufficient to refute Weidenreich s not very elucidating constructions (Y Y Roginsky 1949, M G Levin 1946)

How was the transition from the Neanderthal type to modern man effected? What factors made possible the final stage in the long process of transition from ape to man to the man who perfected himself under the influence of the most powerful factor—labour?

According to Roginsky s theory (1936 1938) the development of the Neanderthalers into Cro Magnon types took place in the primitive communities that emerged from the Mousterian hordes the horde with its semi animal egoism and still insufficiently curbed savage instincts became a higher social body the gens or clan (S P Tolstov 1946) The formation of a real community out of the primitive horde is one of the most distinctive culminating features of the making of man The contradiction between savage instincts inherited from the previous stage in the development of the primitive community and the growth of labour techniques was overcome and was the beginning of more complicated social relations And those communities that were better adapted to the new living conditions and had the more progressive social organisation proved the most viable

It is probable that by this time natural selection no longer had such great significance as it had had in the main period of the formation of man because man in the narrow sense of the word was now fully evolved The hand and the foot had reached a high level of development the pelvis had turned to an angle of about 60° with the horizontal the vertebral column had at last acquired its human curvature the neck had acquired its distinctive shape the head was now poised directly on the spine and was well balanced and the brain had reached a very high level of development in all representatives of the human race A new being had developed from the more primitive less specialised form of the Neanderthalers a being that could with all justice be said to belong to the species *Homo*

sapiens, reasoning man. When Linnaeus gave man this name to distinguish him from other living beings he gave it a special significance. He regarded the human intellect as being a particle of the divine spirit. We may retain Linnaeus' term since it is firmly established in science, but we must give it a new meaning; by reason we must understand the purely materialist ability to think which developed to the greatest extent in modern man some tens of thousands of years ago. It is safe to assume that modern man *Homo sapiens* is hardly likely to undergo a further biological evolution and develop into a new species. Labour has now lost its significance for the evolution of the species, for man is now changing at a very high speed as a social creature (Kohler, 1961).

The postglacial epoch has lasted about 15 000 years. The end of the Upper Palaeolithic in Western Europe came about 10 000-12 000 years ago. Since that time there has been a further change in fauna and flora due to the ending of the ice age.

At the end of the Upper Palaeolithic man was hunting the deer and very often the mammoth. He had taken to fishing as an occupation, which in turn led to the invention of a number of special new implements. The groups still lived in caves as the climate continued to be quite cold.

Parallel to the Cro-Magnon types that had formerly existed new types appeared, not only dolichocephalic (long-skulled) but also brachycephalic (round-skulled) races. The physical type of Neolithic man very closely resembled that of men living today. Probably the most remarkable difference between the living and fossil representatives of modern man is to be found in the structure of their teeth and jaws. This is no doubt due to the change in diet that had in the past undoubtedly been of a much cruder nature. Keith (1933) summarizes these differences as follows: the fossil races of man all had wisdom teeth that showed some reduction in size and development, the crowns of the teeth were badly worn down, diseased teeth were rare. In modern man some of the wisdom teeth, sometimes even all of them, erupt at a very advanced age and in some cases do not appear at all, the grinding surface of the teeth is not greatly effaced and diseased teeth are common.

The culture predominating at the end of the Upper Palaeolithic has been called the Azil-Tardenoise culture from the names of two encampments discovered in France. The older of them at Azil (in the foothills of the Pyrenees) is distinguished by flat harpoons and pebbles ornamented with coloured symbols. The later culture, Tardenoise (in northern France), is distinguished by microlithic tools of peculiar shapes resembling trapezia and segments. This culture is also called Mesolithic because it is

intermediate between the Palaeolithic and Neolithic, it has further, been called Epipalaeolithic The bow was invented and the dog was domesticated in this period

The real Neolithic or New Stone Age, is distinguished by the appearance of polished and drilled stone tools, the use of pottery the building of pile dwellings and the taming and domestication of various animals First of all man tamed mammals the oldest of which as we said above was the dog, then came the pig the horse the cow and the sheep

All these varied and beneficial cultural achievements could only have made their appearance through the progressive development of human collectives the primitive communities The hunting of wild animals continued and they are depicted although in a more schematic form, on cliffs and the walls of caves (fig 159)

The cave ceased to be the permanent habitation of man in the Neolithic Period In addition to pastoral pursuits the tilling of the ground was begun, a prominent part in the latter belonging to the women of the community The beginning of a new turning point in man s economy was the discovery of the useful properties of metals Metallurgy was used with tremendous success by man in the course of his further social development (the Bronze Age the Iron Age)

2 FALSE HYPOTHESES CONCERNING THE ORIGIN OF MODERN MAN AND THEIR CRITICISM

Many hypotheses concerning the origin of modern man have been proposed but we shall first of all examine some of those that claim that the modern type of man has existed for all time Oswald Spengler (1933) declared that we know nothing of man having had any ancestors and that man has always been what he is today The Neanderthaler is to be seen at any public meeting he maintains This assertion is obviously dictated by his hatred for the people and contradicts all the known scientific data on the skeleton of the Neanderthaler and that of modern man it is a weak attempt to prove that the modern type of man has existed throughout all time The views of such reactionaries as Spengler must be resolutely refuted

Equally unacceptable is the hypothesis propounded by Kasimir Stolyhwo (1937) who considers the Neanderthalers to have been one of the human races a variety of *Homo sapiens* and that they are the form typical for the Mousterian Epoch He also believes that the Neanderthal type is still to be found here and there among modern men

The more ancient hominids with their strongly expressed



Fig 159 Drawings of animals made by ancient hunters on walls of Zaraut Sai Gorge Surkhan Darya Region Uzbekistan Fresco by A Kirillov and A Roginskaya Museum of Anthropology Moscow State University

intermediate between the Palaeolithic and Neolithic, it has further been called Epipalaeolithic The bow was invented and the dog was domesticated in this period

The real Neolithic or New Stone Age is distinguished by the appearance of polished and drilled stone tools the use of pottery the building of pile dwellings and the taming and domestication of various animals First of all man tamed mammals the oldest of which as we said above was the dog, then came the pig the horse the cow and the sheep

All these varied and beneficial cultural achievements could only have made their appearance through the progressive development of human collectives the primitive communities The hunting of wild animals continued and they are depicted although in a more schematic form on cliffs and the walls of caves (fig 159)

The cave ceased to be the permanent habitation of man in the Neolithic Period In addition to pastoral pursuits the tilling of the ground was begun a prominent part in the latter belonging to the women of the community The beginning of a new turning point in man s economy was the discovery of the useful properties of metals Metallurgy was used with tremendous success by man in the course of his further social development (the Bronze Age the Iron Age)

2 FALSE HYPOTHESES CONCERNING THE ORIGIN OF MODERN MAN AND THEIR CRITICISM

Many hypotheses concerning the origin of modern man have been proposed, but we shall first of all examine some of those that claim that the modern type of man has existed for all time Oswald Spengler (1933) declared that we know nothing of man having had any ancestors and that man has always been what he is today The Neanderthaler is to be seen at any public meeting, he maintains This assertion is obviously dictated by his hatred for the people and contradicts all the known scientific data on the skeleton of the Neanderthaler and that of modern man it is a weak attempt to prove that the modern type of man has existed throughout all time The views of such reactionaries as Spengler must be resolutely refuted

Equally unacceptable is the hypothesis propounded by Kasimir Stolyhwo (1937) who considers the Neanderthalers to have been one of the human races a variety of *Homo sapiens* and that they are the form typical for the Mousterian Epoch He also believes that the Neanderthal type is still to be found here and there among modern men

The more ancient hominids with their strongly expressed



Fig. 159. Drawings of animals made by ancient hunters on walls of Zaraut Sai Gorge, Surkhan Darya Region, Uzbekistan. Fresco by A. Kirillov and A. Roginskaya. Museum of Anthropology, Moscow State University

intermediate between the Palaeolithic and Neolithic, it has further been called Epipalaeolithic The bow was invented and the dog was domesticated in this period

The real Neolithic or New Stone Age, is distinguished by the appearance of polished and drilled stone tools the use of pottery, the building of pile dwellings and the taming and domestication of various animals First of all man tamed mammals the oldest of which as we said above was the dog, then came the pig the horse the cow and the sheep

All these varied and beneficial cultural achievements could only have made their appearance through the progressive development of human collectives the primitive communities The hunting of wild animals continued and they are depicted although in a more schematic form on cliffs and the walls of caves (fig 159)

The cave ceased to be the permanent habitation of man in the Neolithic Period In addition to pastoral pursuits the tilling of the ground was begun, a prominent part in the latter belonging to the women of the community The beginning of a new turning point in man s economy was the discovery of the useful properties of metals Metallurgy was used with tremendous success by man in the course of his further social development (the Bronze Age the Iron Age)

2 FALSE HYPOTHESES CONCERNING THE ORIGIN OF MODERN MAN AND THEIR CRITICISM

Many hypotheses concerning the origin of modern man have been proposed, but we shall first of all examine some of those that claim that the modern type of man has existed for all time Oswald Spengler (1933) declared that we know nothing of man having had any ancestors and that man has always been what he is today The Neanderthaler is to be seen at any public meeting he maintains This assertion is obviously dictated by his hatred for the people and contradicts all the known scientific data on the skeleton of the Neanderthaler and that of modern man it is a weak attempt to prove that the modern type of man has existed throughout all time The views of such reactionaries as Spengler must be resolutely refuted

Equally unacceptable is the hypothesis propounded by Kasimir Stolyhwo (1937) who considers the Neanderthalers to have been one of the human races, a variety of *Homo sapiens* and that they are the form typical for the Mousterian Epoch He also believes that the Neanderthal type is still to be found here and there among modern men

The more ancient hominids with their strongly expressed



Fig. 1[illegible]9. Drawings of animals made by ancient hunters on walls of Zaraut Sai Gorge, Surkhan Darya Region, Uzbekistan. Fresco by A. Kirillov and A. Roginskaya. Museum of Anthropology, Moscow State University

supraorbital ridge, low cranial vault and no chin are according to Stolyhwo plus varieties of preneanderthaloids and those with more regular relief and higher cranial vaults are minus varieties of postneanderthaloids He supposes the majority of the latter to be hybrids from Neanderthalers and modern men and those with the more massive skeleton to be the real descendants of the Neanderthalers None of Stolyhwo's conceptions however can refute the thesis of stadial development and the regular line of descent shown by the physical types of fossil hominids and the absence of Neanderthaloid groups among modern mankind For Stolyhwo's hypothesis it is necessary to approximate the modern Australians and the Neanderthalers this of course, is false since the Australians are obviously Neanthropic in their physical structure that is they are people of the modern type with supraorbital arches and no ridge they are not furthermore the result of crossing modern man and the Neanderthalers

Another objection to the theory that modern man descended from the Neanderthal type claim that modern man not only existed simultaneously with the later Neanderthalers (this could be accepted in certain cases) but that he existed much earlier at the same time as the earliest Neanderthalers and even the ape men Such great antiquity was attributed to the Eoanthropus or Dawn man well known in anthropological literature In 1911 it was announced by Charles Dawson, that at Piltdown some 70 km south of London the lower jaw and parts of the cranial vault of a very ancient man had been found Later Dawson reported the find of small fragments of a similar skull and a lower canine tooth near the place where the first was found

The lower jaw with its canine tooth projecting well beyond the other teeth was very simian in its appearance and was in complete disharmony with the skull bones Despite this British anthropologists announced that the cranial vault and the mandible belonged to the same skull of a fossil type of man The English anatomist and anthropologist Sir Arthur Keith made various reconstructions from the fragments

Soviet scientists were always very doubtful of the Piltdown find Its unauthentic character was exposed in 1954 It was shown that the mandible was that of a modern ape that had been treated with bichromate of potassium to give it a semblance of antiquity

An analysis of the Eoanthropus finds demonstrated the failure of an attempt made by bourgeois scientists to prove that modern man is more ancient than the Neanderthaler his predecessor

A fragment of a female skull found at Swanscombe on the River Thames (England) in 1935 has lately been linked up with the Eoanthropus skull The stone implements found near it show that the bones belong to the Acheulian Epoch

Judging by the fragment found the length of the skull must have been 185 mm and the width 144 mm the cranial capacity has been estimated at about 1 350 c c the cranial vault is low

Y Y Roginsky (1947) made a special study of the fragment and demonstrated quite convincingly that the occipital bone of the Swanscombe man shows specific Neanderthaloid features

The incorrect interpretation of the Oldoway skeleton is an instructive example of an attempt to attribute extreme antiquity to modern man The skeleton was discovered in 1913 by the German geologist Hans Reck to the west of the Kilimanjaro volcano in East Africa at a place called Oldoway

The skeleton was well preserved and was found at no very great depth below the surface The type was very reminiscent of the modern Massai an African people The teeth had been sawn down like those of some African tribes The skeleton was in a crouched position and seemed to have been securely tied before burial Ancient fossil fauna remains were found in the same stratum Hans Reck expressed the opinion that the Oldoway man had lived 250 000 years ago

In the opinion of other scholars the Oldoway skeleton was that of a modern African who had merely been buried in a stratum of earth containing fossil bones of ancient animals

An expedition equipped in 1932 to check up on the skeleton consisted of Hans Reck and two other scientists they discovered stone implements of great antiquity and the fossil remains of Tertiary mammals The extreme antiquity of the skeleton however was not confirmed and a study of soil adhering to the bones revealed that it contained a mixture of soil from the surface layers i e layers of lesser geological age C F Cooper and D M S Watson (1932) were of the opinion that this indicated the more recent nature of the burial Reck s unfounded attempt to attribute antiquity to the remains of a modern man was exposed

Thus the story of the discovery of an ancient representative of modern man in Africa proved to be false a legend that had been invented and supported by those scientists who wanted to prove that modern man is more ancient than the Neanderthal type and has existed for almost the entire Quaternary Period The course of evolution taken by the Upper Tertiary Primates and the Quaternary hominids as we have seen con

tradicts this viewpoint It was with good reason that many scientists did not believe the legend of the Oldoway man The legend was completely exposed at the World Congress of Archaeologists held in London in 1932

A discovery of a similar nature was that of a skull found in 1948 in the Fontechevade cave Department Charente (France) by archaeologist G Henri Martin Y Y Roginsky made a comparative study of the Fontechevade skull Neanderthal skulls, modern skulls and those of the transitional type His analysis showed that the skull previously believed to belong to a representative of the species *Homo sapiens* was one of the Neanderthal forms

A German scientist the biologist Otto Kleinschmidt well known for this idealist theory of biological circles also supports the erroneous idea that modern man has existed for all time According to his hypothesis every species develops as an independent agglomeration of varieties and other tiny subspecies and it is not in any way related with other circles of forms The question of the ancestors of the particular circle of forms under discussion is of no great interest to Kleinschmidt

Kleinschmidt needed such postulates to remove the ground from under Darwin s materialist theory of natural selection combined with the formative influence of the environment in the course of the evolution of the organic world Using such negations as a basis Kleinschmidt makes a sharp demarcation of the human circle and absolutely refutes man s relationship to the anthropoid apes He maintains that all the fossil hominid forms, beginning with the Pithecanthropus belong to the circle of reasoning beings This links up Kleinschmidt with Spengler and other reactionary scientists

The pseudo scientific theory of the existence of the species *Homo sapiens* from the beginning of time is actually a denial of evolution and is closely related to religion It is a veiled attempt to give a quasi scientific interpretation of the Biblical myth concerning the miraculous creation of Adam and Eve

Another group of fallacious hypotheses gives a purely biological explanation to the making of man which they allege is independent of social influences These are nothing but metaphysical conceptions of man as a biped mammal

One such group of hypotheses lays special stress on the endocrine system and tendentiously exaggerates the significance of man s lengthy process of individual development The delay is analysed as an important feature of foetalization typical of many vertebrate and invertebrate animals Idealist scientists interpret foetalization in the transition from Neanderthal man to the modern type by analogy with that of the animals

Dudley Buxton and G R de Beer (1932), for example pro ceed from the fact that Palestine Neanderthal child s skull Skhul I more greatly resembled that of an adult modern man than the skull of a modern child does that of an adult Palestine man They assume that the skull of modern man took shape from one similar to that of the Palestine child as a result of an evo lutionary process retarding forms at an early stage in individual development i e, a process of pedomorphosis one that is al most the equivalent of foetalization

We cannot accept this viewpoint since it is quite impossible to reduce the lengthy historical making of man to purely bio logical categories The very great enlargement of the brain for example is to a considerable degree due to man s social devel opment This, in turn led to a considerable enlargement of the cranium which has given the human skull outward similarity to an infant skull be it a modern or a Palestine Neanderthal infant

The view expressed by Buxton and de Beer is closely related to the conceptions of Louis Bolk a Dutch anatomist and found er of the theory of foetalization or retardation in its applica tion to the origin of man He considers that there are many features in the physical structure of an adult that are due to the process of delay or retardation of a number of organs among them some of the most important

In addition to the above mentioned resemblance of the skull in the large size of the cranium as compared with the facial division Bolk includes such infantile features as certain pecu liarities of the body hair The real causes of such an influence of the external resemblance are not revealed by Bolk who con fines himself to a very unsatisfactory indication of the excep tional role played by the incretory glands in the onto and phylogenic development of man

Man like other mammals possesses glands that discharge their secretions externally such as perspiratory sebaceous and mammary glands but there are others that discharge their secretion or hormones into the blood stream These latter include the epiphysis, hypophysis thyroid parathyroid the suprarenal and sex glands

The hormones secreted by the cells of any of the endocrine glands penetrate the walls of the tiny capillary blood and lym phatic vessels contained in large numbers in the gland The hor mones enter the blood stream and thus reach the most distant parts of the organism and have a considerable effect on its development especially on the nervous system

There can be no doubt that the degree of development of the human body and its various organs to a great extent depends

on the normal functioning of the endocrine glands They must have played a definite role in evolution, although the role was most likely a limited one Bolk exaggerates the importance of the glands In this he agrees with Keith (1926) who attributes acromegalic features to the gorilla type of physical structure and resorts to an assumption unfounded in fact that these peculiarities are to be explained by the intensified activity of the gorilla's hypophysis

Human hypophysis diseases cause acromegaly an enlargement of the tissues of the face fingers and toes It has been shown that the gorilla hypophysis is not bigger but smaller than that of a human being And so Keith could find nothing else to add to his hypothesis than the statement that although the gorilla hypophysis is small it must have a secretion that is more active This is contradicted by the fact that the hypophysis of a man suffering from acromegaly increases considerably in size which is contrary to the explanation (given by Keith and Bolk) of the *peculiarities of the human type as being primarily due to the* incretory system and its functions

In explaining the phylogenic process by means of foetalization Bolk also proceeds from the unfounded assumption that changes in the endocrine system *result from the action of some* special principle of directive evolution ascribed to the organic world

Bolk s hypothesis is closely linked up with orthogenesis an idealist trend in biology that opposes Darwinism The explanation of man's evolution exclusively by the peculiarities of endocrine gland development can under no circumstances be deemed satisfactory The idea is too narrow and one sided and its incorrect nature is all too obvious (Y Y Roginsky 1933)

The evolution of any vertebrate animal and not of man alone cannot be explained as being determined by any one system of organs The theory of foetalization as applied to man is furthermore, an attempt to "biologize' his specific evolutionary path The course of man s ontogenetic development moreover itself underwent some changes, due, in particular to the intensified development of the brain, the emergence of new physical proportions and the formation of other peculiarities that evolved through the influence of labour and other factors in the making of man

The external features of similarity with the infant stage of development that is, some foetalization features, emerged as a result of man s special evolutionary path when the head, in connection with erect locomotion was relieved of superfluous muscles and bony ridges Highly developed erect locomotion

typical of modern man was itself the result of the lengthy in fluence of labour

The human brain is not retarded at the infant stage and in the adult, is not an enlarged infant brain On the contrary, its long period of growth in size and complication is an exception to the general law of early cerebralization that is a typical fea ture of other mammals whose brains complete their growth at an early age on account of their early maturation We cannot speak of the foetal nature of the adult brain merely on the basis of its size and shape

It was because man s immediate simian ancestors possessed a brain that was already at a high stage of development that the formation of a human brain of great intricacy was at all possible The anatomically and physiologically complicated human brain however owes its existence to a still greater degree to man s social life with its labour processes and articulate speech to this must also be added the influence of a meat diet (F En gels) As social relations that arose in the course of primitive man's formation grew more and more complicated those indi viduals who possessed the most highly developed brains stood the greatest chance of surviving But Bolk considers man to be something in the nature of a neotenic larva of the Amer ican amphibian Amblystoma which it will be remembered breeds in the larval stage when it is called the axolotl Bolk s interpretation of anthropogenesis is tantamount to wiping out the entire history of man s making (M A Gremyatsky 1939)

From this it follows that the explanation of the similarity be tween the skulls of the Palestine child and the modern adult given by Buxton and de Beer is also unacceptable Y Y Rogin sky (1933) in his refutation of Bolk s hypothesis, shows that in the period of embryonic development not only delay but also acceleration of organic development is typical of man, but such conceptions as delay and acceleration are insufficient to charac terize the mechanism of the processes taking place during man s formation and that disregard of all connection between the structure of the body and the environment is something that cannot be accepted The foetalization theory completely alie nates form from function Y Y Roginsky justly points out that the theory of human evolution without an ancestor without a habitat, without erect locomotion and without tools to work with cannot be regarded as being in any way satisfactory

Bolk's views on anthropogenesis constitute if one may so ex press it *biologization from within* '

There are other scientists whose efforts to explain the origin of man *amount to biologization from without* i e they ex plain man as a purely biological being whose long period of

historical development is primarily due to the way in which his natural environment was transformed and not to his social and economic development

These views, which we term conditionally the geographical conception of anthropogenesis are widespread among anthro pologists and other scientists abroad The class content of such hypotheses is quite clear there is a deliberate mixture of nat ural and social factors and mankind is equated with an ant hill or beehive or with some colony of gregarious animals such as the weaver birds that live in large numbers in huge com munal nests, or beavers with their dams and houses

There is no doubt that geographical conditions have an influence on the development of culture labour techniques society and on the physical type of man himself But the ques tion is—how extensive and how profound is this influence how is it effected and has it been equally strong at all stages of man's making? Could natural conditions have effected the ape men in the same way as they do modern man? How can one minimize the significance of social surroundings that are second nature specifically for man and outside of which he cannot continue to exist?

Primitive human society developed on the basis of the pro duction of tools which, to a certain degree may be regarded as artificial organs The making of man was conditioned on the one hand by external influences and on the other hand to an incomparably greater extent, by the typical course of society itself, i e, in the first place by the progressive development of labour processes and the production relations that grew up in the primitive community as a result of that development

The process of social development became automatic on ac count of the internal contradictions that were constantly aris ing and being solved due to the incessantly changing relations between the primitive community and nature The hunting of the bigger mammals for example could only have become possible at a certain stage of technical develop ment It was a step forward compared with the preceding stage of development when the difference between men and women in acquiring the means of existence had been much less significant The new methods of obtaining food by hunting big game were mostly applied by the men while formerly the catching of small animals and the gathering of roots and ber ries for food were mostly women s occupations The hunting of medium sized and big animals gave experience and inven tiveness a special significance, since the slightest lack of caution would not only allow the animal to escape but might lead to

the death of the hunters by their being gored by an elephant's tusks or by being crushed under its feet

While giving the geographical and other natural conditions their proper place it must always be remembered that they exercised their influence on primitive man through the social medium which may have been weak but was nevertheless qualitatively different from any other medium Those scientists are sadly mistaken who like Hans Weinert believe that the stern conditions of the Quaternary Period with the changes of climate brought about by the ice age were the chief reason for man's high level of development through his cognition of the beneficial effects of fire and clothing

The ice age made man said Hans Weinert (1935) This is an example of the wrong way of presenting the question since it mechanically reduces the factors of human evolution to the influence of external media (A N Yuzefovich, 1937)

Actually Weinert is merely repeating the old views expressed by the evolutionist Moritz Wagner Wagner believed that man's descent from the anthropoids was due to the influence of the ice age (although we must point out that in 1871 this scientist indicated the important role of the artificial fabrication of tools in the process of anthropogenesis)

Weinert regards the use of fire as the integral element in man's make up that must be given first place Although fire is typical of primitive man (even for the Sinanthropus) it was not only the primitive people living in cold climates that were acquainted with it but also those who had their habitat in warm countries where in many places it is damp at night and where it is often cold in the rainy season There is no reason to believe that primitive man discovered fire only as a result of the ice age Nor can one deny the fact that the conditions engendered by the ice age were a strong stimulus to the development of man in those regions where he felt its influence Some human groups may have proved unable to withstand the cold and have perished

G V Plekhanov (1856 1918) also attributed too great a role to geographical conditions He believed that it was only the conditions of the geographical environment that enabled our anthropomorphous ancestors to reach that high level of intellectual development that was necessary for them to become tool making animals

We may judge the extent to which Plekhanov overestimated the importance of geographical conditions from the fact that he considered that this environment first and foremost conditioned the development of the productive forces on which the further development of economic and all other social relations

depend He maintained that the development of social and economic relations is, in the final analysis, determined by the nature of the geographical environment

This is a case of the overestimation of the significance of geographical conditions a mechanical reduction of the process of anthropogenesis and the adaptation of man's ancestors to the effect of purely external conditions In other words, the attribution of primary importance to geographical factors minimizes the role of social influences

Marx, in *The German Ideology* poses the question correctly "The first requisite for all human history is, naturally, the existence of living human individuals The first fact to be established therefore is the physical organization of these individuals and the relations with all other natural forces that it conditions It goes without saying that we cannot here deal with the physical qualities of man himself nor with the natural conditions geological, oro hydrographic climatic and other natural conditions as man found them All history must proceed from these natural fundamentals and modifications due to the activity of man in the course of history"*

In this statement Marx gives primary importance to those activities of man that brought about changes in natural conditions and in the physical peculiarities of man himself The same geographical conditions play an entirely different part at different levels of the productivity of economic forces the oceans formerly separated peoples and hindered their development but with the progress of navigation they began to unite mankind and facilitate social and economic advancement

The significance of geographical conditions in human evolution, therefore, must not be exaggerated they must be given their proper, subordinate place in the analysis of the motive forces of anthropogenesis The external influence of natural conditions must be combined with the developmental factors of society itself

The rapid progress made by mankind in the last few millennia and in the present historical epoch is positive confirmation of the fact that society can go through a number of radical changes while the external environment and the human physique itself remain almost unchanged In any case the changes are infinitely small when compared to the transformations that have taken place through social development

Comparatively small changes in the structure of the primitive community at the earliest stages of its development on the

---

* K Marx and F Engels *The German Ideology* Moscow 1964 p 31

contrary brought about far more significant changes in the human organism since completely new conditions of social labour had a direct determining influence on the way in which the human body was reconstructed the human organism was still to a large extent simian and far from sufficiently well adapted to labour processes that, in their turn were constantly acquiring new forms

Without going into the details of other bourgeois conceptions of the making of man we must say that if even the materialist minded naturalists of the Darwin school could not see the decisive role of labour on account of thousands of years of idealist philosophy, it is no wonder that the works of a large number of biologists and anthropologists in the West who do not belong to the Darwin school are saturated with idealism Furthermore we must stress the point that all such conceptions of anthropogenesis inevitably lead to racist views on mankind and the races of mankind

The beginnings of labour activity among highly developed anthropoids such as man s Upper Tertiary simian ancestors is quite conceivable even if their mode of locomotion was still half quadruped We know, for example that the little Javanese monkeys the crab eaters, use stones to break open the crabs and shellfish they use for food They come down from the trees and on the seashore or river banks pick up small stones to use as tools and then throw them away Such actions resemble an embryonic form of labour A report from Liberia tells of a male chimpanzee who brought the branch of an oil palm to a cliff side and there broke open the nuts with a stone

One can easily imagine anthropoid apes of the Australopithecoid type or pre hominids, who were compelled to seek food in the open plains or savannahs adopting various methods of obtaining food including the use of stones in the way the Javanese monkeys do Since the brain of the anthropoid is much more highly developed these prehuman forms of labour could easily have developed further provided the necessary conditions obtained

The transition to erect locomotion as Engels pointed out was a decisive step in humanising the ape Without erect locomotion only beings of the ape man type could have developed and they could never have reached a higher stage One of the most important tasks confronting truly progressive anthropologists therefore is the profound study of the process of development of erect locomotion the speech apparatus and the brain in man s ancestors i e of men in the making and of modern man

The population of the world today is approximately 3,300,000 000 people In the primary and secondary features of their external aspect and internal structure they all very closely resemble each other For this reason the majority of scientists, from the biological standpoint, place all mankind in one species, *Homo sapiens*

Mankind, now occupying almost all the dry land (fig 160) even Antarctica is not homogeneous but consists of groups that have long since been given the name of races a term that has become fixed in anthropology (Nesturl h 1966)

A race of mankind is a biological group of people analogous but not homologous to a subspecies group in zoological classi fication Each of the races has a common origin and emerged on a definite territory its original habitat Each race is charac terised by a certain set of physical peculiarities mostly the out ward appearance morphology and anatomy of its members

The chief racial distinguishing features are the nature of the hair on the head the nature and development of facial hair (beard, moustache) and body hair the colour of the hair and skin and the iris of the eye the shape of the eyelids nose and lips the shape of the head and face and the length of the body or height of the individual

The races of mankind are the subject of special anthropo logical study In the opinion of many anthropologists mankind today consists of three great races each of which is divided into a number of smaller races These latter are again subdivided into groups of similar anthropological types which constitute the basic unit in anthropological systematics (Cheboksarov 1951)

Within any of the races of mankind individuals are to be found that are more typical and those that are less typical There are also races that are more characteristic more strongly expressed as well as those that differ little from other races Some of the races are of an intermediate character

The Negroid Australoid (black) great race as a whole is char acterized by a definite complex of features that are most strongly expressed in the Negroes of the Sudan and which distin guish them from the other two great races the Europeoid and Mongoloid (fig 161) Among the racial features of the Negroid race are black hair in tightly coiled spirals or wavy chocolate brown or even almost black (but at times yellow brown) skin brown eyes a somewhat flattened nose that does not protrude has a low bridge and wide nostrils (some types have straight



Fig 160 Distribution of

narrower noses), the majority have thick lips very many have long heads the chin is moderately developed the parts of the maxillary and mandible holding the teeth tend to protrude (mandibular prognathism)

On account of the geographical distribution of the Negroid Australoid race it is sometimes called Equatorial or Afro Australasian The race is divided naturally into small races 1) the western, or African, also called the Negroid race and 2) the eastern Oceanic, or Australoid race

Another complex of features is typical of representatives of the big Europe Asian, or Europeoid (white) race They are pinkish skin due to the blood vessels showing through it some have fair skin others have a darker tone of skin many have blond hair and light eyes the hair is wavy or straight and has



races of mankind

medium or strong development on the face and body the lips are of medium thickness the nose is thin and projects sharply from the facial region, the bridge of the nose is high the folds of the eyelids are poorly developed, the jaws and upper part of the face do not project greatly and there is a medium or strongly projecting chin as a rule the face is not very broad

Within the Europeoid great race (white) three smaller races are defined by the colouring of the hair and eyes the clearly expressed northern (blond) and southern (brunette) and the less clearly expressed middle European with intermediate colouring A considerable part of the Russians belongs to the White Sea Baltic type group of the northern minor race Typical for the Russians are light brown or blond hair blue or grey eyes and

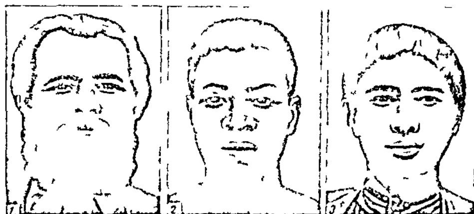


Fig 161 Representatives of races of mankind
1—Europeoid 2—Negroid 3—Mongoloid Archives of Institute of Anthopology Moscow State University

very fair skin Furthermore the nose is frequently retrousse and the bridge is not so high and is of a different shape from that of the north western Europeoid type the Atlanto Baltic group representatives of which are found mostly in the North European countries The White Sea Baltic group has many features in common with the latter group and together they form the North European little race

The brunette group of the southern Europeoids is made up of most of the inhabitants of Spain France Italy Switzerland South Germany and the Balkan countries

The Mongoloid or Asio American great race (yellow), has a complex of features that distinguish them from the Negroid Aus traloid and Europeoid races the majority of the representa tives of the race have dark or yellowish skin the eyes are dark brown the hair on the head is black straight and stiff as a rule the beard and moustache do not grow there is very little hair on the body, typical of Mongoloids is the peculiar arrange ment of the epicanthus or fold in the eyelid, which covers the inner angle or canthus, of the eye giving it an appearance of slant the face is rather flat the cheek bones are placed widely apart the chin and the jaw do not greatly protrude the nose is generally straight but the bridge is low the lips have medium thickness the majority are of less than average height

The full complex of these features is met with most frequently among the northern Chinese who are typical Mongoloids but are taller Other Mongoloid groups have thicker or thinner lips hair that is not so stiff and they are less than average

height The Red Indians of America occupy a special place for they have many features that approximate them to the great Europeoid race

The human race also contains groups of mixed origin One of these is the Lapland Urals group to which belong the Lapps with their yellowish skin and soft dark hair The physical peculiarities of these inhabitants of the extreme north of Europe combine features of the Europeoid and Mongoloid races

There are also groups possessing great similarity with two other clearly distinctive races this similarity is not so much due to crossing as to ancient relationship An example is the Ethiopian group of types that combine features of the Negroid and Europeoid races it has the character of an intermediate race The Ethiopian is apparently a very ancient group The combination of two great races in this group is clear evidence of the fact that in the very distant past these two great races were one single unit Many of the inhabitants of Abyssinia belong to the Ethiopian group

In general, the human race is divided into some twenty five to thirty groups of types Nevertheless the human race is a single unit since there are intermediate (transitional) or mixed groups of anthropological types between the great races

The majority of the races of mankind and the groups of types each occupy a definite common territory on which that section of mankind emerged and developed historically

There have been many cases when some part of a certain race, on account of the historical conditions obtaining, has migrated to neighbouring or even to distant countries In some cases races have completely lost contact with their original habitat or a considerable part of them has been annihilated

As we have seen approximately the same combination of inherited physical peculiarities in their outward appearance is characteristic for most representatives of any one race It has been established, however that racial features undergo change both in the course of individual development and in the course of evolution

Representatives of any one of the human races have on account of their common origin greater resemblance to each other than to representatives of other races

There is great individuality among the members of a racial group and the boundaries between the different races are not usually clearly defined In this way one race is connected with another by a series of unnoticeable transitions In a number of cases it is difficult to determine the racial composition of the population of some country or of a whole group of populations

The determination of racial characteristics and their individual variations is made with the aid of special instruments and by methods elaborated by anthropologists As a rule hundreds and even thousands of representatives of the racial group being studied are measured and examined This method provides a quite accurate picture of the racial composition of any people the degree of purity or mixture of racial types but does not allow for some individuals to be ascribed to a definite race This is on account of racial characteristics being weakly expressed in the given individual or because the individual is the result of some crossing

In a number of cases racial characteristics undergo variations even in the course of one lifetime Sometimes racial subdivisions change their specific features within a short period Within the last few hundred years for example many human groups have changed the shape of their heads Franz Boas, a prominent progressive American anthropologist has established the fact that the shape of the skull changes inside racial groups in a much shorter period of time for example, when they migrate from one part of the world to another as was the case with immigrants into America from Europe

Individual and general types of racial change are intimately connected and lead to a continual even if scarcely noticeable modification of the racial groups of mankind Although the hereditary composition of the races is fairly stable, it is subjected to incessant change

So far we have spoken more of racial differences than of similarities between races Let us however remind the reader that the differences between races are only clearly marked when comparison of the whole complex of them is made If each of the racial features be examined separately we find that very few of them can serve as more or less reliable evidence that the individual belongs to a definite race In this respect perhaps the most outstanding racial feature is the tight spiral curls of black hair common among typical Negroes

In very many cases it is absolutely impossible to say to which race an individual belongs A fairly aquiline nose with a bridge of medium height and nostrils of medium width is to be found in some groups of all three great races the same applies to many other racial features This does not in any way depend on whether or not the individual in question results from a marriage between representatives of two races

The fact that racial characteristics intertwine is one of the proofs that the races have a common origin and are related by blood to each other

Racial differences are usually secondary or even tertiary features of man s physical structure Some of the racial features the colour of the skin for example are due to the ancient adaptation of the human organism to its environment These features evolved in the course of mankind s historical development but they have now to a great extent lost their biological significance In this *respect the races of mankind in no way resemble* the subspecies of the animal kingdom

Racial differences in wild animals emerge and develop as their organisms adapt themselves to the natural environment in the course of natural selection in the struggle between mutation and heredity The subspecies of wild animals in the course of lengthy or rapid biological evolution can and do develop into species Subspecies peculiarities are a vital necessity to wild animals as they bear the character of adaptation

Breeds of domestic animals are created by means of artificial selection the most useful or the most beautiful individuals are chosen to found the herd The development of new breeds on the basis of I V Michurin s theory is often carried out in a very short time in the course of a few generations especially when it is combined with correct feeding

Artificial selection played no part at all in the formation of the modern races of mankind natural selection was only of secondary importance and has long since ceased to be even that It is obvious that the origin and development of the races of mankind differ very greatly from the ways in which breeds of domestic animals have been evolved to say nothing of cultivated plants

The basis for a scientific conception of the origin of the races of mankind from a biological standpoint was first laid down by Charles Darwin He made a special study of the races of mankind and established the very great similarity of many basic features and their close blood relationship This said Darwin was evidence that they all branched off from the same common trunk and did not have different ancestors The further development of science has fully confirmed this view which is the basis of monogenesis The theory that mankind descended from a number of different apes i e polygenesis is therefore unfounded, so that racism loses one of its main bulwarks (Y Y Roginsky M G Levin 1955 1963)

What are the specific *Homo sapiens* features that are common to all races of mankind without any exception? The fundamental primary features are a big well developed brain with a large number of convolutions and furrows on the surface of its hemispheres and the human hand which according to

Engels is both the instrument and the product of labour Typical also is the human foot with its longitudinal arch that is capable of supporting the body when standing or walking

Other important features distinguishing modern man are a vertebral column with four curvatures of which the most specific is the lumbar curvature that developed as a result of erect locomotion, a skull with a rather smooth exterior a highly developed cranium or brain case and a weakly developed facial skeleton with high frontal and parietal regions of the cranium strongly developed gluteal muscles and also strong femoral and tibial muscles poorly developed body hair and the complete absence of vibrissae or bunches of feelers in the brows moustache and beard

All the present races of mankind possess the above features and stand at the same high level of physical organization Although all these species peculiarities are not developed equally in all races, although some are more vigorously and others more weakly developed there are no very great differences all the races possess all the features of modern man and not one of them can be described as Neanderthaloid There is no one race of mankind that is biologically superior to any other race

Nevertheless bourgeois reactionary scientists and publicists continue to preach the biological inequality of the races of mankind In most cases they maintain that the brains of some races which they term the lower races are more ape like than those of the other ' higher races This is absolutely false Studies made by Soviet anthropologists show that there is no significant difference in the brain structure of representatives of the various races (Y G Shevchenko, 1956) The racist theories are also contradicted by the fact that all the races of mankind are equally well adapted to erect locomotion and to labour activity In view of the existence of such features of similarity between the races there is absolutely no basis for the assertion that any of the races is closer to the ape than the others (M F Nesturkh 1958 1965)

The modern races of mankind have lost the many simian features that the Neanderthalers still possessed and have acquired the features of *Homo sapiens* None of the modern races therefore can be regarded as more simian or more primitive than the others

Those who support the false theory of higher and lower races maintain that Negroid races are more simian than Europeoid From the scientific point of view this is quite untrue Negroes have tightly curled hair thick lips the forehead is straight or bulging there is no tertiary hair on the face or body and the

legs are very long relative to the trunk These are all features that show that the Negro is farther removed from the chimpanzee than the European is But the European, in his turn differs very greatly from the apes on account of his light skin and other features Darwin s theory of the descent of man from one species of ancient anthropoid ape and Engels theory of the transition from ape to man under the influence of social labour help us get a clearer understanding of the question of the races of mankind Scientific data permit of only one correct conclusion that *all* modern human races are derived from one single stem under the combined influence of biological and social laws

Throughout the million years or so that have elapsed since the beginning of the Quaternary Period during its glacial and interglacial epochs and up to the postglacial present epoch primitive man spread further and further over the world The development of groups of men often took place in different isolated regions where they developed under the influence of local natural conditions Here we must make mention of the role of natural and sexual selection in the making of primitive man The most ancient men became Neanderthalers and these then became Cro Magnon people Races were not only constantly arising, but were also constantly being levelled out While *differing from each other on account of differences in the geo*graphical conditions in which they lived the races under the influence of labour the development of culture and other special factors grew more and more to resemble each other in the general features of the modern type of man On account of their qualitatively different path of development the races of mankind began to differ qualitatively more and more greatly from the subspecies of the animal kingdom

The study of the bone remains of Old World Neanderthalers and fossil men of the modern type has led some scientists to believe that about 100 000 years ago there were signs of two great racial divisions within primitive man (Y Y Roginsky 1941, 1956)

One of the big primitive racial groups took shape in the north eastern half of Asia to the north and east of the Himalayas This was the proto Asian or proto Mongoloid great race from which emerged several Mongoloid minor races and anthropological groups

The Mongoloid racial group that much later 25 000 30 000 years ago crossed what was then an isthmus and the Aleutian Islands into America also branched off from the proto Mongoloid great race This group spread further and further south

wards and in the course of time developed into the Red Indian or American minor race that scientists usually divide into several groups of anthropological types

Another great branch of the human race was the south western it split into two primary great racial groups—the Eurasian or Europeoid and the Equatorial or Negroid Australoid

One of the most significant distinguishing features marking these two great south western races is the colour of their skin that became fixed in the process of their development in different directions At the present moment the skin is darker among representatives of the Negro Australoid race and of those Europeoid races that live in the hotter countries of the south The Europeoid groups that live in the more northerly countries have gradually acquired a lighter skin It is believed that first the skin grew fairer and was followed by the eyes and finally the hair

The isolation factor played an important part in the development of races of primitive man As they spread over the Earth small groups that were physically similar found themselves in regions with completely different natural conditions When they settled in their districts for a long time they were unable to make contact with other groups and it is perfectly natural that in thousands and tens of thousands of years of isolated existence, under the influence of local natural and social conditions the anatomical and physiological peculiarities of the groups should have developed in different directions Under these circumstances even slight changes in physical structure that all went in the same direction accumulated from generation to generation and were consolidated The various groups began to differ more sharply from each other mainly in a number of external features that acquired no small significance as the distinguishing features of tribal relationship

Even in modern mankind the process of race formation under the influence of natural isolation is still to be seen in some parts of the world This apparently accounts for the formation of anthropological types and groups on the frontiers of the areas settled by man on the outskirts of the Greek *oecumene*, whose complex of racial features clearly distinguishes them from all others Among racial groups of this type, for example are the North European Lapps the Eskimos (Innuits) of the extreme north of Asia and America the people of Tierra del Fuego in the extreme south of South America the Australian aborigines the Papuans of New Guinea the Bushmen of the Kalahari and Namib desert and the Negrillo Pygmies in the dense tropical jungles



Fig. 162. Crossing of races of mankind.
1—Europeoid-Negroid; 2—Europeoid-Mongoloid; 3—Negroid-Mongoloid. After E. Fischer, 1913 (1) and from Archives of Institute of Anthropology, Moscow State University (2, 3)

In the most distant times, however, there was a progressive development of human society, even if it was still a very slow one; productive forces grew, the groups of human beings became stronger numerically, and some races began to make more frequent contacts with others. Human groups now began to mix more freely, and crossing instead of isolation became the deciding factor in the appearance of new races. But the influence of this factor has more frequently led and is still leading to the formation of racially mixed groups.

The beginning of the process of racial crossing coincided with the final stage of basic processes of the making of man, i.e., with the appearance of men of the modern type. The high degree to which the human body had become adapted to labour activity facilitated the emergence of a single physical type of modern man and the levelling of racial differences.

In the course of time the various races have undergone a considerable degree of intermingling (fig. 162). This process of racial crossing has been especially intensive during the past 10 000-15 000 years. From the time Christopher Columbus discovered America in 1492 the crossing of racial types has assumed tremendous proportions, so that "pure" races are not to be found anywhere. All mankind is to a greater or lesser degree of mixed race; there are tens of millions of people in the world today that cannot be ascribed with certainty to any one of the great races.

The greater blood relationship between people as a result of their crossing has greatly reduced the physical differences be-

tween them The crossing of races has undoubtedly played a positive role in the development of mankind and has helped unite men into a single biological entity that is qualitatively very different from that species of higher anthropoid that served as the ancestor of the earliest man

That which we have said confirms the thesis propounded by Marx and Engels that racial differences must and will be eliminated in the course of man s historical development

All the human races cross easily and produce fertile, normal and healthy progeny In a number of cases generations of mixed race have resulted in improved physical qualities and greater beauty The proposition fundamental to Soviet anthropology i e that all the modern races of mankind are biologically equal is greatly strengthened by these facts (Roginsky, 1948, Efroim son 1964)

The science of the origin and development of the races of mankind completely undermines the false misanthropic theo ries of the existence of higher and lower races Anthropology is a genuine materialist science that upsets the inventions of the racists concerning the existence of some chosen Aryan race or a hundred per cent pure American white race whose vocation is to subordinate all other peoples and races to itself and to rule over them by reason of its physical and spiritual 'superior ity that is supposed to derive from inherent genetic qualities

In recent years Soviet biologists have been paying greater attention to the study of the heredity factor The laws of heredity, discovered by Gregor Mendel are being widely applied in attempts to reveal the real nature of the factor Biologists use delicate methods to study genes (units of heredity) and the mechanism by which features are transmitted from generation to generation At the same time Soviet biologists are seeking ever new ways of influencing the mutation of organisms in the desired direction

4 SCIENCE AGAINST RACISM

The founders of Marxism Leninism who elaborated a genuine ly scientific concept of social development showed convincing ly that racial divisions do not and cannot play anything like an important role in the development of mankind

Marx and Engels established the fact that the history of human society beginning from the slave owning societies is essentially the history of the class struggle The pseudo scien tists the ideologists of imperialism strive to prove that the strug gle between races and not between classes is basic in human history

When reactionary scientists substitute the struggle between races for the class struggle as the chief motive force in history they are consciously falsifying history

The legend of higher and lower races is no new one Even in times of antiquity a people that had gained victory in war would often declare itself the higher race and the people that had been defeated a lower race as an excuse to exploit or annihilate the latter

The false idea of racial superiority born of the exploitation of people began to take on a pseudo scientific form in the eighteenth century As early as 1786 in Germany the idea of racism was preached at Göttingen University by Professor Christopher Meiners who placed the white race higher than the coloured races and the Celtic race higher than the Slavs

In the nineteenth century the racists were strongly supported by the writings of such pillars of racism as Gobineau Lapouge, Ammon and Woltmann whose pseudo scientific works frequently of many volumes attempted to give a basis to the theory of higher and lower races

The supporters of the racist theory preach such reactionary ideas as the primary division of mankind into higher and lower racial groups the ancient inborn aristocratic nature of the ruling classes the necessity for maintaining the purity of the higher race the need for the propagation and perfection of the higher race the planned mass destruction (genocide) of the lower race The racists make extensive use of the Malthusian idea of overpopulation

Real knowledge defeats the inventions of the racists The very concepts of racism are far removed from science It has been firmly established that there are fundamental similarities in the inborn anatomical and physiological peculiarities of all human races One of the best proofs of this is Darwin s study of the people of Tierra del Fuego

When Darwin first saw these Indians they created a great impression on him by their outward appearance and he described them as people whose cultural level was very close to that of the ancestors of modern man After a closer study however he was amazed at their great resemblance to Englishmen in the basic lines of their behaviour and the character of their mental abilities

Darwin drew the conclusion that the Indians Negroes and representatives of other races had fundamental similarity with the Europeans in the basic features of their psyche their inclinations and habits He based his conclusions on the fact that judging by the shape of stone arrow heads gathered from various countries and belonging to various epochs of human

prehistory, methods of fabricating them were amazingly similar N N Miklukho Maklai, who was very closely acquainted with the Papuans and other peoples of Oceania, stressed the point that the cardinal features of their psyche were basically the same as those of Europeans (N N Miklukho Maklai, 1950 1954)

In view of these real scientific data the assertion made by the racists that anyone race the Aryan, for instance is psychologically superior to all others is absolutely without foundation

The level of a people s culture has nothing to do with racial composition It depends on the sum total of social and natural conditions of the historical development of peoples and states and their alliances

Scientifically established facts and everyday experience contradict the racist contention that the culture of the European peoples and their languages are born of the Aryan racial spirit It is well known that the division of peoples by languages does not coincide with their division into races Languages and races develop independently of each other

The falseness of the racist theory that there is a connection between race and language is amply proved by material taken from the lives of the peoples of the U S S R There are many nations and tribes in our country speaking Turkic languages Some of them are Europeoid racial types (Azerbaijanians) *others are Mongoloid (Kazakhs Kirghiz and Yakuts) while the* third are a mixture of Europeoid and Mongoloid (Shortzy Bashkirs Tatars)

It is also true that the concepts race and nation are quite different Everybody knows that the English nation contains representatives of various Europeoid races The German nation contains representatives of at least five racial groups The population of the U S A is a conglomeration of the most varied racial types represented by immigrants from Europe Africa and Asia Such facts are due to the terms race and nation representing completely different categories whose coincidence is an exception and not a rule

It is therefore incorrect to speak of the English German French or Slavic races in the way the racists frequently do Still more incorrect is it to speak of an Aryan race since the term Aryan is taken from the sphere of linguistics and signifies a special group of languages The races have their own names and they must not be confused with the names of languages

The racists in interpreting history as a struggle between races often speak of a yellow or black peril for the Europeans It is not however, any specific race that is likely to be an agres

sor, but only an imperialist state or group of states Lenin, in his time, gave a very instructive rebuff to those who mix these different concepts

At the turn of the century the Chinese people raised the famous I he chuan ("Boxer") rebellion against foreign capitalists and the columns of the bourgeois press were filled with articles about the yellow peril to European culture and civilisation about the savage yellow race and about the hatred of the yellow for the white race In his analysis of the Chinese popular uprising and its suppression by foreign troops Lenin exposed the class nature of the artificially created enmity between peoples

"Yes!" wrote Lenin "It is true the Chinese hate the Europeans but which Europeans do they hate and why? The Chinese do not hate the European peoples they have never had any quarrel with them—they hate the European capitalists and the European governments obedient to them *

The two world wars that have occurred during the first half of the twentieth century resulted from attempts made by German imperialism to seize new colonies and conquer the territories of neighbouring states One of the specific features of German imperialism was its racial policy its misanthropic ideology

Fascist Germany declared the North European race the 'Aryan race' in the terminology of the nazi ideologists to be the higher race although in Germany it is represented by a very small group Among the populations of the surrounding countries there are just as many if not more people with fair hair and eyes as there are in Germany The declaration that the Aryans' are a higher race has no foundation in genuine science and is of a political extremely reactionary character (M S Plisetsky 1955 M F Nesturkh 1942 1965 Y Y Roginsky, M G Levin 1963)

Under the banner of pseudo scientific racism the nazis preached their ultra imperialist plans for the subjugation of mankind and fostered dreams of conquering the whole world *Racism was the screen with which the nazis covered their imperialist policy* it served as the ideological basis for their programme of exploitation and annihilation of non German peoples

The equality of races and nations is one of the most important elements of the moral strength and might of the Soviet Union Soviet anthropology provides scientific data on the racial

---

* Lenin The War in China See *Collected Works* Vol 4 p 373

composition and history of the origin of the peoples of the different countries It develops the one correct concept that all the races of mankind are biologically equal The genuinely materialist conception of the origin of man and of races serves the struggle against racism, against all idealist, mystic conceptions of man his past present and future

APPENDIX

Progressive scientists of many countries anthropologists included, are displaying similar views on questions of races and racism Deserving of attention in this respect are the Proposals on the Biological Aspects of Race adopted at an expert meeting on the subject organised by the United Nations Educational Scientific and Cultural Organisation The meeting was held in Moscow from August 12 to August 18 1964 the experts representing the Soviet Union were V V Bunak G F Debets Y Y Roginsky and V P Yakimov UNESCO was represented by Professor Jean Hiernaux anthropologist The meeting took place immediately after the 7th World Congress of Anthropologists and Ethnographers held August 1 10 also in Moscow

Here follows the text of the proposals

1 All men living today belong to a single species *Homo sapiens*, and are derived from a common stock There are differences of opinion regarding how and when different human groups diverged from this common stock

2 Biological differences between human beings are due to differences in hereditary constitution and to the influence of the environment on this genetic potential In most cases those differences are due to the interaction of these two sets of factors

3 There is great genetic diversity within all human populations Pure races—in the sense of genetically homogeneous populations—do not exist in the human species

4 There are obvious physical differences between populations living in different geographic areas of the world in their average appearance Many of these differences have a genetic component Most often the latter consist in differences in the frequency of the same hereditary characters

5 Different classifications of mankind into major stocks and of those into more restricted categories (races which are groups of populations or single populations) have been proposed on the basis of hereditary physical traits Nearly all classifications recognise at least three major stocks

Since the pattern of geographic variation of the characteristics used in racial classification is a complex one, and since this pattern does not present any major discontinuity, these classifications, whatever they are, cannot claim to classify mankind into clear-cut categories; moreover, on account of the complexities of human history, it is difficult to determine the place of certain groups within these racial classifications, in particular that of certain intermediate populations.

Many anthropologists, while stressing the importance of human variation, believe that the scientific interest of these classifications is limited, and even that they carry the risk of inviting abusive generalisations.

Differences between individuals within a race or within a population are often greater than the average differences between races or populations.

Some of the variable distinctive traits which are generally chosen as criteria to characterise a race are either independently inherited or show only varying degrees of association between them within each population. Therefore, the combination of these traits in most individuals does not correspond to the typological racial characterisation.

6. In man as well as in animals, the genetic composition of each population is subject to the modifying influence of diverse factors: natural selection, tending towards adaptation to the environment, fortuitous mutations which lead to modifications of the molecules of desoxyribonucleic acid which determine heredity, or random modifications in the frequency of qualitative hereditary characters to an extent dependent on the patterns of mating and the size of populations.

Certain physical characters have a universal biological value for the survival of the human species, irrespective of the environment. The differences on which racial classifications are based do not affect these characters, and therefore it is not possible from the biological point of view to speak in any way whatsoever of a general inferiority or superiority of this or that race.

7. Human evolution presents attributes of capital importance which are specific to the species.

The human species, which is now spread over the whole world, has a past rich in migrations, in territorial expansions and contradictions. As a consequence, general adaptability to the most diverse environments is in man more pronounced than his adaptations to specific environments.

For long millennia progress made by man, in any field, seems to have been increasingly, if not exclusively, based on culture and the transmission of cultural achievements and not

on the transmission of genetic endowment This implies a modification in the role of natural selection in man today

On account of the mobility of human populations and of social factors, mating between members of different human groups which tend to mitigate the differentiations acquired has played a much more important role in human history than in that of animals The history of any human population, or of any human race, is rich in instances of hybridization and those tend to become more and more numerous

For man, the obstacles to interbreeding are geographical as well as social and cultural

8 At all times, the hereditary characteristics of the human populations are in dynamic equilibrium as a result of this interbreeding and of the differentiation mechanisms which were mentioned before As entities defined by sets of distinctive traits human races are at any time in a process of emergence and dissolution

Human races in general present a far less clear cut characterization than many animal races and they cannot be compared at all to races of domestic animals these being the result of heightened selection for special purposes

9 It has never been proved that interbreeding has biological disadvantages for mankind as a whole On the contrary it contributes to the maintenance of biological ties between human groups and thus to the unity of the species in its diversity

The biological consequences of a marriage depend only on the individual genetic make up of the couple and not on their race Therefore, no biological justification exists for prohibiting intermarriage between persons of different races or for advising against it on racial grounds

10 Man since his origin has at his disposal ever more efficient cultural means of nongenetic adaptation

11 Those cultural factors which break social and geographic barriers, enlarge the size of the breeding populations and so act upon their genetic structure by diminishing the random fluctuations (genetic drift)

12 As a rule the major stocks extend over vast territories encompassing many diverse populations which differ in language economy culture, etc

There is no national, religious geographic, linguistic or cultural group which constitutes a race *ipso facto*, the concept of race is purely biological

However human beings who speak the same language and share the same culture have a tendency to intermarry and often there is as a result a certain degree of coincidence between physical traits on the one hand and linguistic and cultural

traits on the other But there is no known causal nexus between these and therefore it is not justifiable to attribute cultural characteristics to the influence of the genetic inheritance

13 Most racial classifications of mankind do not include mental traits or attributes as a taxonomic criterion

Heredity may have an influence in the variability shown by individuals within a given population in their responses to the psychological tests currently applied

However no difference has ever been detected convincingly in the hereditary endowments of human groups in regard to what is measured by these tests On the other hand, ample evidence attests to the influence of physical cultural and social environment on differences in response to these tests

The study of this question is hampered by the very great difficulty of determining what part heredity plays in the average differences observed in so called tests of overall intelligence between populations of different cultures

The genetic capacity for intellectual development, like certain major anatomical traits peculiar to the species is one of the biological traits essential for its survival in any natural or social environment

The peoples of the world today appear to possess equal biological potentialities for attaining any civilizational level Differences in the achievements of different peoples must be attributed solely to their cultural history

Certain psychological traits are at times attributed to particular peoples Whether or not such assertions are valid we do not find any basis for ascribing such traits to hereditary factors until proof to the contrary is given

Neither in the field of hereditary potentialities concerning the overall intelligence and the capacity for cultural development nor in that of physical traits is there any justification for the concept of Inferior and Superior races

The biological data outlined above very obviously contradict the assertions of the racists Such assertions have no scientific foundation and it is the duty of anthropologists to do everything in their power to counteract the distortions of the results of their research for unscientific purposes

Алексеев В П 1960 *Гомин* [illegible] *не о плейстоцена Европы* [illegible] „Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека" (см стр [illegible])
Алексеев В П Дебец Г Ф [illegible] [illegible] *гических исследований* М Изд во „Наука" [illegible] стр
Алексеева Т В 1949 *Половые циклы* [illegible] *Половая кожа и структура полового цикла* [illegible] вательских работ Акад мед наук СССР [illegible] (медико биологические науки) стр 1[illegible]2 1[illegible]3
Алексеева Л В 1954 *Изменения состава крови* [illegible] *обезьян самок в связи с половыми циклами* [illegible] и медицины" № 1
Алексеева Л В и Нестурх М Ф 19[illegible] [illegible] *ности полового цикла у обезьян* [illegible] стр 71 83
Амлинский И Е 1955 *Жоффруа Сент Илер и его борьба против Кювье* М Изд во АН СССР, 42[illegible] стр
Анучин Д Н 1922 *Ископаемый человек в* [illegible] *и Африке* [illegible] [illegible]" № 2 стр [illegible]48 [illegible]
Анучин Д Н 1923 *Находка неандертальского черепа в* [illegible] *Африке* Русский антропологический журнал, т 12 [illegible]
Аристотель 1940 *О возникновении животных* [illegible] тельная статья и примечания В П Карпова М, Изд во АН СССР, 2[illegible]0 стр
Асратян Э А 19[illegible]1 *О диалектико материалистическ* [illegible]

И П Павлова В сб „Философские вопросы современной биологии
М стр 160 168
Астанин, Л П 1951 *О строении костей кисти боксеров (и гимнастов)* „Известия Ак пед наук" вып 35 стр 63 82 (и 83 114)
Астанин Л П 1952 *Влияние физических упражнений на пропорции руки человека* Природа № 6 стр 42 53

Бадер О Н 1936 *Новая палеантропологическая находка под Москвой* Антропологический журнал" № 4 стр 471 475
Бадер О Н 1940 *Находка неандерталоидной черепной крышки человека близ Хвалынска и вопрос о ее возрасте* Бюлл Моск об-ва испытат природы (Отдел геологический) т XVIII № 2 М стр 73-81
Белова Т И 1958 *Архитектоника прецентральной области коры головного мозга высших обезьян и человека* Советская антропология т II № 3 стр 57 70
Белова Т И и Хрисанфова Е Н 1957 *Линии расщепления на черепе человека и обезьян* Советская антропология" т I, № 2 стр 223-232
Белова Т И и Хрисанфова Е Н 1958 *Линии расщепления на скелете человека и обезьян* Советская антропология т II № 3, стр 81 89
Бец В А 1882 *О подробностях строения мозговой корки человека Предварительное сообщение (посвящается памяти профессора Парижского медицинского факультета Поля Брока)* Записки Киевского общества естествоиспытателей т VI вып 2 стр 165-176
Бец В А 1883 *Анатомия поверхности человеческого мозга* Киевские университетские известия № 2 стр 1 44 № 11 стр 304 315
Бибиков С Н 1940 *Из работ Крымской палеолитической экспедиции 1936 года* Бюлл Комиссии по изучению четвертичного периода № 6 7 М —Л Изд во АН СССР стр 81 84
Бибиков С Н 1949 *Грот Мурзак Коба—новая позднепалеолитическая стоянка в Крыму* „Советская археология" № 5 стр 159 178
Блинков С М 1949 *Височная область* В кн Цитоархитектоника коры большого мозга человека М стр 344 389
Блинков С М 1955 *Особенности строения большого мозга человека Височная доля человека и обезьян* М Медгиз 128 стр
Блинков С М и Глезер И И 1964 *Мозг человека в цифрах и таблицах* Л Изд во Медицина , 372 стр
Бонч Осмоловский Г А 1940 *Грот Киик Коба* Палеолит Крыма вып 1 М —Л Изд во АН СССР 226 стр
Бонч Осмоловский Г А 1941 *Кисть ископаемого человека из грота Киик Коба* Палеолит Крыма вып 2 М —Л Изд во АН СССР 172 стр
Бонч Осмоловский Г А 1954 *Скелет стопы и голени ископаемого человека из грота Киик Коба* Ред и допол В В Бунака „Палеолит Крыма вып 3 М —Л Изд во АН СССР 398 стр
Борисковский П И 1956 *Современная наука о происхождении человека* Л Лениздат 88 стр
Бочкарев П В 1935 *Влагалищный цикл и течка у приматов* Архив биол наук т 40, вып 2 стр 249 254
Бунак В В 1923 *О возрастных изменениях наклона таза* „Русский антропологический журнал т XII вып 3 4 стр 47 64
Бунак В В 1923 *О ребнях на черепах приматов* Русский антропологический журнал" т XII вып 3 4 стр 5 24
Бунак В В 1936 *Макроструктура головного мозга в период роста* В сб Анатомические и гистоструктурные особенности детского возраста М стр 233 326
Бунак В В 1940 *Размеры и форма позвоночника и их изменения в период*

роста Уч зап Моск госуд ун та" вып 34 (Антропология) М Изд во МГУ, стр 125 151
Бунак, В В 1941 *Антропометрия Практический курс* М 368 стр
Бунак В В 1941 *Соматология* В кн Антропологии Краткий курс" В В Бунак М Ф Нестурх Я Я Рогинский М Учпедгиз 376 стр
Бунак, В В 1951 *Муляж мозговой полости палеолитического детского черепа из грота Тешик Таш Узбекистан* Сборник Музея антропол и этногр ", т XIII Л стр 417 479
Бунак В В 1953 *Внутренняя полость черепа Вариации ее строения и сопоставление с вариациями наружной формы* Сборник Музея антро пол и этногр " т XV Л стр 486 556
Бунак, В В 1954 *Современное состояние проблемы эволюции стопы у предков человека* В кн I А Бонч Осмоловский *Скелет стопы и голени ископаемого человека из грота Киик Коба* Палеолит Крыма вып 3 ред и дополн В В Бунака М —Л Изд во АН СССР стр 357 387
Бунак В В 1956 *Человеческие расы и пути их образования* „Советская этнография" № 1 стр 85 105
Бунак В В 1959 *Череп человека и стадии его формирования у ископаемых людей и современных рас* Труды Ин та этнографии Академии наук СССР М Изд во АН СССР 281 стр
Бунак В В 1966 *Краткий обзор таксономических схем гоминид* В сб Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека (см стр 273 284)
Бунак В В 1966 *Речь и интеллект стадии их развития в антропогенезе* В сб „Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека (см стр 495 553)
Бунак В В 1966 *Черепная коробка* В сб „Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека (см стр 286 309)
Бунак, В В и Якименко Н А 1965 *Мимические и пантомимические реакции церкопитековых обезьян и шимпанзе* В сб статей Высшие формы поведения" отв ред А Д Слоним Изд во Наука М —Л стр 120 130
Бурчак Абрамович Н О и Габашвили Е Г 1945 *Высшая человекообразная обезьяна из верхнетретичных отложений Восточной Грузии* Сообщ Академии наук Грузинской ССР т VI № 6 стр 451 464
Бурчак Абрамович Н О и Габашвили Е Г 1946 *Высшая человекообразная обезьяна из верхнетретичных отложений Восточной Грузии (Кахетии)* „Вестник Гос музея Грузии , т XIII—А стр 235 273

Вацуро Э Г 1948 *Исследование высшей нервной деятельности антропоида (шимпанзе)* М Изд во Акад мед наук СССР 334 стр
Вацуро Э Г 1955 *Учение И П Павлова о высшей нервной деятельности* М Учпедгиз 160 стр
Вебер М 1936 *Приматы* Пер с нем ред и доп М Ф Нестурх М —Л Биомедгиз 366 стр
Вейденрейх Франц 1937 *Новое открытие трех черепов пекинского синантропа* (пер с англ) Антропологический журнал № 2 стр 117 120
Вейнерт Ганс 1933 *Новые находки первобытного человека на Яве* Пер с нем Р Гальперина „Успехи современной биологии т 2 № 1 2 стр 166 170
Вейнерт Ганс 1935 *Происхождение человечества* Пер с нем М Е Опочининой под ред М А Гремяцкого М Биомедгиз 334 стр
Воеводский М В 1934 *К вопросу о ранней (свидерской) стадии эпипалеолита на территории Восточной Европы* Труды II Международной

конференции Ассоциации по изучению четвертичного периода Европы, вып 5 Л, стр 230 245
Воеводский, М В 1952 *Ранний палеолит Русской равнины* Уч зап Моск гос ун та" вып 168 (*Ископаемый человек и его культура на территории СССР*) М стр 9 47
Воино М С 1958 *Сравнение формы мозга человека и обезьяны по измерительным данным и обводам* Советская Антропология" т II № 4 стр 51 68
Воино М С 1964 *Речь как одна из важнейших специфических человеческих особенностей* В сб „У истоков человечества (основные проблемы антропогенеза)" под ред В П Якимова М Изд во МГУ 318 стр (см стр 244 280)
Войтонис Н Ю 1948 *Поведение обезьян и зарождение трудовой деятельности человека* „Природа № 6 Изд во АН СССР стр 36-43
Войтонис Н Ю 1949 *Предистория интеллекта (к проблеме антропогенеза)* Отв ред д р биол наук Н Н Ладыгина Котс М —Л, Изд во АН СССР 270 стр
Воккен Г Г 1940 *Скелет кисти резуса и некоторые возрастные изменения его* „Вестник рентгенологии и радиологии" т 22, стр 149 162
Воккен Г Г 1949 *Закономерности дифференцировки костного скелета млекопитающих* (автореф докт дисс) Л Изд Центр рентгенолог радиол и раков ин та Мин ва здравоохр СССР 16 стр
Волоцкой М В 1924 *О двух формах человеческой кисти преимущественно в связи с половыми возрастными и расовыми различиями* Русский антропологический журнал т 13 вып 3-4 стр 70-82
Воронин Л Г 1952 *Анализ и синтез сложных раздражителей у высших животных* Л Медгиз 200 стр
Воронин, Л Г 1954 *Некоторые итоги сравнительно-физиологического изучения высшей нервной деятельности* „Известия АН СССР серия биологическая № 5 стр 122 134
Воронин Л Г Канфор И С Лакин Г Ф и Тих Н А 1948 *Опыт содержания и разведения обезьян в Сухуми* М Изд во Акад мед наук СССР 172 стр

Геккель Эрнст 1909 *Естественная история миротворения Общепонятное научное изложение учения о развитии* Часть 2 *Общая история происхождения видов Филогения и антропогения* Пер, ред и предисл А Г Генкеля СПб Научная мысль XVI+384 стр
Геккель Эрнст 1935 *Мировые загадки* С прил работы Э Геккеля *Монизм и законы природы* Под ред А А Максимова М, ГАИЗ 535 стр
Гексли Томас 1864 *О положении человека в ряду органических существ* Пер с англ под ред проф А Бекетова СПб VIII+181 стр
Герасимов М М 1955 *Восстановление лица по черепу (современный и ископаемый человек)* М Изд во АН СССР 585 стр
Герасимов М М 1964 *Люди каменного века* М, Изд во „Наука 169 стр
Гиндце Б К и Федотова А М 1932 *Артерии головного мозга собачьего павиана* (Cynocephalus hamadryas) Антропологический журнал № 1 стр 107 112
Гладкова Т Д 1958 *Сравнительная характеристика кожного рельефа ладоней человека и некоторых обезьян* Советская антропология т II № 4 стр 97 108
Гладкова Т Д 1960 *Человеческие расы* Знание М 44 стр
Гохман И И 1966 *Ископаемые неоантропы* В сб Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека" (см стр 227 272)

Грегори, В К 1934 *Эволюция лица от рыбы до человека* Пер с англ под ред Н А Бобринского М —Л Биомедгиз 152 стр
Гремяцкий, М А 1922 *К вопросу об эволюции нижней челюсти у гоминид (Обзор новейшей литературы)* Русский антропологический журнал", т 12 кн 1 2 стр 183 193
Гремяцкий М А 1922 *Подкумская черепная крышка и ее морфологические особенности* „Русский антропологический журнал" т 12 кн 1 2 стр 92 100
Гремяцкий, М А 1929 *Новости антропологической литературы I Проблема антропогенеза (реферат работы Болька)* „Естествознание и марксизм", № 1, стр 135 142
Гремяцкий М А 1932 *Из новейшей иностранной литературы по антропогенезу* Антропологический журнал № 1 (стр 124 129) № 2 (стр 182 191) 1937, № 3 (стр 136 137)
Гремяцкий, М А 1934 *Ологенизм Монтандона* Антропологический журнал , № 1 2 стр 55 67
Гремяцкий, М А 1934 *Проблемы антропогенеза* Антропологический журнал , № 3, стр 33 42
Гремяцкий, М А 1936 *Население Чжоу Коу Тьен* Антропологический журнал", № 2, стр 262 264
Гремяцкий М А 1948 *Проблема промежуточных и переходных форм от неандертальского типа человека к современному* Уч зап Моск гос ун та вып 115 (Труды Музея антропологии) стр 33 77
Гремяцкий, М А 1949 *Череп ребенка неандертальца из грота Тешик Таш Южный Узбекистан* В кн „Тешик Таш стр 137 182
Гремяцкий М А 1952 *К вопросу о филогенетических связях древнейших гоминид* „Краткие сообщ Ин та этнографии АН СССР т XV стр 62 71
Гремяцкий М А 1954 *Разгадка одной антропологической тайны* „Советская этнография" № 1 стр 154 157
Гремяцкий М А 1955 *Как произошел человек* М Изд во МГУ 174 стр
Гремяцкий М А 1955 *Филогенетическое единство приматов* Вестник Моск ун та", № 4 5 (юбил выпуск) стр 219 230
Гремяцкий М А 1957 *Ископаемые обезьяны на территории Советского Союза* Советская антропология т I № 1, стр 35 46
Гремяцкий М А 1957 *О новом" роде человекообразных обезьян названных бонобо",* Советская антропология" т I № 2 стр 263 269
Гремяцкий М А 1961 *Основная линия эволюции высших приматов в неогене* Вопросы антропологии" № 7 стр 3 8
Гремяцкий, М А 1962 *Ordo Primates Приматы* В кн *Основы палеонтологии* Том [13] *Млекопитающие* стр 90 108
Гремяцкий М А 1966 *Мегагнатные плейстоценовые формы высших ископаемых приматов* В сб Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека (см стр 120 141)
Громов В И 1948 *Палеонтологическое и археологическое обоснование стратиграфии континентальных отложений четвертичного периода СССР* Труды Ин та геол наук" вып 17 М Изд во АН СССР 523 стр
Гуделис В и Повилонис, С 1952 *Череп ископаемого человека* „Природа № 6 стр 118
Гурев Г А 1941 *Атеизм Чарлза Дарвина* М —Л , Изд во АН СССР 114 стр

Давиташвили Л Ш 1948 *Эволюционная идея в палеонтологии после Дарвина* М —Л Изд во АН СССР 575 стр

Данилова L И 1966 *Кисть и стопа* В сб „Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека" (см стр 423-4..)
Данилова, L И 1965 *Эволюция руки в связи с вопросами антропогенеза* Киев „Наукова Думка" 198 стр
Дарвин Чарлз 1953 *Происхождение человека и половой отбор Выражение эмоции у человека и животных* Соч т 5 под ред акад L Н Павловского М, Изд во АН СССР 1040 стр
Дарвин Чарлз 1957 *Воспоминания о развитии моего ума и характера (автобиография) Дневник работы и жизни* Полный перевод с рукописей Ч Дарвина вступительная статья и комментарии проф С Л Соболя М Изд во АН СССР 251 стр
Дебец Г Ф 1940 *Об антропологических особенностях человеческого скелета из пещеры Тешик Таш (Предварит сообщ)* „Труды Узбекистанского филиала АН СССР" сер 1 (История Археология) вып 1 Ташкент стр 46-71
Дебец Г Ф 1948 *О систематике и номенклатуре ископаемых форм человека* „Кратк сообщ Ин та истории материальной культуры АН СССР" вып XXII М стр 13 21
Дебец Г Ф 1948 *Палеоантропология СССР* Труды Ин та этнографии АН СССР Нов сер т IV М—Л Изд во АН СССР 391 стр
Дебец Г Ф 1952 *Территория СССР и проблема родины человека* „Кратк сообщ Ин та этнографии им Н Н Миклухо-Маклая АН СССР М Изд во АН СССР, вып XVII стр 3 17
Дебец Г Ф 1955 *Палеоантропологические находки в Костенках (предварительное сообщение)* „Советская этнография № 1 стр 43-53
Дебец Г Ф 1955 *Расы человека* БСЭ т 36 стр 106-112
Дебец Г Ф 1956 *О принципах классификации человеческих рас* „Советская этнография № 4 стр 129-142
Дембовский Я 1963 *Психология обезьян* М Изд во иностранной литературы 331 стр
Денисов П К 1958 *Анализаторная и синтетическая функции больших полушарий шимпанзе* „Журнал высшей нервной деятельности т VIII вып 6 стр 845 854
Дешин А А 1922 *К вопросу о древнем образе жизни отдаленных предков человека (реферат книги Вуда Джонса)* „Русский антропологический журнал т 12 кн 1 2 стр 174 182
Дешин А А 1934 *К вопросу об эволюции коры мозга развитие центральной области коры (островок Рейля) и ее покрышек у человека приматов и хищных* „Антропологический журнал № 1 2 стр 66 78
Дун Ти чэн 1963 *Морфологические особенности скелетных остатков и зубов и антопитека в связи с его положением в системе приматов* „Вопросы антропологии № 13 стр 3 32

Енгуглашвили Н С 1955 *Беременность и роды у обезьян Анатомо-физиологическое исследование* М—Л Медгиз 158 стр
Ефименко П П 1953 *Первобытное общество Очерки по истории палеолитического времени* Изд 3 перераб и доп Киев Изд во АН УССР 663 стр

Жеденов В Н 1962 *Сравнительная анатомия приматов (включая человека)* Под ред М Ф Нестурха М Гос Изд во „Высшая школа 462 стр
Жиров Е В 1940 *Костяки из грота Мурзак Коба* „Советская археология" № 5 стр 179 186

Зубов А А 1963 *Человек заселяет свою планету* М Гос Изд во географической литературы 174 стр

Зубов А А 1964 „О систематике австралопитековых" Вопросы антропологии" № 17, стр 99 105
Зубов А А 1966 *Зубная система* В сб Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека (см стр 360 382)

Иванишкин М Ф 1956 *Анатомия человека* 3 изд перераб т 1 2 М 548 стр 323 стр
Иванова, И К 1965 *Геологический возраст ископаемого человека К VII Конгрессу INQUA* (США 1965) М Изд во Наука 191 стр
Иванова, И К 1966 *О геологическом возрасте ископаемых гоминид в свете данных абсолютного летоисчисления* В сб Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека (см стр 5 41)
Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека Сборник статей под редакцией В В Бунака М Изд во Наука 553 стр

Каверзнев А А 1951 *О перерождении животных* Нов пер с нем Б Е Райкова и С Л Соболя в кн Научное наследство т 2 М Изд во АН СССР стр 506 513
Келер, Вольфганг 1930 *Исследование интеллекта человекоподобных обезьян* Пер с нем Л В Занкова и И М Соловьева под ред и с вступит статьей Л С Выготского М Изд во Ком Академии 207 стр
Кетер В (Р) 1964 *Homo sapiens — человек разумный* М Изд во Молодая гвардия 222 стр
Ковешникова, А К 1928 *Изменение формы лопатки животных в связи с переходом от горизонтального положения на четырех к вертикальному положению на двух конечностях* Изв Ин та им П Ф Лесгафта т XIV вып 1 и 2 стр 17 30
Кондукторова Т С 1952 *Фрагменты черепов из района Днепропетровска* „Ученые записки Московского гос университета вып 158 (Ископаемый человек и его культура на территории СССР) Стр 217 237
Коробков И И 1963 *Новые данные о неандертальских черепах из пещеры Шанидар* Вопросы антропологии № 15 стр 123 138
Кочеткова, В И 1953 *Морфо экологические особенности черепа приматов* Автореферат канд дисс М Московский гос университет 15 стр
Кочеткова В И 1966 *Сравнительная характеристика эндокранов гоминид в палеоневрологическом аспекте* В сб „Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека (см стр 456 494)
Куксова М И 1956 *Сезонные и суточные колебания красной крови у обезьян* В сб Теоретические и практические вопросы медицины и биологии в эксперименте на обезьянах под ред И А Уткина М Медгиз стр 98 106
Куксова М И 1958 *Онтогенетическое развитие картины крови у макаков резусов и павианов гамадрилов* „Советская антропология т II № 2 стр 35 53
Куксова М И 1958 *Прорезывание молочных зубов у павианов гамадрилов* „Советская антропология т II № 1 стр 17 21
Куксова М И 1959 *Сезонные и суточные колебания белой крови у низших обезьян* „Журнал общей биологии" т XX № 1 январь-февраль стр 73 80
Кювье Жорж 1937 *Рассуждение о переворотах на поверхности земного шара* Пер с франц Д L Жуковского Ред и вступ статья акад А А Борисяка М—Л Биомедгиз 368 стр

Ладыгина Котс Н Н 1923 *Исследование познавательных способностей шимпанзе* М Госиздат 500 стр

Ладыгина Котс Н Н 193. *Дитя шимпанзе и дитя человека в их инстинктах эмоциях играх привычках и выразительных движениях* „Труды Гос Дарвиновского Музея т 3 (юбилейное изд) М Изд Гос Дарвиновского Музея 593 стр
Ладыгина Котс Н Н 1956 *Развитие форм отражения в процессе эволюции организмов* Вопросы философии № 4 стр 94 103
Ладыгина Котс Н Н 1958 *Развитие психики в процессе эволюции организмов* М 238 стр
Ладыгина Котс Н Н 1960 *Конструктивная и орудийная деятельность высших обезьян (шимпанзе)* М Изд во АН СССР 399 стр
Ладыгина Котс Н Н 1965 *Предпосылки человеческого мышления Подражательное конструирование обезьяной и детьми* М Изд во Наука 110 стр
Лазарев П П 1929 *Успехи геофизики* М —Л ГИЗ 83 стр
Лазуков Г И 1954 *Основные этапы развития флоры фауны и человека в четвертичном периоде* Под ред д ра геогр наук В П Гричука М Изд во МГУ 44 стр
Лапин Г Ф 1958 *Изменение пропорции тела в онтогенезе низших обезьян* Советская антропология т II № 2 стр 21 33
Лапин Г Ф 1959 *Продолжительность беременности у павианов а мадрилов и некоторых других низших обезьян* „Советская антропология стр 49 55
Лев Д Н 1953 *Пещеры эпохи палеолита близ Самарканда* „Природа", № 7 стр 105 106
Левин Г З 1936 *О так называемой „обезьяньей борозде на русских мозгах и мозгах выдающихся лиц* В кн Проблема борозд и извилин в морфологии мозга Л стр 25 34
Левин М Г 1949 *Н Г Чернышевский о расах и расовой проблеме* Советская этнография № 4 стр 147 155
Левин М Г и Алексеева Л В 1960 *Атланто лопаточные мышцы у приматов* Вопросы антропологии вып 1 стр 81 86
Линней К 1804 *Система природы Царство животных* Ч I СПб издал с прим и доп Ал Савостьянов
Лукреций (Тит Кар) 1946 *О природе вещей* Ред лат текста и пер Ф А Петровского т 1 Л Изд во АН СССР 451 стр (*О происхождении и развитии рода людского* — см в книге пятой стр 283 365) 1947 *Статьи комментарии фрагменты Эпикура и Эмпедокла* Сост Ф А Петровский т 2 Л Изд во АН СССР 698 стр
Лурия А Р 1962 *Высшие корковые функции человека и их нарушения при локальных поражениях мозга* Изд во МГУ Стр 432

Миклухо Маклай Н Н 1950 1954 *Собрание сочинений* М —Л Изд во АН СССР тт I—V
Миллер Геррит 1925 *Борьба мнений по вопросу о предках человека* Пер с англ стат в кн Эволюция человека под ред М А Гремяцкого М изд Ком ун та им Я М Свердлова (см стр 66 102)
Минаков П А 1923 *О черепе Pithecanthropus erectus Dubois в связи с вопросом о посмертных изменениях кости* (предв сообщ) Русский антропологический журнал т 13 вып 1 2 стр 7 24 См критич оценку данной работы в Антропологическом журнале № 1 1932 стр 152 153 (некролог)
Мюллер Ф и Геккель Э 1940 *Основной биогенетический закон Избранные работы* Со вступ статьей И И Ежикова М —Л Изд во АН СССР 291 стр

Нестурх М Ф 1932 *Новые находки ископаемого человека 1 Пекинский обезьяночеловек 2 Неандерталец острова Явы (яванский человек)*

3 Палестинский человек 4 Олдовайский человек Антропологический журнал № 2 стр 166 176
Нестурх, М Ф 1932 *Открытие человекообразных обезьян на Суматре и в Южной Америке 1 Оранг пендек 2 Америантропоид* Антропологический журнал № 2 стр 177 180
Нестурх М Ф 1934 *Человек и его предки* М ГАИЗ 437 стр
Нестурх М Ф 1936 *Добавочные млечные железы у приматов* Антропологический журнал № 3 стр 331 344
Нестурх М Ф 1937 *Против идеализма на фронте антропогенеза (Новейшие буржуазные гипотезы антропогенеза в свете трудовой теории антропогенеза Энгельса и последние открытия ископаемых представителей гоминид)* „Фронт науки и техники" № 5 М стр 50 80
Нестурх М Ф 1938 *Ископаемые антропоиды и древнейшие гоминиды (По новейшим данным)* Успехи современной биологии т IX вып 2 стр 161 202
Нестурх М Ф 1940 *Гипотеза антропогенеза Осборна и ее критика* „Успехи современной биологии" т 13 вып 21 М стр 347 353
Нестурх, М Ф 1941 *Антропогенез* (Часть I в книге В В Бунак М Ф Нестурх, Я Я Рогинский *Антропология* Краткий курс) М Учпедгиз, стр 13 131
Нестурх М Ф 1948 *Обезьянолюди и их отношение к прочим ископаемым гоминидам* Уч зап Моск гос ун та вып 115 (Труды музея антропологии) М Изд во МГУ стр 3 32
Нестурх М Ф 1949 *Обезьяны* В кн Московский зоопарк М стр 333 392
Нестурх М Ф 1950 *Антропология* БСЭ т 2 М ОГИЗ, стр 532 539
Нестурх М Ф 1954 *Ископаемые гигантские антропоиды Азии и ортогенетическая гипотеза антропогенеза Вейденрейха* Уч зап Моск гос ун та вып 166 („Труды н и ин та антропологии") Изд во МГУ стр 29-46
Нестурх М Ф 1954 1958 *Человеческие расы* (2 е издание исправленное) М Учпедгиз 100 стр
Нестурх М Ф 1957 *Дарвин и современные проблемы антропогенеза* „Советская антропология" вып 2 стр 7 18
Нестурх М Ф 1957 *Звенья родословной человека* Природа № 1 стр 32 42
Нестурх М Ф 1957 *Типы локомоции у обезьян и прямохождение у человека в связи с антропогенезом* „Советская антропология" вып 2 стр 159 169
Нестурх, М Ф (совместно с Л В Алексеевой) 1958 *Морфо-физиологические особенности полового цикла у обезьян* Советская антропология № 3 стр 71 83
Нестурх М Ф 1960 *Приматология и антропогенез (обезьяны полуобезьяны и происхождение человека)* Медгиз М 186 стр
Нестурх М Ф 1962 *За одна эволюции человеческого мозга* В ежегоднике „Наука и человечество" М „Знание" 405 стр (см стр 76 85)
Нестурх, М Ф 1962 *Приматы и происхождение человека* Глава в книге Жеденов В Н *Сравнительная анатомия приматов (включая человека)* Под ред М Ф Нестурха М „Высшая школа" 626 стр (см стр 595 611)
Нестурх, М Ф 1964 *Некоторые факторы гоминизации и вымирания ископаемых антропоидов плиоцена и плейстоцена* М Изд во Наука 9 стр
Нестурх М Ф 1964 *Проблема первоначальной прародины человека* В сб „У истоков человечества (Основные проблемы антропогенеза)" М Изд во МГУ 318 стр (см стр 7 32)
Нестурх М Ф 1965 *Человеческие расы* 3 е издание исправленное и дополненное М Изд во „Просвещение" 107 стр

Нестурх М Ф и Поıарицкая Н М 1965 *От высших животных к человеку* М , Изд во Знание 48 стр
Никитюı Б А 1966 *Лицевой скелет Верхний отдеı* В сб „Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение ıеловека" (см стр 310 339)
Никитюк Б А 1966 *Нижняя челюсть* В сб Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека" (см стр 340 35)

Оııигова А П 1958 *Цито- и миэлоархитектоника затылочной области коры больших полушарий у представителей разных экологических групп низших обезьян* „Советская антропология т II № 4 стр 37 50
Окладников А П 1940 *Исследование палеолитической пещеры Тешик Таш* „Труды Узбек фил Академии наук СССР серия 1 (*История Археология*) вып 1 Ташкент стр 3 45
Окладников А П 1949 *Исследование мустьерской стоянки и погребения неандертальца в гроте Тешик Таш Южный Узбекистан* В кн „Тешик Таш , стр 7 85
Осборн Генри Ферфильд 1924 *Человек древнего каменного века (среда жизнь искусство)* Пер с англ Б Н Вишневского и с прилож его статьи „Доисторический человек в России Л „Путь к знанию 527 стр
Основы палеонтологии 1962 М Том [13] *Млекопитающие* Отв ред тома В И Громова 421 стр (М А Гремяцкий *Ordo primates Приматы* Стр 90-108)

Павловские среды 1949 Т 1 3 М —Л Изд во АН СССР
Павлов, И П 1951 1954 *Полное собрание сочинений* изд 2 т 1 6 М Изд во АН СССР
Пенфильд В Робертс Л 1964 *Речь и мозговые механизмы* Л Изд во „Медицина" 264 стр
Петров Г И 1934 *Расовая теория на службе фашизма* (Изд Гос Акад Истории матер культуры вып 95) М —Л 68 стр
Петров Г И 1940 *Находка остатков неандертальского человека на горе Чирчео (Италия)* Краткие сообщ Ин та истории материальной культуры VII стр 102 105
Петров Г И 1941 *Палестинские неандертальцы* „Наука и жизнь" № 4 стр 4 6
Писарев Д И 1944 *Избранные философские и общественно политические статьи* М Госполитиздат 451 стр
Плеханов Г В 1949 *К вопросу о развитии монистического взгляда на историю* М Госполитиздат 336 стр
Плисецкий М С 1951 *Классовая борьба в науке о человеке* М 88 стр
Плисецкий М С 1952 *О так называемых неандертальских погребениях* Советская этнография № 2 стр 138 157
Плисецкий М С 1955 *Расизм* БСЭ т 36 стр 29 32
Плисецкий, М С 1956 *Человек и его расы* М Госкультпросветиздат 83 стр
Полетика Н 1926 *Обезьяний процесс в Америке* М —Л Госиздат 103 стр
Поляков Г И 1958 *О некоторых особенностях структуры нейронов центральной нервной системы у человека приматов и других млекопитающих* „Советская антропология т II № 3 стр 35 56
Поляков Г И 1958 *О некоторых особенностях усложнения нейронного строения коры мозга у человека обезьян и других млекопитающих* „Советская антропология т II № 4 стр 69 85
Поляков Г И 1964 *Проблема происхождения рефлекторных механизмов мозга* М Изд во Медицина 243 стр

Попова Татьяна И В 1957 *К вопросу о развитии рудной клетки у лосося и некоторых млекопитающих* Второе совещание эмбриологов СССР 28 января 5 февраля 1957 г (Тезисы докладов) М Изд во МГУ стр 145 146
Поршнев Б Ф 1955 *Материализм и идеализм в вопросах становления человека* „Вопросы философии" № 5 стр 137 148
Поршнев Б Ф 1955 *О древнейшем способе получения огня* „Советская этнография" № 1 стр 7 28
Происхождение человека и древнее расселение человечества 1951 Труды ин та этнографии им Н Н Миклухо Маклая АН СССР Нов сер т XVI под ред М Г Левина (отв ред) Г Ф Дебеца и Я Я Рогинского М Изд во АН СССР 570 стр

Радищев А Н 1949 *Избранные философские сочинения* Под общ ред и с предисл А Н Чистова М Госполитиздат стр 271 398
Развитие мозга ребенка 1965 Под ред С А Саркисова М Изд во „Медицина" 396 стр
Райков Б Е 1951 1955 *Русские биологи эволюционисты до Дарвина* (Материалы к истории эволюционной идеи в России) Т 1 3 М —Л Изд во АН СССР т 1 (1952) 472 стр т 2 (1951) 588 стр т 3 (1955) 644 стр
Решетов Ю Г 1962 *Новые находки ископаемых приматов в ущелье Олдовай Танганьика* „Вопросы антропологии" № 11 стр 149 154
Решетов Ю Г 1964 *Еще раз о „презинджантропе" Лики* „Вопросы антропологии" № 16 стр 140 149
Рогачев А Н 1955 *Погребение древнекаменного века на стоянке Костенки XIV („Маркина гора")* „Советская этнография" № 1 стр 29 38
Рогинская А Ю 1950 *Зараут Сай (Записки художника)* М Детиздат 53 стр
Рогинский Г З 1948 *Навыки и зачатки интеллектуальных действий у антропоидов (шимпанзе)* Л Изд во Ленинград ун та 202 стр
Рогинский Г З 1955 *Высшая нервная деятельность человекообразных обезьян Об опытах акад И П Павлова* „Природа" № 2 М Изд во АН СССР стр 15 23
Рогинский Я Я 1933 *Похолодание в процессе человеческой эволюции* (Изложение и критика теории Л Больа) „Антропологический журнал" М № 3 стр 83-103
Рогинский Я Я 1934 *Филогенез и вариации черепа человека* БСЭ т 61 стр 230-234
Рогинский Я Я 1936 *К вопросу о периодизации процесса человеческой эволюции* „Антропологический журнал", № 4 стр 346 351
Рогинский Я Я 1937 *Новые находки синантропа* „Антропологический журнал", № 1 стр 144
Рогинский Я Я 1938 *Проблема происхождения Homo sapiens* (По данным работ последнего двадцатилетия) „Успехи современной биологии" т IX вып 1 М стр 115 136
Рогинский Я Я 1946 *Н Н Миклухо Маклай* „Советская этнография" М , № 2, стр 5 16
Рогинский Я Я 1948 *Новые теории происхождения человека* М Изд во „Правда" 31 стр
Рогинский Я Я 1948 *Что такое человеческие расы* М Изд во „Правда", 24 стр
Рогинский Я Я 1949 *Теории моноцентризма и полицентризма в проблеме происхождения современного человека и его рас* („Труды Музея антропологии") М Изд во МГУ 156 стр
Рогинский Я Я 1951 *Основные антропологические вопросы в проблеме происхождения современного человека* В сб „Происхождение человека и древнее расселение человечества" М , Изд во АН СССР стр 153 204

Рогинский, Я Я 1956 *Некоторые проблемы происхождения человека* „Советская этнография" № 4 стр 11 17

Рогинский, Я Я 1966 *Внеевропейские палеоантропы* В сб „Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека" (см стр 205 226)

Рогинский Я Я 1966 *Палестинцы и близкие к ним формы гоминид* В сб „Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека" (см стр 182 204)

Рогинский Я Я Левин М Г 1955 *Основы антропологии* М Изд во МГУ 502 стр

Рогинский Я Я Левин М Г 1963 *Антропология* Издание второе М Гос изд во „Высшая школа" 488 стр

Рокотова Н А 1953 *Условные исследовательские рефлексы у шимпанзе* „Труды ин та физиологии им И П Павлова" т 2 (*Вопросы физиологии высшей нервной деятельности*) М —Л Изд во Акад мед наук СССР стр 295 305

Рохлин Д Г 1965 *Болезни древних людей Кости людей различных эпох— нормальные и патологически измененные* М —Л Изд во „Наука" 303 стр

Саркисов С А 1964 *Очерки по структуре и функции мозга* М Медгиз

Северцов А Н 1939 *Морфологические закономерности эволюции* М —Л Изд во АН СССР 610 стр

Семенов С А 1951 *О сложении защитного аппарата глаз монгольского расового типа* „Советская этнография" № 4 М стр 156 179

Семенов С А 1954 *Влияние природных условий на строение защитного аппарата глаз у человека* „Природа" № 12 стр 107 110

Семенов С А 1959 *Значение труда для развития интеллекта в антропогенезе* „Советская антропология" № 2 стр 3 30

Семенова Н А 1937 *Размеры и форма стопы плода и младенца* Уч зап Моск гос ун та" вып 10 (*Антропология*) М —Л стр 199 203

Синельников Н А 1934 *О новых находках бедер питекантропа* „Антропологический журнал" № 1 2 стр 143 145

Синельников Н А 1937 *О пространственном расположении остеонов в диафизе бедра человека и других приматов* „Антропологический журнал" № 3 стр 102 111

Синельников Н А и Гремяцкий М А 1949 *Кости скелета ребенка неандертальца из грота Тешик Таш Южный Узбекистан* В кн „Тешик Таш" стр 123 136

Слоним А Д 1952 *Животная теплота и ее регуляция в организме млекопитающих* М —Л Изд во АН СССР 328 стр

Соболь С Л 1940 *Первое июля 1858 г двадцать четвертое ноября 1859* (Полемика вокруг идеи Дарвина в период предшествовавший выходу в свет книги „Происхождение видов") „Журнал общей биологии" т I, № 1 стр 75 104

Современная антропология 1964 Отв ред М Ф Нестурх Сборник статей Труды Московского об ва испытателей природы т XIV М Изд во МГУ 304 стр

Сушкин П П 1928 *Высокогорные области Азии и происхождение человека* „Природа" № 3 стр 250-279

Теоретические и практические вопросы медицины и биологии в эксперименте на обезьянах 1956 Сборник научных работ под ред канд биол наук И А Уткина М Медгиз 202 стр

Тешик Таш Палеолитический человек 1949 Под ред М А Гремяцкого и М Ф Нестурха „Труды н и ин та антропологии МГУ" М Изд во МГУ, 183 стр

Тимирязев К А 1939 *Чарлз Дарвин и его учение* М стр 139 149 и 188 189

Тимирязев, К А 1938 *Сочинения* т V М Сельхозгиз стр 314
Тимирязев К А 1939 *Сочинения* т VII Сельхозгиз стр 547
Тих, Н А 1950 *Стадная жизнь обезьян и средства их общения в свете проблемы антропогенеза* Автореф докт дисс Л Изд физиол ин та им И П Павлова АН СССР 36 стр
Труды Сухумской биологической станции Академии медицинских наук СССР 1949 Под ред д ра биол наук Л Г Воронина т 1 М Изд во Акад мед наук СССР 306 стр

У истоков человечества (основные проблемы антропогенеза) 1964 Под ред В П Якимова М , Изд во МГУ 318 стр
Уоллес, Альфред Руссель 1911 *Дарвинизм изложение теории естественного подбора и некоторых из ее приложений* Пер с англ М А Мензбира с прил его статьи *А Уоллес и его научное значение* изд 2 доп М изд М , М и С Собашниковых 577 стр
Уоллес, Альфред Руссель 1872 *Малайский архипелаг Страна орангутана и райской птицы* Пер со 2 го англ изд СПб изд Общественная польза 96 стр
Урысон М И 1952 *Лобный шов у человека в сравнительно анатомическом освещении* Автореф канд дисс М Изд во МГУ 14 стр
Урысон М И 1957 *Новейшие палеоантропологические открытия в Африке* „Советская антропология" № 1 стр 135 147
Урысон М И 1958 *Новые находки костных остатков и антопитека в Китае* Советская антропология т II № 2 стр 135 139
Урысон М И 1964 *Начальный этап становления человека (древнейшие и древние люди)* В сб „У истоков человечества (основные проблемы антропогенеза)" М Изд во МГУ 318 стр (см стр 83 151)
Урысон М И 1966 *Некоторые теоретические проблемы современного учения об антропогенезе* Вопросы антропологии № 19 стр 27 38
Урысон М И 1966 *Питекантропы синантропы и близкие к ним формы гоминид* В сб Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека" (см стр 89 119)
Уткин И А 1954 *Сухумская медико биологическая станция Академии медицинских наук СССР и ее питомник обезьян* М Медгиз 32 стр

Фабри К Э 1958 *Обращение с предметами у низших обезьян и проблема зарождения трудовой деятельности* Советская антропология т II № 1 стр 23 30
Филимонов И Н 1949 *Сравнительная анатомия архитектонических формаций коры большого мозга* В кн Цитоархитектоника коры большого мозга человека М Медгиз
Филимонов И Н 1949 *Цитоархитектоника Общие понятия Классификация архитектонических формаций* В кн Цитоархитектоника коры большого мозга человека М Медгиз стр 402 433

Хрисанфова Е Н 1956 *Особенности строения органи человека и обезьян* Вестник Моск ун та" № 1 стр 61 66
Хрисанфова Е Н 1957 *Внутригрупповая и межгрупповая изменчивость основных размеров черепа узконосых обезьян и людей* „Вестник Моск ун та № 2 стр 95 102
Хрисанфова Е Н 1962 *Теоретические вопросы изменчивости позвоночника и грудной клетки человека* М Изд во МГУ 55 стр
Хрисанфова, Е Н 1966 *Скелет грудной клетки Позвоночный столб* В сб Ископаемые гоминиды и происхождение человека" (см стр 376-422)

Цитоархитектоника коры большого мозга человека 1949 Под общ ред С А Саркисова И Н Филимонова и Н С Преображенской М, Медгиз 450 стр

Чебоксаров Н Н 1951 *Основные принципы антропологических классификаций* „Труды ин-та этнографии Академии наук СССР им Миклухо-Маклая (нов сер) т XVI *Происхождение человека и древнее расселение человечества* М Изд-во АН СССР стр 291 322
Чернышевский Н Г 1948 *Антропологический принцип в философии* М Госполитиздат стр 111
Чернышевский Н Г 1951 *Избранные философские сочинения* М Госполитиздат (О расах см стр 5_7 579)

Шевченко Ю Г 1936 *Нижнепариетальная область у антропоморфных обезьян* „Труды ин-та мозга при Центр Исполн Комитете СССР вып I М стр 155 202
Шевченко Ю Г 1938 *Нижнепариетальная область у промежуточной группы обезьян* „Труды Ин-та мозга вып III IV стр 363 392
Шевченко Ю Г 1956 *Индивидуальные и групповые вариации строения коры большого мозга (нижне-теменной области) современных людей* „Вестник Акад мед наук СССР № 5 стр 35 46
Шевченко Ю Г 1959 *Развитие филогенетически новых областей мозга в ряду приматов* Советская антропология" № 2 стр 73 92
Шимкевич В М 1912 *Курс сравнительной анатомии позвоночных животных* СПб М (см стр 254 2_6)
Штефко В Г и Харьков А А 1946 *Эмансипсия у обезьян* Труды Московского зоопарка" т III стр 206 217
Штодин М П 1961 *Материалы к вопросу о высшей нервной деятельности человекообразной обезьяны (шимпанзе)* Сообщение I *Образование сложных моторных навыков* Сообщение II *Системность в поведении обезьяны* В кн Труды Ин-та эволюц физиол и патолог высшей нерв ной деят" т I отв ред акад Л А Орбели Изд-во АН СССР стр 171 181 и 183 190
Щелкунов С И 1940 *Изменение стопы в условиях различной функциональной нагрузки* Архив анатомии гистологии и эмбриологии т XXIV № 1 стр 24 37

Эклин Карл 1923 *В сердце Африки* Пер с англ М Госиздат 214 стр (о гориллах см стр 154 201)
Эфроимсон В П 1964 *Введение в медицинскую генетику* М Медгиз 490 стр

Юзефович А Н 1937 *Теория антропогенеза Г Вейнерта* Природа № 12 стр 124 128
Юзефович А Н 1939 *Синантроп и его положение в системе гоминид* Природа № 1 стр 35 49

Якимов В П 1946 *Онтогенетическое формирование пропорции передних конечностей у человека и млекопитающих* Зоологический журнал т XXV вып 2 М стр 167 170
Якимов В П 1947 *Развитие скелета передних конечностей человека и некоторых млекопитающих* Зоологический журнал т XXVI вып 4 стр 351 3_6
Якимов В П 1949 *О двух морфологических типах европейских неандертальцев* Природа № 10 стр 27 42
Якимов В П 1950 *Обзор новейших палеоантропологических открытий в Африке* Природа № 10 стр 34 40

terly Review of Biology V 10, No 1 March pp 32 59 No 2 June, pp 181 208

Ashton E H and Zuckerman, S 1950 Some Quantitative Dental Characteristics of the Chimpanzee Gorilla and Orang outang *Philos Trans Roy Soc of London* ser B No 616 V 234 pp 471-484

Babor J F und Frankenberger Z 1931 „Über das fetale Wachstum der Gorilla" *Biologia generalis* Bd VII Lief 3 S 367 406

Bavink B 1933 *Ergebnisse und Probleme der Naturwissenschaften* (Eine Einfuhrung in die heutige Naturphilosophie) 5 te Aufl Leipzig 650 S („Ursprung des Menschen" S 450-464)

Beattie J 1927 The Anatomy of the Common Marmoset (Hapale jacchus) *Proc Zool Soc London* Part III pp 593 718

Benchley B J 1944 *My Friends the Apes* London 234 pp

Bennejeant Ch 1936 *Les variations morphologiques dentaires humaines Communication au IX me Congrès Français de Stomatologie* Paris 1936 Seance du 6 Octobre pp 183 217

Bingham Harold C 1932 *Gorillas in a Native Habitat* Report of the joint expedition of 1929 1930 of Yale University and Carnegie Institution of Washington for psychobiological study of mountain gorillas (Gorilla beringei) in Parc national Albert Belgian Congo Africa Carnegie Institution of Washington publication No 426 (August) 66 pp

Black Davidson 1934 "On the Discovery Morphology and Environment of Sinanthropus Pekinensis *Philos Trans Roy Soc of London* ser B Vol 233 pp 57 120

Black D Teilhard de Chardin P Young C C Pei W C 1933 "Fossil Man in China The Choukoutien Cave Deposits with a Synopsis of Our Present Knowledge of the Late Cenozoic in China" *Geological Memoirs* ser A No LI p 158 With a foreword by Wong Wen Hao Peiping May

Blanc A C 1940 The Fossil Man of Circe s Mountain *Natural History* May pp 280 287

Bluntschli H 1913 Die fossilen Affen Patagoniens und der Ursprung der platyrrhinen Affen *Verhandlungen der Anatomischen Gesellschaft* Greisswald Jena Bd 27 S 33-43

Boker Hans 1935 1937 *Einfuhrung in die vergleichende biologische Anatomie der Wirbeltiere* Bd I 228 S *Biologische Anatomie der Ernahrung* Bd 2 258 S Jena

Bolk L 1926 Das Problem der Menschwerdung Vortrag auf der XXV Versammlung der Anatomischen Gesellschaft zu Freiburg Jena 44 S

Boule, Marcellin 1937 Le Sinanthrope *L Anthropologie* T XLVII Nos 1 2 pp 1 22

Boule Marcellin Vallois Henri V 1952 *Les hommes fossiles Elements de paleontologie humaine* 4 éd Paris 583 pp

Boulenger E G 1936 *Apes and Monkeys* London 236 pp

Breuil H 1931 Le feu et l industrie lithique et osseuse à Choukoutien *Bull Geol Soc China* v XI No 4 p 147

Breuil H 1932 Le feu et l industrie de pierre et d os dans le gisement du Sinanthropus a Chou Kou Tien" *L Anthropologie* T XLII No 1 2 pp 1 17

Brodmann K 1925 *Vergleichende Lokalisationslehre der Grosshirnrinde in ihren Prin ipien dargestellt auf Grund des Zellenbaues* Leipzig 2 Aufl 324 S

Broom R and Shepers G 1946 The South African Fossil Ape Men the Australopithecinae *Transvaal Museum Memoirs* No 2 Pretoria p 272

Buettner Janusch John (ed by) 1962 *Evolutionary and Genetic Biology of Primates* A treatise in two volumes Vol I 1963 327 pp Vol II 1964 330 pp Academic Press New York and London

Buffon, G 1731 *Histoire naturelle Histoire naturelle de l homme* T 1 (IV), 322 pages T 2 (V) pp 1 167 *Le singe* T 2 pp 168 284 *Le maki* T 2 pp 285 295 Paris
Burnel R G (ed by) 1964 *Aquatic Behaviour of Animals* Elsevier Publishing Company Amsterdam London New York
Buxton Dudley, L H and de Beer G R 1932 "Neanderthal and Modern Man", *Nature* V 129 No 3269 June 25 pp 940 941

Carpenter C R 1934 "A Field Study of the Behavior and Social Relations of Howling Monkeys" *Comparative Psychological Monographs* V 10 No 2 (ser No 48) 168 pp
Carpenter C R 1935 "Behavior of Red Spider Monkeys in Panama *Journal of Mammalogy* V 16 No 3 pp 171 180
Carpenter C R 1937 "An Observational Study of the Captive Mountain Gorillas (Gorilla beringei)" *Human Biology* May V 9 No 2 pp 174 196
Carpenter C R 1941 "A Field Study in Siam of the Behavior and Social Relations of the Gibbon (Hylobates) *Comp Psych Mon* XVI No 5 (ser No 84) p 212
Carpenter C R 1942 "Sexual Behavior of the Free Ranging Rhesus Monkeys (Macaca mulatta)" *Journ Comp Psych* V 33 pp 113 162
Catalogue des hommes fossiles 1953 Sous la rédaction de Henry Vallois et Hallam L Movius *Comptes Rendus de la neuvieme session du Congres Géologique International 1952* Algere Sect 5 fasc 5 pp 61 376
Clark W E Le Gros 1934 *Early Forerunners of Man A Morphological Study of the Evolutionary Origin of the Primates* London 245 pp
Clark W E Le Gros 1958 *History of the Primates An Introduction to the Study of Fossil Man* Chicago 186 pp
Chernyshevsky N G "The Anthropological Principle in Philosophy in *Selected Philosophical Essays* Moscow 1953
Clark W E Le Gros 1964 *The Fossil Evidence for Human Evolution* Chicago University of Chicago Press XII 200 pp
Colbert E H 1937 "A New Primate from the Upper Eocene Pondaung Formation of Burma" *American Museum Novitates* No 951 October 1 pp 1 18
Colbert E H 1942 The Pleistocene Faunas of Asia and Their Relationship to Early Man" *Trans New York Academy of Sciences* ser 11 V 5 pp 1 10
Connolly Cornelius J 1950 *External Morphology of the Primate Brain* Springfield XIII+378 pp
Coolidge H J 1929 "A Revision of the Genus Gorilla" *Memoirs of the Museum of Comparative Zoology, Harvard College* Cambridge U S A V L No 4 pp 293 371
Coolidge H J 1933 "Pan paniscus Pigmy Chimpanzee from South of the Congo River" *Americ J of Physic Anthrop* V XVIII No 2 July September pp 1 61
Coon C S 1962 *The Origin of Races* New York 724 pp
Coon C S 1962 *The Story of Man from the First Human to Primitive Culture and Beyond* 2nd ed New York 438 pp
Cooper C F and Watson S 1932 The Oldoway Human Skeleton" *Nature* February p 312 313 and June p 903
Crusafont Pairó M Comella de Villalta J F 1954 Almogaver un nuevo primate del eoceno pirenaico *Estudios geol* V 10 No 22 pp 165 176
Cummins Harold and Midlo Charles 1943 *Finger Prints Palms and Soles An Introduction to Permatoglyphics* Philadelphia 309 pp
Cunningham D J 1902 "Right Handedness and Left Brainedness *J Anthropolog Inst London* V 32 pp 273 296

uvier G 1817 *Le regne animal distribué d après son organisation*, T I Paris 540 pp

acque E 1935 *Organische Morphologie und Palaeontologie* Berlin VIII+ 476 S
art R A 1924 1925 Australopithecus africanus *Medical Journal of South Africa* V XX pp 183 185
art R A 192 Australopithecus Africanus the Man Ape of South Africa *Nature* V 115 No 2884 London pp 195 198
art R A 1948 "The Makapansgat Proto Human Australopithecus Prometheus *American Journal of Physical Anthropology* V 6 No 3 Sept pp 259 283
art R A 1949 "The Predatory Implemental Technique of Australopithecus *American Journal of Physical Anthropology* V 7 No 1 pp 1 38
art R A 1957 The Osteodontokeratic Culture of Australopithecus Prometheus Tran vaal Museum Memoir No 10 Pretoria Transvaal Museum 4 105 pp
arwin Charles 1872 *The Expression of the Emotions in Man and Animals* London 374 pp
arwin Charles 1877 *Darwin Leben und Briefe mit einem seine Autobiographie enthaltenden Capitel* Übers von J V Carus B de I III Stuttgart
arwin F ed 1887 *The Life and Letters of Charles Darwin* Vol II London
embowski J 1951 *Psychologia malp* Wyd 2 Warszawa 271 S
ornik J E 1808 *Wijsgerig natuurkundig onderzoek aangaande de vorspron glijke mensch* Holland
ennan M R 1953 "The Saldanha Skull and Its Association" *Nature* V 172 No 4383 October 31 pp 791 793
ibois E 1894 *Pithecanthropus erectus eine menschenahnliche Übergangs form aus Java* Batavia 39 S
ibois E 1924 "On the Principal Characters of the Cranium and the Brain the Mandible and the Teeth of Pithecanthropus Erectus , *Proc Kon Ak Wt Amsterdam* V XXVII No 3 and 4 pp 265 278
ibois Eugen 1937 "The Osteone Arrangement of the Thighbone Compacta of Man Identical with that First Found of Pithecanthropu *Proc Kon Ak Wt Amsterdam* V XL No 10 pp 1 7
ickworth W L H 1915 *Morphology and Anthropology* A handbook for students 2nd ed Cambridge 304 pp

rly Man 1937 Ed by George Grant McCurdy Philadelphia 362 pp
inger Ludwig 1911 *Vorlesungen uber den Bau der nervosen Zentralorgane des Menschen una der Tiere* Bd I *Das Zentralnervensystem des Menschen und des Saugetiers* Achte sehr verm Auflage Leipzig 530 S
inger Tilly 1929 „Die fossilen Gehirne *Ergebnisse d r Anatomie und Entwicklungsgeschichte* Bd 28 Berlin 249 S
renberg K 1938 „Austriacopithecus ein neuer menschenahnlicher Prima e aus dem Miozan von Klein Hagersdorf bei Poysdorf in Niederosterreich Nieder Donau)" *Sitzungsberichte der Mineralogie Biologie Erdkunde* Bd 147 H 3/4 S 71 116
ler J H 1935 The Upper Limit of Hearing in Chimpanzee *The Amer Journ of Physiol* V 112 No 1 May pp 109 115
er J H 1936 "Report of a Case of Inherited Polymastia in Chimpanzee *Anatomical Record* No 1 April pp 83 87
er J H and Yerkes R M 1936 "The Sexual Cycle in Chimpanzees *Anatomical Record* V 67 pp 119 143

Elliot Daniel Giraud 1912 (1913) *A Review of the Primates* Vols I III New York V I Lemuroidea Anthropoidea (partly) pp 126+317+38 V II Anthropoidea (Aotus to Lasiopyga) pp 18+382+26 V III Anthropoidea (Miopithecus to Pan) pp 14+262+68
Elliot Smith G 1931 The Evolution of Man Early Man His Origin Development and Culture London pp 13 16
Erikson G L 19.. "Comparative Anatomy of New World Primates and Its Bearing on the Phylogeny of Anthropoid Apes and Man" *Human Biol* V 26 No 3 p 210
Evolution und Hominisation 1962 Festschrift zum 60 Geburtstag von Gerhard Heberer Mit Beiträgen von A A Dahlberg R A Dart Th Dobzhansky (u a) Hrsg von Gottfried Kurth Stuttgart Fischer 228 S
Ewing H L 1935 Sham Louse Picking or Grooming Among Monkeys *Journ of Mammalogy* V 16 No . pp 303 306

Fick R 1933 1936 *Untersuchungen an d r Wirbelsaule der Menschenaffen* „Sitzungsberichte der Preussischen Akademie der Wissenschaften Phys math Klasse Bd X S 77 ib 1936 Bd XVII S 161 178
Fiedler Walter 1956 „Übersicht uber das System der Primaten In *Primatologia* Bd I S 1 266
Fischer Eugen 1914 *Das Problem der Rassenkreuzung beim Menschen* Freiburg im Baden und Leipzig 305 S
Fischer Eugen 1927 *Rasse und Rassenentstehung beim Menschen* Berlin 138 S
Forbes H O A 1894 *A Handbook to the Primates* Vol 1 2 London pp 288 and 296
Friedenthal H 1900 „Über einen experimentellen Nachweis von Blutverwandtschaft *Arch f Anat u Physiol* Physiol Abt H 5 6 S 494 508
Friedenthal H 1926 Zur Grundlegung Rassenproblems in der Anthropologie Haustierrassen Menschenrassen und Menschenaffen *Zeitschrift fur Ethnologie* Bd 58 H 1 2 S 179 193

Garrod D A E and Bate D M A 1937 *The Stone Age of Mount Carmel* Vol I Excavations at Wady el Mughara Oxford 240 pp
Gavan James A 1935 "Growth and Development of the Chimpanzee a Longitudinal and Comparative Study" *Human Biology* V 25 No 2 May pp 93 143
Gieseler W 1959 *Die Fossilgeschichte des Menschen* In *Die Evolution der Organismen* Herausgeben von G Heberer 2 te erweiterte Auflage Bd II Stuttgart (S 951 1109)
Goodall J 1964 Tool Using and Aimed Throwing in a Community of Free Living Chimpanzees *Nature* Vol 201 No 4926
Grandidier G et Petit G 1932 *Zoologie de Madagascar* Preface de M E Bourdelle Paris 258 pp
Gray A P 1954 *Mammalian Hybrids* A check list with bibliography Edinburgh Commonwealth Agriculture Bureau V X pp 144
Gregory W K 1916 *Evolution of the Primates* I The Cope Osborn theory of triberculy and the ancestral molar patterns of the Primates II Phylogeny of recent and extinct anthropoids with special reference to the origin of man *Bull Amer Mus Nat Hist* V 35 No 19 pp 239 355
Gregory W K 1922 *The Origin and Evolution of Human Dentition* Baltimore 548 pp
Gregory W K 1927 "Hesperopithecus Apparently Not an Ape Nor a Man *Nature* V LXVI No 1720 December 16 pp 579 581
Gregory W K 1929 *Our Face from Fish to Man A Portrait Gallery of Our Ancient Ancestors and Kingsfolk Together with a Concise History of Our Best Features* Foreword by William Beebe New York 335 pp

Gregory W K 1933 The New Anthropogeny Twenty Five Stages of Vertebrate Evolution from Silurian Chordate to Man *Science* V 77 No 1985 January 13 pp 29-40
Gregory W K 1934 *Man's Place Among the Anthropoids* Three lectures on the evolution of man from the lower vertebrates Oxford London VI+119 pp
Gregory W K 1951 *Evolution Emerging* A survey of changing patterns from primeval life to man Vols I and II New York
Gregory W K and Hellman M 1938 Evidence of the Australopithecinae Man apes on the Origin of Man , *Science* V 88 No 3 pp 615 16
Gregory W K Hellman M and Lewis G E 1939 Fossil Anthropoids of the Yale Cambridge India Expedition of 1935" Carnegie Institute Publications Washington No 495
Gregory W K and Roigneau Marcelle 1937 *Introduction to Human Anatomy Guide to Section I of the Hall of the Natural History of Man in the American Museum of Natural History* (Guide Leaflet Series N 86) Second Edition revised by W K Gregory and H C Raven New York 74 pp
Gregory W K and Simpson G G 1926 Cretaceous Mammals Skulls from Mongolia *American Museum Novitates* No 225 October 8 pp 1 20
Grether W F 1940 Chimpanzee Color Vision *The Journal of Comparative Psychology* V 29 No 2 August pp 167 192
Grether W F 1940 Color Vision and Color Blindness in Monkeys" *Comparative Psychology Monographs* V 15 No 4 (76) June p 38
Grimm H 1961 *Einfuhrung in die Anthropologie* Jena 107 S
Grosser Otto 1927 *Fruhentwicklung Eihautbildung und Placentation des Menschen und der Saugetiere* Munchen 454 S

Haan I A Bierens de 1931 Werkzeuggebrauch und Werkzeugherstellung bei einem niederen Affen (Cebus hypoleucus Humb) *Zeitschrift fur die vergl Physiol* Berlin Bd 13 H 4 S 640 695
Haeckel Ernst 1899 *Die Weltratsel* Bonn S 473
Harms J W 1956 Fortpflanzungsbiologie In *Primatologia* Bd I S 561 721
Harrison Barbara 1963 *Orang Utan* New York XXVI+190 pp
Harrison G A Weiner J S Tanner J M Barnicot N A 1964 *Human Biology* An Introduction to Human Evolution Variation, and Growth New York and Oxford Oxford University Press 536 pp
Heberer Gerhard 1956 „Die Fos ilgeschichte der Hominoidea In *Primatologia* Bd I S 379 560
Heberer G 1959 „Die subhumane Abstammungsgeschichte des Menschen In *Die Evolution der Organismen* 2 te Auflage Stuttgart
Hegner F M Root Augustine D I and Huff C C 1938 *Parasitology* With special reference to man and domestic animals New York London 812 pp
Henri Martin Germaine 1947 L homme fo sile tayacien de la grotte de Fontechevade" *Comptes rendus de l Academie des Sciences* Paris T CCXXV No 17 27 octobre pp 766 767
Henschen S E 1926 Ist der Gorilla linkshirnig? *Deutsche Zeitschrift fur Nervenkunde* Bd 92 H 1/3 S 1 7
Hertig A T Rock J Adams E C Milligan J W 1954 On the Preimplantation Stages of the Human Ova" *Contrib Embryol Carnegie Inst* V 35 pp 221 237
Hill W C Osman 1953 1955 1957 1960 *Primates Comparative Anatomy and Taxonomy* I Strepsirhini XXIII+798 II Haplorhini Tarsioidea 347 pp III Pithecoidea Platyrrhyni (families Hapa

lidae and Callimiconidae) 3o4 pp IV Cebidae Part A 1960 523 pp V Cebidae Part B 1962 537 pp Edinburgh
Hooton E A 1931 *Up From the Ape* London 626 pp
Hooton E A 1942 *Man s Poor Relations* New York 412 pp
Hopwood A Tindell 1933 "Miocene Primates from Kenya" *J Linnaean Society* Zoology Vol XXXVIII No 260 pp 437 464
Howells W 1945 *Mankind So Far* New York 319 pp
Howells W W 1964 *Mankind in the Making* The Story of Human Evolution London 382 pp
Hrdlička Aleš 1927 "Neanderthal Phase of Man" *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institution* Vol LVII pp 249 274
Hrdlička A 1930 "The Skeletal Remains of Early Man (*Smithsonian Miscellaneous Collections* V 83) Washington VIII+389 pp
Hrdlička A 1932 *Children Who Run on All Fours and Other Animal Like Behaviours in the Human Child* New York 418 pp
Hrdlička Aleš 1933 Classification of Sinanthropus *Nature* December 16 p 925
Huber E 1931 *Evolution of Facial Musculature and Facial Expression* Baltimore London 184 pp
Hubrecht A A W 1896 Die Keimblase von Tarsius (Ein Hilfsmittel zur scharferen Definition gewisser Saugetierordnungen) *Zeitschrift Gegenbaur s* Leipzig Bd 2 S 147 179
Hurzeler Johannes 1954 Zur systematischen Stellung von Oreopithecus *Verhand Naturforsch Gesellschaft Basel* Bd 65 No 1 S 88 95
Huxley Th H 1863 *Evidence as to Man s Place in Nature* London Edinburgh 159 pp

Jones F W 1929 *Man s Place Among the Mammals* London 372 pp
Jones F W 1944 *Principles of Anatomy as Seen in the Hand* 2nd ed London 417 pp
Jones F W 1946 *Structure and Function as Seen in the Foot* London 329 pp
Jones F W 1948 *Hallmarks of Mankind* Baltimore pp 86

Kalin J 1945 „Zur Systematik und Nomenklatur der fossilen Hominiden" *Bull d Schweiz Gesellsch f Anthropologie u Ethnologie* S 64 88
Kalin J 1955 „Zur Systematik und evolutiven Deutung der hoheren Primaten" *Experientia* Bd II No 1 S 1 17
Keith A 1926 The Gorilla and Man as Contrasted Forms *The Lancet* March 6 pp 490 492
Keith A 1929 *The Antiquity of Man* Vols 1 2 London pp 1 735
Keith A 1931 *New Discoveries Relating to the Antiquity of Man* 512 pp
Keith A 1933 *Human Embryology and Morphology* New (fifth) edition London VIII+560 pp
Keith A 1934 "The Construction of Man s Family Tree (*The Forum Ser* No 18) London VI+54 pp
Keith Arthur Sir 1949 *A New Theory of Human Evolution* London 451 pp
Klaatsch Hermann 1936 *Das Werden der Menschheit und die Anfange der Kultur* Fortgefuhrt und erganzt von Julius Andree Hans Weinert und Jorg Lechler Berlin Leipzig 404 S
Kleinschmidt O 1931 *Der Urmensch* 2 Auflage Leipzig S 166+16
Kluver H 1933 *Behavior Mechanisms in Monkeys* (Behavior Research Fund Monographs) Chicago XVIII+387 pp
Kobler R 1932 *Der Weg des Menschen vom Links um Rechtshander ein Beitrag zur Vor und Kulturgeschichte des Menschen* Wien und Leipzig S IX+142

Koch Franz 1929 *Ursprung und Verbreitung des Menschengeschlechts Eine Neubegründung des Darwinismus auf Grund der Polarwanderungen und Anschluss an die Theorie Wegeners* Jena 174 S
Koch Walter und Deimel Benno 1952 *Über Krankheiten der Menschenaffen* „Veröffentlichungen aus der morphologischen Pathologie" Heft 57 Jena S 1 68
Koenigswald G H R von 1938 Ein neuer Pithecanthropus Schädel *Koninkl Nederlandsche Akademie von Wetenschappen te Amsterdam* V XLI No 2 p 185
Koenigswald G H R von 1955 *Begegnungen mit dem Vormenschen* Dusseldorf Koln 230 S
Koenigswald G H R von 1959 *Die Geschichte des Menschen* Springer Verlag Berlin Gottigen Heidelberg 148 S
Kohlbrugge J H F 1891 *Versuch einer Anatomie des Genus Hylobates* In Max Weber *Zoologische Ergebnisse einer Reise in Niederlandisch Ostindien* Bd I Leiden S 211 354
Kohlbrugge J H F 1908 *Die morphologische Abstammung des Menschen* Stuttgart 102 S
Kohler Wolfgang 1921 *Intelligenzprufungen an Menschenaffen* Berlin 194 S
Kollmann J 1906 „Der Schadel von Kleinkems und die Neanderthal Spy Gruppe" *Archiv für Anthropologie* Bd V H 3 S 208
Kolmer W 1930 Über die Augen der Primaten *Klinische Monographien für Anatomie* Bd 85 S 842
Kolmer W 1930 Zur Kenntnis der Augen der Primaten *Zeitschrift fur Anatomie und Entwickelungsgeschichte* Bd 103 S 679 772
Korenhof C A W 1960 *Morphogenetical Aspects of the Human Upper Molar* Utrecht Uitgeversmaatschappij Neerlandia 368 pp
Kuhne K 1932 „Die Vererbung der Variationen der Menschlichen Wirbelsaule" *Zschr F Morphologie und Anthropologie* Bd 30 S 1 221
Kurth Gottfried (Hrsg von) 1962 *Evolution und Hominisation* Stuttgart 228 S
Kurth Gottfried 1965 *Die (Eu)Homininen* ein Jeweilsbild nach dem Kenntnisstand von 1964 In *Menschliche Abstammungslehre* Fortschritte der Anthropogenie 1963 1964 Hrsg von G Heberer Gustav Fischer Verlag Stuttgart, S 357-425

Lamarck J B 1873 *Philosophie zoologique* Nouvelle édition T 1 2 Paris 412 +431 pp
Lartet E 1856 "Note sur un grand singe fossile qui se rattache au groupe des singes supérieurs *C R Acad Sci* V XLIII Paris pp 219 223
Lartet E 1837 Note sur la découverte récente d un machoire de singe fossile *C R Acad Sci* V IV Paris pp 85 93 et pp 583 584
Leakey L S B 1934 *Adam s Ancestors An Up to Date Outline of What Is Known About the Origin of Man* London XIX+244 pp
Leakey L S B Tobias P V and Napier J R 1964 A New Species of the Genus Homo from Olduvai Gorge *Nature* Vol 202 No 4927 April 4 pp 5 9
Le Double, A F 1903 *Traité des variations des os du crane de l homme* Paris
Lefrou G 1956 Contribution à l étude de la mimique chez les anthropoides le rire chez les chimpanzes" *Bull et Mém Soc Antropol* Paris T 7 fasc 3-4 pp 283 288
Lefrou G 1956 Contribution à l etude du comportement des anthropoides la droiterie chez les chimpanzés *Bull et Mém Soc Anthropol* Paris T 7 fasc 3-4 pp 280 282
Le Gros Clark (see Clark Le Gros)
Levin G 1937 Racial and Inferiority Characters in the Human Brain *Amer J Phys Anthrop* V XXII No 3 April June pp 345 380

Lewis, G E 1934 Preliminary Notice of New Manlike Apes from India *American Journal of Science* V 27 No 159 pp 161 169
Lewis G E 1937 Taxonomic syllabus of Sivalic Fossil Anthropoids *Amer Jour of Science* Fifth Series V XXXIV No 200 August pp 139 147
Lewis W H and Hartman C G 1933 Early Cleavage Stages of the Egg of the Monkey (Macacus rhesus) *Contributions to Embryology* No 143 pp 187 202
Loth E 1931 *Anthropologie des parties molles (muscles intestins vaisseaux nerfs peripheriques)* Avec une introduction par A Keith Varsovie Paris 538 pp
Lotsy J P 1912 „Versuche uber Artbastarde und Betrachtungen uber die Moglichkeit einer Evolution trotz Artbestandigkeit *Zeitschrift fur induktive Abstammungs und Vererbungslehre* Bd VIII S 325 332
Lotsy J P 1927 "What Do We Know of the Descent of Man? *Genetica* V LX No 4 6 p 289 328
Ludwig W 1932 *Das Rechts Links Problem im Tierreich und beim Menschen* Berlin S XI+496
Lull R S 1929 *Organic Evolution* Revised Edition New York 743 pp
Lyon Marcus Ward 1911 Mammals Collected by Dr W L Abbot on Borneo and on the Small Adjacent Islands *Proc United States National Museum* V 40 pp 53 146
Lyon Marcus Ward 1913 Tree shrews An Account of the Mammalian Family Tupaiidae *Proc United States National Museum* V 45 pp 1 188

McCown Th D and Keith Arthur 1939 *The Stone Age of Mount Carmel* Vol II The Fossil Human Remains from the Levalloiso Mousterian Oxford 390 pp
Magnan A 1912 Le regime alimentaire et la longueur de l intestin chez les mammiferes *Comptes rendus hebd Academie des sciences* Paris V CLIV 15 janvier pp 129 131
Martin R 1928 *Lehrbuch der Anthropologie in systematischer Darstellung* Zweite Auflage Bde 1 3 Jena (Dritte vollig umgearbeitete und erweiterte Auflage von Karl Saller Bde 1 3 Stuttgart 1957 1958 59 1960 62)
Matiegka J 1934 1938 *Homo Predmostensis* I Les cranes II Autres parties du squelette Prague 145+91 pp
Midlo Charle and Cummins Harold 1942 Palmar and Plantar Dermatoglyphics in Primates *American Anatomical Memoirs* No 20 Philadelphia Wistar Institute of Anatomy and Biology 198 pp
Miller S Gerrit 1920 "Conflicting Views on the Problem of Man s Ancestry *Amer Journ of Physical Anthropology* V 3 No 2 April June pp 213 245
Miller S Gerrit 1928 Some Elements of Social Behaviour in Primates and Their Possible Influence on the Beginnings of Human Social Development *Journal of Mammalogy* V 9 No 4 pp 273-293
Miller S Gerrit 1931 "Human Hair and Primate Pattering" *Smithsonian Miscellaneous Collections* V 85 No 11 pp 1 13
Mollison Th 1937 Serologische Untersuchungen am Arteiweiss des Menschen und anderer Primaten *Verh Ges phys Anthrop* Bd 8 S 16 26
Monboddo James Burnett Lord 1784 1785 *Des Lord Monboddo Werk von dem Ursprünge und Fortgange der Sprache* Übers von E A Schmid Mit einer Vorrede des Herrn Herder Bd 1 2 Riga 406+462 S
Montandon, Georges 1928 *L ologenese humaine (Ologenisme)* Paris XI+477 pp
Mourant A E 1954 *The Distribution of the Human Blood Groups* With a foreword by Professor H J Fleure Oxford Blackwell 438 pp

Negus V E 1949 *The Comparative Anatomy and Physiology of the Larynx* London pp XIX+230
Нестурх М Ф 1952 *Страхошний онукуті* Книнноэ Ltятурі по стат а Молдовен 100 стр
Нестурх М Ф 1956 *Човешките раси* София "Народна Освита" 90 стр
Nesturh M F 1957 *Bazele omenești* Bucuresti Editura științifica 123 pp
Nesturch M F 1959 *Menschenrassen* Übersetzung G H Ludwig Urania Verlag Leipzig Jena 112 S
Nesturch M F 1959 *Originea omului* Traducere prof N Botnariuc Editura științifica București 314 pp
Nesturkh M F 1959 *The Origin of Man* Translated by G Hanna Foreign Languages Publishing House Moscow 348 pp
Nyeszturh M F 1960 *Az ember s árma...ása* Fordidotta E Zalai Budapest 431 pp
Nestourkh Mikhail 1960 *L origine de l Homme* Traduite du russe par E Bronina Moscou Editions en langues étrangers 362 pp
Nesturch M F 1961 *Die Abstammung des Menschen* Übersetzung W Hoppner Urania Verlag Leipzig 428 S
Ne turj M F 1962 *Conception cientifico materialista del origen del hombre* In *Jose Augusta y Zdenek Burian El origen del Hombre Enciclopedia popular de Cuba* No 3 La Habana 145 pag (vide paginas XI XXI)
Nestourkh Mikhail 1964 *Les races humaines* Moscow Editions du Progrès 114 pp
Nestourkh M I 1964 *Quelques facteurs de l hominisation et de l extinction des Anthropoides fossiles du Pliocene et du Pleistocène* Moscou Editions Naouka" 10 pp
Nesturkh M 1964 *The Races of Mankind* Moscow Foreign Language Publishing House 108 pp (2nd edition 1966)
Nesturj M F 1965 *Las ra as humanas* Moscu Editorial Progreso" 116 pp
Nissen H W 1931 A Field Study of Chimpanzee" *Comparative Psychology Monographs* V 8 No 1 (ser No 36) p 105

Oakley Kenneth Page 1956 *Man—the Tool Maker* Third edition British Museum London 98 pp
Oakley Kenneth Page 1964 "The Problem of Man s Antiquity An Historical Survey *Bulletin of the British Museum (Natural History) Geology*, Vol 9 No 5 pp 85 155
Oppenoorth W F F 1937 *The Place of Homo soloensis among Fossil Men* In *Early Man* Philadelphia pp 349 360
Osborn H F 1915 *Men of the Old Stone Age Their Environment Life and Art* New York pp 54
Osborn H F 1936 Proboscidea a Monograph of the Discovery Evolution Migration and Extinction of the Mastodonts and Elephants of the World" Edited by Mabel Rige Percy V I Moeritherioidea Dinotherioidea Mastodontoidea New York American Museum Press XI+802 pp
Owen R 1859 On the Gorilla (Troglodytes gorilla Savage) *Proceedings of the Zool Society* V VIII London, pp 1 23

Patterson B 1954 "The Geologic History of Non Hominid Primates in the Old World *Human Biology* V 26 No 3 pp 191 209
Pei Wen Chung 1930 "An Account of the Discovery of an Adult Sinanthropus Skull of an Chou Hou Tien Deposit *Bulletin of Geol Soc of China* V VIII pp 203 05
Pilgrim G E 1915 New Sivalik Primates and Their Bearing on the Questions of the Evolution of Man and the Anthropoids *Record of Geolog Survey of India* V XLV Part I pp 1 74

Pilgrim G E 1927 "Sivapithecus Palate and Other Primate Fossils from India *Palaeontologia Indica* V XIV (N S), pp 1 24
Piveteau J 1957 *Primates Paléontologie humaine* In *Traite de paleontologie*, T 7 pp 215 675
Pocock R I 1920 1925 On the External Characters of the South American Monkeys *Pro Zool Soc London* pp 91 113 1925 pp 27 47
Pocock R I 1925 The External Characters of the Catarrhine Monkeys and Apes, *Proc Zool Soc London* Part V pp 1479 1579
Pocock R I 1928 The Langurs or Leaf Monkeys of British India *Journal Bombay Natural History Society* V 32 pp 472 504 and 660 677
Primatologia Handbuch der Primatenkunde 1958 Hrsg von H Hofer A Schultz, D Stark Bd 1 1956 S 1063 Bd 3 Teil 1 1958 824 S Teil 2 1960 872 S Basel New York
Pycraft W P, Smith G Elliot 1928 Rhodesian Man and Associated Remains, *Amer J Phys Anthrop* V 12 No 2 pp 350 352

Quenstedt, W und Quenstedt A 1936 Hominidae fossiles In *Fossilium Catalogus* Pars 74 s-Gravenhage Dr v Junk S 456

Ranke J 1897 Über die individuellen Variationen im Schadelbau des Menschen *Korr Bl d Deutschen Gesellschaft für Archeologie Ethnologie und Urgeschichte* Munchen Jhrg 28 S 139 146
Raven H C 1931 1932 Gorilla the Greatest of All Apes" *Natural History* V 31, No 3 (May-June) pp 231 242 *Scientific American* January pp 18 21
Raven H C et al 1950 (See "The Anatomy of the Gorilla")
Reck H 1933 *Oldoway* The Ravine of Early Man The Discovery of Man of Old Stone Age in East Africa Leipzig 308 pp
Remane A 1956 Palaontologie und Evolution der Primaten besonders der Nicht Hominoiden In *Primatologia* Bd I S 267 378
Rensch B 1957 *Die stammesgeschichtliche Sonderstellung des Menschen* Koln Opladen 51 S
Retzius, G 1922 „Zur Kenntnis der Spermien der Simier *Biologische Untersuchungen* Bd 19, Stockholm S 57 61
Reynolds E 1931 The Evolution of the Human Pelvis in Relation to the Mechanics of the Erect Posture *Papers of the Peabody Museum of American Archaeology and Ethnology Harward University* V XI No 5 Cambridge Massachusetts U S A pp 255 333
Robinson J T The Australopithecines and Their Bearing on the Origin of Man and of Stone Making *South Afric J Sciences* Vol 57 No 1 pp 3 13
Rode, P 1937 *Les primates de l Afrique* Préface de M le Prof Bourdelle Paris 223 pp
Rohleder H 1918 *Monographien uber die Zeugung beim Menschen* Bd VI (Schlussband) *Künstliche Zeugung und Anthropogenie* (*Menschwerdung*) 243 S
Rosa Daniel 1918 *Ologenesi* Nuovo teoria dell evoluzione e della distribuzione geografica dei viventi Firencia XI+305 p 1931 L Ologenese Nouvelle théorie de l evolution et de la distribution geographique des etres vivants Paris 368 pp
Ruch Theodore C 1959 *Diseases of Laboratory Primates* W B Saunders Company Philadelphia London 600 pp

Sanderson Ivan T und Steinbacher Georg 1957 *Knaurs Affenbuch Alles über Halbaffen Affen und andere Herrentiere* Droemersche Verlagsanstalt Th Knauer Nachf Munchen Zurich 19. S

Schaaffhausen, H. 1858. *Zur Kenntnis der ältesten Rassenschädel.* Archiv für Anatomie, Physiologie und Wissenschaftliche Medizin [illegible]
Schaller, George B. [illegible] *The Mountain Gorilla: Ecology and Behavior.* Chicago, Ill.: Univ. of Chicago Press. XVIII, 431 pp.
Schlaikjer, E. M. [illegible] *The Hall of Man* [illegible] American Museum of Natural History [illegible]
Schlosser, M. 1911. "Beiträge zur Kenntnis der oligozänen Landsäugetiere aus dem Fayum (Ägypten)." *Beiträge zur Paläontologie und Geologie Österreich-Ungarns* [illegible] XXIV [illegible]
Schlosser, M. [illegible] "Fossil Primates from China." [illegible]
[illegible] Otto. [illegible] *Der Unterkiefer des Homo Heidelbergensis aus den Sanden von Mauer bei Heidelberg.* Ein Beitrag zur Paläontologie des Menschen. Leipzig. [illegible]
Schultz, A. H. [illegible] "Die Körperproportionen der erwachsenen catarrhinen Primaten mit spezieller Berücksichtigung der Menschenaffen." *Anthropologischer Anzeiger* [illegible]
Schultz, A. H. 1933. *Growth and Development of the Rhesus Monkey (Macaca mulatta).* Chapter II in *The Anatomy of the Rhesus Monkey (Macaca mulatta)* by 10 authors, ed. by Carl G. Hartman and [illegible] Straus. [illegible] pp.
Schultz, A. H. [illegible] "Some Distinguishing Characters of the Mountain Gorilla." *Journal of Mammalogy*, [illegible] pp. [illegible]
Schultz, A. H. [illegible] "Characters Common to Higher Primates and Characters Specific for Man." *The Quarterly Review of Biology*, V. 11 [illegible] pp. [illegible], No. 4, pp. [illegible]
Schultz, A. H. 1937. "Proportions, Variability and Asymmetries of the Long Bones of the Limbs and the Clavicles in Man and Apes." *Human Biology*, V. 9, No. 3, September, pp. 281-3[illegible]
Schultz, A. H. [illegible] "Postembryonic Age Changes." In *Primatologia*, Bd. I, S. 887-[illegible]
Schultz, A. H. 1956. "The Occurrence and Frequency of Pathological and Teratological Conditions and of Twinning Among Non-Human Primates." In *Primatologia*, Bd. I, S. [illegible]-1014.
Schultz, A. H. 1962. *Festschrift—Anniversary Issue Volume, Adolph Hans Schultz.* Bibliotheca Primatologica, Fasc. I, Basel (Switzerland)—New York. XVI, [illegible] p.
Schwalbe, G. 1923. „Die Abstammung des Menschen und die ältesten Menschenformen." *Die Kultur der Gegenwart.* Th. 3, Abt. 5, Anthropologie. Berlin. S. 223-338.
Selenka, E. 1898-1900. Menschenaffen (Anthropomorphae). Studien über Entwicklung und Schädelbau. Lieferungen I-VIII. Wiesbaden. [illegible] S.
Selenka, Leonore und Blanckenhorn, Max. 1911. *Die Pithecanthropus-Schichten auf Java.* Geologische und paläontologische Ergebnisse der Trinil-Expedition (1907 und 1908). Leipzig. 268 S.
Sergi, Giuseppe. 1911. *Hominidae. Sistema naturale di classificazione.* L'uomo secondo le origini, l'antichità, le variazioni e la distribuzione geografica. p. [illegible]21.
Sergi, S. 1939. „Der Neandertalschädel von Monte Circeo." *Anthrop. Anzeiger.* Jhrg. XVI, H. 3/4, S. 203-217.
Shelford, R. W. C. 1916. *A Naturalist in Borneo.* London. pp. XXVII—331.
Simpson, G. G. 1931. "A New Insectivore from the Oligocene Ulan Gochu Horizon of Mongolia." *American Museum Novitates.* No. 50[illegible], pp. 22.
Simpson, G. G. 1937. "The Fort Union of the Crazy Mountain Field, Montana and its Mammalian Fauna." pp. X+287.
Simpson, G. G. 1938. "Ice Age." *Nature*, V. 141, No. 3570, April 2, Supplement, pp. 591-598.

Singer G C 1954 Saldanha Skull from Hopefield South Africa *Amer Jour Physical Anthropology* V 12 No 3 September pp 345 357
Smith G Elliot 1931 *The Evolution of Man* In *Early Man His Origin Development and Culture* London pp 13 46
Smith G Elliot 1934 *Human History* New and Revised Edition London and Toronto, 509 pp
Snow C E 1953 The Ancient Palestinian Skhul V Reconstruction *American School of Prehistoric Research* Bulletin No 17
Solecki R 1955 "Shanidar Cave a Paleolithic Site in Northern Iraq *Smithsonian Institution Annual Report* for 1954 No 4206 Washington pp 389-425
Solecki R 1961 "Three Adult Neanderthal Skeletons from Shanidar Cave Northern Iraq , *Sumer* Vol 17 No 1 2 pp 71 96
Sonntag Ch 1923 "On the Anatomy Physiology and Pathology of the Chimpanzee *Proc Zool Soc* Part I London pp 323 429
Sonntag Ch 1924 On the Anatomy Physiology and Pathology of the Orang utan", *Proc Zool Soc* London Part II pp 349 450
Sonntag, Ch 1931 *The Morphology and Evolution of the Apes and Man* With a foreword by Prof G Elliot Smith 364 pp
Spengler O 1932 *Der Mensch und die Technik* Beitrag zu einer Philosophie des Lebens Munchen, 88 S
Stark Dietrich 1956 „Primitiventwicklung und Plazentation der Primaten" In *Primatologia* Bd I S 723 886
Stewart T D 1959 The Restored Shanidar I Skull *Smithsonian Institution Annual Report* for 1958 Washington 1959 pp 473 480
Stewart T D 1961 The Skull of Shanidar II *Sumer* Baghdad Vol 17 No 1 2 pp 97 106
Stolyhwo K 1937 Les Preneanderthaloides et leurs rapports avec la race de Neanderthal *Bull Ethnol du Musee d Ethnographie de Ljubljana* T 10 pp 147 168
Stratz C H 1922 *Naturgeschichte des Menschen Grundrisse der somatischen Anthropologie* Stuttgart 3 Aufl S XVI+408
Symington J 1915 "On the Relations of the Inner Surface of the Cranium to the Cranial Aspect of the Brain *Edinburgh Medical Journal* V 14 February pp 1 18

The Anatomy of Gorilla 1950 The studies of H C Raven et al ed by W K Gregory *New York Columbia University Press 257 pp*
The Anatomy of the Rhesus Monkey (*Macaca mulatta*) 1933 Ed by C G Hartman and W L Straus London 383 pp
Tilney Fr 1928 *The Brain from Ape to Man* 2 vols New York 900 pp
Toldt K 1932 *Naturliche Farbungen bzw Zeichnungen der Saugetierhaut* Leipzig 36 S
Toldt K 1935 *Aufbau und naturliche Farbung des Haarkleides der Wildsaugetiere* Leipzig 291 S
Tratz E und Heck Heinz 1954 „Der afrikanische Anthropoide Bonobo" eine neue Menschenaffengattung *Saugetierkundliche Mitteilungen* Bd II H 3 Stuttgart S 97 101
Troisier J 1928 Le groupe sanguin II de l homme chez le chimpanze" *Annales de l Institut Pasteur* T XLII No 4 pp 362 379
Tyson Edward 1699 *Orang outang sive Homo sylvestris or The Anatomy of a Pygmie Compared with That of a Monkey an Ape and a Man* London 108 pp

Ullrich H 1952 Die phylogenetische Stellung des Menschen und die Schadel aus Sud und Ostafrika" *Urania* Jena Jhgr 15 H 2 S 44 52
Urbain Ach et Rode Paul 1946 *Les singes anthropoides* Paris 128 pp

Vallo M M 1964 *Two Concepts of Race Human Life Zones the Road to Academic Integration* Lima, 147 pp
Vallois, Henri V 1954 "Neanderthals and Praesapiens *Journal Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland* V 84 parts I and II January December pp 111 130
Vallois H V 1956 Les theories de l origine de l homme *La Nature*, No 3252 pp 121 127
Virchow Rudolf 1895 Pithecanthropus erectus Dubois *Zeitschrift fur Ethnologie* 27 Jhgr H 1 S 81 87
Vlcek K 1953 Nalez neandertalskeho člověka na Slovensku" *Slovenska Archeologia* Ročnik 1 pp 5 132
V E 1965 „Rassendiagnose der aurignacienzeitlichen Bestattung in im der Grotte des Enfants bei Grimaldi *Anthrop Anzeiger* Jhrg 29 1965 Oktober S 290 300
Voss H 1955 *Bibliographie der Menschenaffen (Schimpanse Orang Gorilla)* Jena 163 S

Waardenburg P J 1932 Das menschliche Auge und seine Erbanlagen *Bibliographia Genetica* Deel VII s-Gravenhage 631 S
Wallace Alfred Russel 1890 *Darwinism An Exposition of the Theory of Natural Selection with Some of Its Applications* 2nd ed London and New York XVI+494 pp
Wallace Alfred Russel 1893 *The Malay Archipelago The Land of the Orangutan and the Bird of Paradise* London 515 pp
Wallis W D 1931 *The Structure of Prehistoric Man* In *The Making of Man* An Outline of Anthropology edited by Calverton Y E New York 879 pp (Wallis pp 64 76)
Washburn Sherwood L (Ed by) 1963 *Classification and Human Evolution* Chicago 371 pp
Weber Max 1928 Die Sangetiere Einfuhrung in die Anatomie und Systematik der recenten und fossilen Mammalia 2 Aufl Bd I Anatomischer Teil 444 S Bd II Systematischer Teil Jena S 898 (Primates S 714 834)
Weidenreich F 1937 The New Discovery of Three Skulls of Sin nthropus Pekinensis" *Nature*, V 139 No 3511 pp 269 272
Weidenreich F 1937 *The Dentition of Sinanthropus pekinensis* A comparative odontography of the hominids *Paleontologia Sinica* New Series D No 1 (Whole series No 101) Peiping (Peking) 180 pp
Weidenreich F 1938 Discovery of the Femur and the Humerus of Sinanthropus pekinensis *Nature* V I No 3570 April 2 pp 614 618
Weidenreich F 1940 Man or Ape? *Natural History* V 45 pp 32 37
Weidenreich F 1943 The Skull of Sinanthropus pekinensis" A comparative study on a primitive hominid skull *Palaeontologia Sinica* Series D No 10 Peking 298 pp
Weidenreich F 1945 "Giant Early Man from Java and South China *Anthropological Papers American Museum Natural History* V 40 No 1 pp 1 134
Weidenreich F 1947 *Apes Giants and Man* Chicago 122 pp
Weinert H 1932 a Die neuen Urmenschenfunde von Java *Die Umschau* 36 Jhgr S 830 833
Weinert H 1932 b „Ursprung der Menschheit" Stuttgart 380 S
Weinert H 1951 *Stammesentwicklung der Menschheit* Braunschweig S 212
Werth E 1928 *Der fossile Mensch* Grundzuge einer Palaanthropologie Berlin 898 S
Westenhofer M 1935 *Das Problem der Menschentwicklung* Berlin 106 S

Wilser, L 1905 „Die Urheimat des Menschengeschlechts *Verhandlungen der natur mediz Ve-* Heidelberg Neue Folge Bd 8 S 220
Woo Ju kang 1962 The Mandibles and Dentition of Gigantopithecus" *Palaeontologia Sinica* N S D , No 11 (Whole Series No 146)
Wright Chauncey 1870 "On the Limits of Natural Selection *North Amer ican Review* October, p 295

Yerkes R 1945 *Chimpan ees* A Laboratory Colony New Haven London XV+321 pp
Yerkes R and Learned Blanche W 1925 *Chimpan ee Intelligence and Vocal Expressions* Baltimore 157 pp
Yerkes R and Yerkes Ada 1934 *The Great Apes* New Haven 652 pp

Zuckerman, S 1932 *Social Life of Monkeys and Apes* London 357 pp
Zuckerman S 1933 *Functional Affinities of Man Monkeys and Apes* A study of the bearing of physiology and behaviour on the taxonomy and phylogeny of lemurs monkeys apes and man London XVIII+203 pp
Zuckerman S 1953 "The Breeding Seasons of Mammals in Captivity *Proc Zool Society London* V 122 Part 4 827 950 pp

REQUEST TO READERS

Progress Publishers would be glad to have your opinion of this book, its translation and design and any suggestions you may have for future publications

Please send all your comments to 21 Zubovsky Boulevard Moscow U S S R